









ISRAEL ANGELL

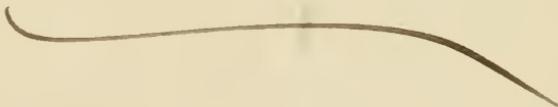


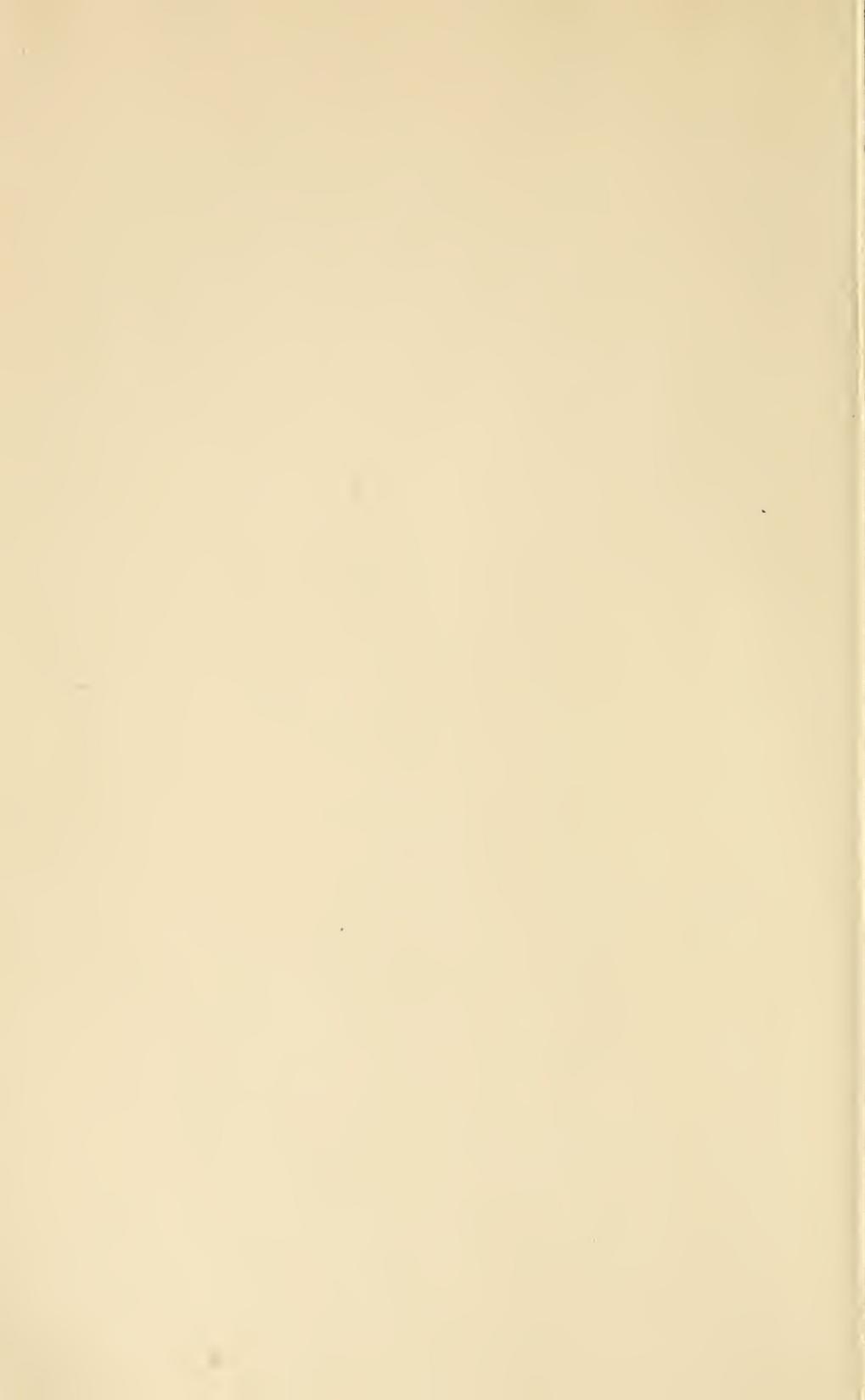


Presented to
The Congressional Library
by
Louise Louis Lowell.

Washington,

December 1921.







ISRAEL ANGELL



... Members of the family of the late Mr. Wm. H. Miller, of New York, made a visit to the Office of the American Anti-Slavery Society, on Wednesday the 2nd instant, and were informed that our Agents were at work. They were told as far as available, that our Agents had been engaged in their tour through the State of New York, and of course in New England, New Hampshire, Vermont, &

TE^WIT^YMONY

W. C. G. 1907
W. C. G. 1907
W. C. G. 1907



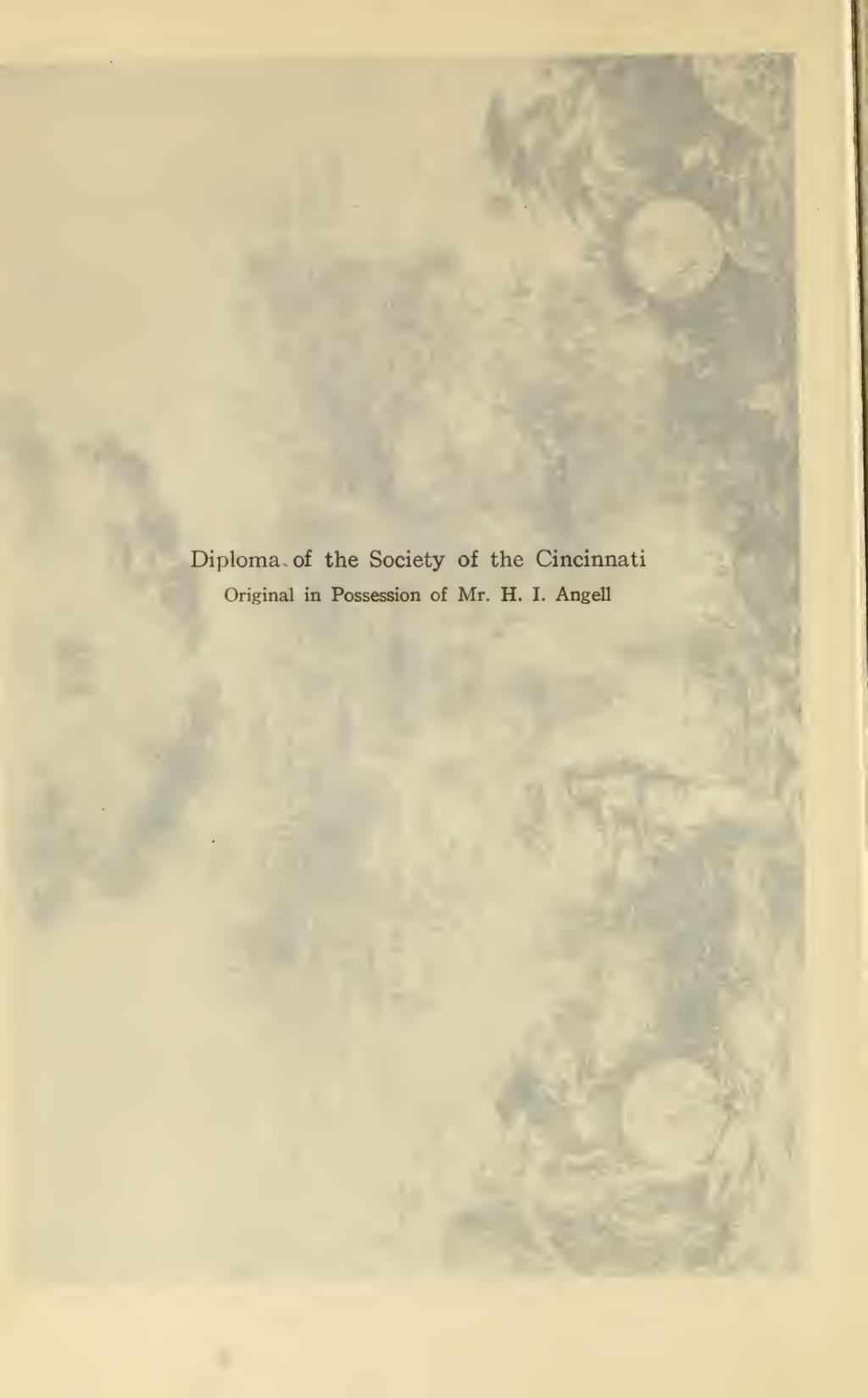
ISRAEL ANGELL

COLONEL OF THE
2ND RHODE ISLAND REGIMENT

Diploma of the Society of the Cincinnati

Obliged in Possession of Mr. H. I. Angell

The Bickerbush Dress
(G. P. Putnam's Sons)
1881



Diploma of the Society of the Cincinnati
Original in Possession of Mr. H. I. Angell

ISRAEL ANGELL

COLONEL OF THE
2ND RHODE ISLAND REGIMENT

BY

LOUISE LEWIS LOVELL



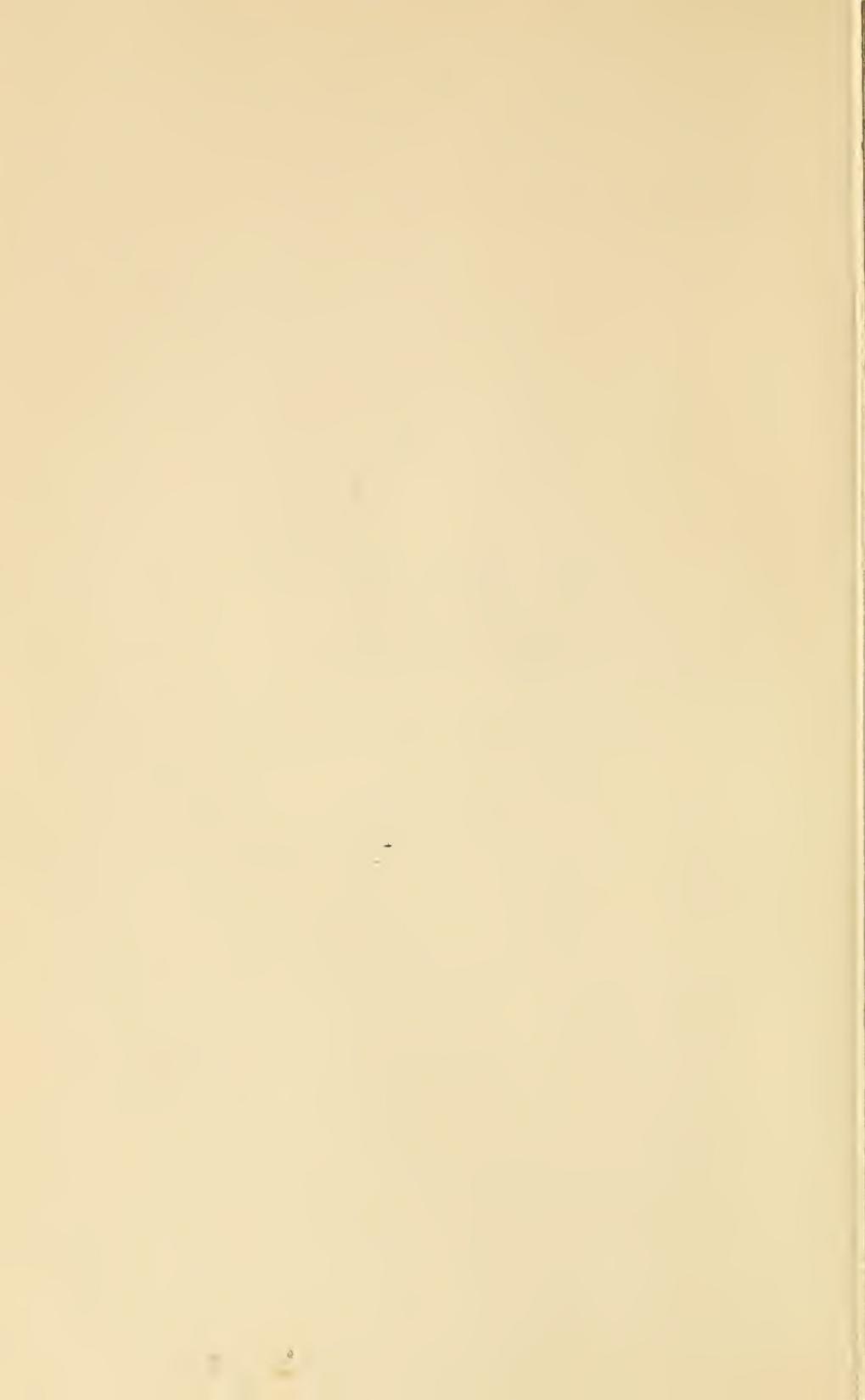
The Knickerbocker Press
(G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS)

1921

E263
TR4A6

Gigli
author
Ja. 7 '32

Dedicated
WITH MUCH LOVE
TO
ELIZABETH AND LANE LOVELL
GRANDCHILDREN
OF
LOUISE LEWIS LOVELL
AND
GREAT-GREAT-GREAT-GRANDCHILDREN
OF
ISRAEL ANGELL



PREFACE

THE following pages have been written as a tribute to my great-grandfather, from such sources as were available during a search of twenty years.

Hoping to share with others the pleasure I have had, this book is now offered as a portion of their rightful inheritance to each and every descendant of Israel Angell. These facts concerning his life have been assembled in as simple, intimate, and *home-like* a manner as possible in order that our ancestor shall seem to be as much one of us as the long interval of years will permit.

Should this book fall into the hands of a descendant or of anyone else who may be able to put in my way additional personal data, or information concerning articles possessed by Israel Angell, I shall be extremely glad to get into communication with them.

I wish particularly to express my indebtedness to Mr. H. I. Angell and to Colonel George L. Shepley for the privilege of inspecting and copying papers in their possession, which kindness I now gratefully acknowledge.

In collecting the material for this book, especially

that part dealing with the military life of Israel Angell, I have been assisted by Captain Eben Putnam, from whose compilations, made at my request, concerning the Continental Forces of Rhode Island many extracts have been taken.

To the officers thereof is due the efficiency of a regiment, and the relation of the activities of the battalion and regiment commanded by Colonel Angell is, necessarily, the history of his services during the War for Independence. I regret not being able to give fuller details of this period, but enough has been presented to show clearly the ability, the efficiency, and the unselfishness of this brave man.

LOUISE LEWIS LOVELL.

Washington, D. C.
April, 1921.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PART I	PAGE
I.—ANCESTRY	I
Forbears
Inherited Characteristics
Effect of Surroundings.
II.—OUTLINE OF LIFE	12
Where Born
Boyhood
Chief Influences
Army Life
Later Days
Death
III.—THE MAN	28
As the Head of His Family
As a Member of Society
As a Citizen
As a Friend
IV.—A WORD TO HIS DESCENDANTS	64
His Character as an Inheritance
His Example as an Inspiration
His Memory as a Treasure
PART II		
MILITARY LIFE	71
Letters, Documents

Contents

PART III						PAGE	
GENEALOGICAL DATA						185	
APPENDIX							
LETTERS							217
Regimental Lands							
Pension							
Miscellaneous							
ORDERLY BOOKS						223	
ROSTERS AND RETURNS						336	
INDEX							355

ILLUSTRATIONS

	<i>Frontispiece</i>
DIPLOMA OF THE SOCIETY OF THE CINCINNATI Original in possession of Mr. H. I. Angell.	FACING PAGE
EAGLE OF THE CINCINNATI Obverse and reverse. Original in possession of Mr. H. I. Angell.	20 ✓
ITINERARY OF JOURNEY TO CHENANGO COUNTY From page of diary in possession of Mr. H. I. Angell.	32 ✓
COMMISSION AS MAJOR IN THE ARMY OF OBSERVATION . . . Original in Pension Bureau, Washington.	74
COMMISSION AS MAJOR, 11TH REGIMENT OF FOOT . . . Original in Pension Bureau, Washington.	86
MAP, SHOWING BATTLES OF TRENTON AND PRINCETON . . . From Sparks's <i>Washington</i>	104
COMMISSION AS COLONEL, ARMY OF THE UNITED STATES . . . Original in Pension Bureau, Washington.	108
MAP, SHOWING MILITARY MOVEMENTS IN NEW JERSEY . . . From Sparks's <i>Washington</i>	126 ✓
FACSIMILE OF PAGE OF LETTER BOOK, 20TH APRIL, 1780 . . . PLAN OF THE BATTLEGROUND AT SPRINGFIELD, N. J. TABLET ERECTED TO MEMORY OF COLONEL ANGELL Commemorative of the "gallant behavior of Colonel Angell's regiment." Placed on the bridge at Springfield, N. J., by Mrs. Louise Lewis Lovell.	156 ✓
FACSIMILE OF PAGE OF LETTER BOOK "To the Governor and Council, State of Rhode Island."	174 ✓

Illustrations

	FACING PAGE
LETTER OF ISRAEL ANGELL TO GEORGE WASHINGTON, 1ST JANUARY, 1781	180 ✓
Original in Library of Congress.	
FAMILY RECORD IN HANDWRITING OF ISRAEL ANGELL .	186 ✓
Original in possession of Mr. H. I. Angell.	
ELEAZER ARNOLD HOUSE AT LINCOLN, R. I.	194 ✓
Erected about 1687.	
FACSIMILE OF PAGE OF LETTER BOOK, BARBERS HEIGHTS	274 ✓
SCHEDULE OF THE 2D RHODE ISLAND REGIMENT	350 ✓
Carried by Continental Line Regiment commanded by Colonel Angell and Colonel Olney, now deposited in the State House at Providence.	

Israel Angell

Part I



CHAPTER I

ANCESTRY

Forbears—Inherited Characteristics—Effect of Surroundings.

RHODE ISLAND, small in territory, but great in spirit, has given precedence to none concerning the worthiness of her sons or their devotion to our country at all times. Her early history shows in what a strict, hard school her children were developed and when we of these luxurious latter days read of her struggles, we pause involuntarily, in truest veneration, to do honor to the wise and brave settlers of this indomitable little State. The keen, just, courageous spirit of Roger Williams, who inaugurated the first settlement, dedicated to liberty of conscience has never left Rhode Island, which waxed strong through grievous chastenings borne in defense of her ideals. Rhode Island also bore the burden of unprovoked wars, and during the Revolution gave her sons lavishly, beyond her quota, for the cause of Liberty,—men of the highest caliber who, as Rochambeau wrote, “behaved with a zeal, a courage, an emulation, which left them in no case behind in all that part of the siege entrusted to them, in spite of their being unaccustomed to sieges.” And of these same men Lord Chatham wrote to Sir William

Ancestry

Howe, "These whom you called cowards, poltroons, runaways, and knaves, are become victorious over your veteran troops," having previously praised the British troops as "the best appointed of any that ever took the field." Of such a character, a true patriot, high in the annals of Rhode Island, stands Israel Angell, whose power for stanch service to his country was a direct inheritance from his brave and independent forefathers.

First of the name in New England was Thomas Angell, who reached here, probably on one of the ships which sailed from the Isle of Wight, May, 1629. He lived for some time in the family of Richard Waterman in Salem, for which reason he was called "Waterman's lad" by Roger Williams. Young Thomas, the only one of his name or family in these colonies, must have been of a rarely affectionate and dependable nature to have attracted the attention of such men as Waterman and Roger Williams, whose friendship greatly alleviated the natural loneliness of the youth whose near relatives were so far away. Some authorities contend that Thomas was also apprenticed to Williams, but, however that may be, it is certain that he was constantly in close touch with that energetic leader. One of the remarkable circumstances of Thomas Angell's life, was this intimate association with men of such standing as Richard Waterman, Thomas Olney, and Roger Williams, all many years his senior,—Waterman 25, Olney 15, and Williams 16 years older, and all holding more prominent and au-

thoritative positions than himself in the affairs of the colonies.

Association with Richard Waterman at Salem, who was not only a mighty hunter but also "viewer of canoes," prepared Thomas Angell for the great adventure of his life, and, coupled with his own worthiness, made him a fit companion for Roger Williams when that indomitable man left Salem in search of a place wherein he could establish a center of freedom, religious and civic. So it happened that Thomas Angell was in the boat with Roger Williams when that momentous little journey was made down the Seekonk to the place where the city of Providence now stands. With what boyish enthusiasm must he have replied to the welcoming call, "What-cheer"? sent out over the waters by the friendly sachem to the white men; how elated he must have been over such a propitious entrance to the land of their hopes, unknown wilderness though it was.

Clear-headed he must have been, undaunted and tenacious of purpose, a colonist of merit, for, young as he was, the name of Thomas Angell appears among those granted land in 1637, and seventh among those of the 13 signers of the compact of 1638. It is also to be remarked that in Roger Williams's own account of his journey to Providence, for the name of Thomas Angell he substitutes that "lad of Waterman's."

These are the terms of the compact signed by Thomas Angell and others not yet heads of families: "We, whose names are hereunder, desirous to inhabit

Ancestry

in the town of Providence, do promise to subject ourselves in active or passive obedience to all such orders or agreements as shall be made for public good of our body, in an orderly way, by the major consent of the present inhabitants, masters of families incorporated together into a town fellowship, and others whom they shall admit unto them, only in civil things."

Little as we know of Thomas Angell's ancestors, he had acknowledged social standing in the colony; and, although throughout his life he always made his mark and never wrote his name, his civic importance was unquestioned, for again and again his name appears on serious documents relating to the laws and welfare of the growing settlement. In common with the rest of the first proprietors, Thomas received a six-acre house-lot. A part of this land honorably acquired from the Indians, as was Roger Williams's wont, remained in unbroken title in the Angell family for many generations. Angell Street and Thomas Street run along the boundaries of the land originally deeded to Thomas, on which the High School House and the First Baptist Church now stand.

This meeting-house was erected in 1775 in an orchard formerly belonging to John Angell. Its spire is so tall as to be seen for many miles around. Governor John Drayton, of South Carolina, in his "Letters," written after a visit to Rhode Island in 1798, mentions in his description of Providence that there is a "Baptist Church with one of the tallest and handsomest steeples in America. It is said to be

220 feet high. The church is built of wood, and is elegantly finished in the inside, being illuminated at night by a superb glass chandelier."

Thomas Angell married Alice Ashton, sister of Mary Ashton, wife of Thomas Olney. The wives of Angell and Olney were sisters of James Ashton, first mentioned in Providence in 1648, and daughters of James and Alice Ashton of St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England. The name of the younger Alice appears on the register of St. Albans Abbey as being baptized on the 1st February, 1617-18. Presumably she came to this country with her sister, but no evidence has been found to that effect.

Thomas Angell and his wife Alice had eight children, among them a daughter Amphyllis and a son Hope,—two very unusual names. This little girl was the only person in Rhode Island at that time, to be recorded under the quaint and beautiful name of Amphyllis, which, in due time, she passed on to one of her daughters. Another of her daughters, Alice, called a girl Amphyllis, and the first Amphyllis' son, Christopher, also gave his mother's name to a daughter. Thus the original Amphyllis had a daughter and two granddaughters bearing her name, and with these the appellation passes out of that branch of the Angell family. The name is rare as well as beautiful, and one which would only be used by people with a sense of family distinction. It is interesting to note that Amphyllis is found in the Washington family and as both families were from Hertfordshire it is a pleasant thought that this

occurrence may have arisen from some affiliation with one another.

Hope Angell was the seventh child of Thomas and Alice, and bore a name as unusual for a man as that of his sister Amphyllis for a woman. What ambitions, what aspirations, filled his parents' hearts when they gave him this name, we cannot tell, but it would seem as if the very spirit of the times was expressed therein, for the State had placed his inspiring word above the anchor of its seal, and each day brought more realizations of the colonists' dreams. Hope Angell died unmarried, but his brother, John, gave the name to his boy, whose son, Oliver, called a son Hope also. Then, after three generations, this name, as that of Amphyllis, ceased to be used in the Angell family.

When the will of Thomas Angell was proved, 18th September, 1694, it was found that he had left what was for the time and place, a respectable estate, and that his wife and children were well provided for.

His wife, Alice, survived him but a few months. During his life, Angell filled a number of the offices in the gift of his fellow townsmen, having been Commissioner, Deputy, Constable, etc., and conducted himself in such a way as to avoid participation in the many controversies which at times disturbed the settlement, never being mentioned as a partisan, except in March, 1656/57, when he with certain other respectable inhabitants were "presented" by Roger Williams for being "ring-leaders in new divisions in the Colony." The charge was not pressed, and

undoubtedly arose from the difference of opinion regarding the activities at this time of William Harris, who was accused of "high treason."

The eldest son of Thomas Angell bore the plain name of John, and to him his father bequeathed a sixty-acre lot, from the parcel received in the first division, and adjoining this, a fifty-acre lot in the second division, all of which were in the western part of the town. Before his father's death, John had already acquired a tract of land adjacent to part of Thomas Angell's holdings, and on this property John's immediate descendants lived. He also added to his estate 130 acres situated on both sides of the Wanasquatucket River, three and a half miles from Providence Harbor. As his elder sons became settled, John Angell deeded to each, house and land, yet remained possessed of much acreage. Thus the Angells became a family of agriculturists, men of the wide places, and although continuously owning town property, they acquired, more and more, extensive farmlands, and always in advantageous sections, where the ground was favorable for their needs.

In Providence, on the 7th January, 1669, John Angell married Ruth Field, daughter of John Field, one of the signers of the first compact of the settlement. John Angell was at one time Deputy, but held, as far as records show, no other prominent civic position. His claim on our interest, and to the homage due all brave and true men, is that during the terrible war of King Philip, he, like his brother James, was one of the men "who staid and went not

away" at the time when Providence was attacked, most of the people fleeing, and the greater part of the little city destroyed. Reported to have been "a man of enormous strength," John Angell must have seemed a veritable tower of defense against the savage cruelties of the enemy. Splendidly fearless, devoted to the cause of the people among whom his lot was cast, John Angell, with the rest of those brave colonists, stands out in the noble company of the world's heroes, intrepid and worthy of all trust.

Hope Angell, fourth son of John, and named for his uncle, Hope Angell, lived on his farm, but his name is in the town records as being twice Deputy, and it is also found mentioned in connection with other positions of trust and honor. He married, 22d May, 1712, Lydia, daughter of Captain Thomas and Lydia (Barnes) Olney, thus allying himself with one of the most prominent families of that day. Besides developing his large farm, Hope Angell was also owner of a cooperage business. The word "shop," in those times, denoted a building devoted to manufacture, as well as in the sense of store or sales shop; so Angell's "cooper's shop" meant a structure where a prosperous manufacturing business was carried on; and this trade was continued in the Angell family, from father to son, for three generations.

Oliver Angell, second son of Hope Angell, lived on the homestead, and continued the cooperage business. He also taught his four sons the use of carpenter's and blacksmith's tools, and instructed

them thoroughly in the knowledge of farming. His instinct to do all that was possible for his children must have been a strong factor in his life, for it led him to lay out a family burying ground on the home-lot, showing that he held his children and their children's children near and dear even in death. This burying ground is still preserved.

In Providence, on the 13th June, 1740, Oliver Angell and Naomi, daughter of Israel and Elizabeth Smith, were married by the Reverend Josiah Cotton. Naomi and Oliver must have been at one concerning the upbringing of their children, for while he trained them in the affairs of the farm, and prepared them for making their way in the world as best they could, she brought them up to be strictly obedient, devoting much attention to their education, instructing them to the limit of her unusual ability, and encouraging them to read at all times possible. Naomi Angell is described as a small, alert woman with remarkably keen black eyes,—eyes that probably saw not only all that passed before her, but were windows through which her soul, alive to the future, gazed far beyond the affairs of the moment, to the successes her heart hoped to find in the manhood and womanhood of her children. She had the satisfaction of knowing that her boys and girls were all unusually intelligent.

Such were the ancestors of Israel Angell, eldest son of Oliver and Naomi Angell, and we find in him a valiant gentleman, a worthy patriot. And how could he be otherwise? Did he not gain from Thomas Angell the intelligence, the dependability,

the kindly disposition, that made this early colonist a friend of the best men in his community, and brought him not only the respect of his fellow-townersmen, but the affection of such a man as Roger Williams, who as late as 1677, when Thomas was over fifty years of age, still spoke of him as that “lad of Waterman’s”? And from Alice Ashton, wife of Thomas Angell, there must have been transmitted to her descendants a certain power for initiative, an extraordinary courage in facing the unknown, that caused her, a young untried girl, to join her sister in that venturesome voyage to the New World. With other colonist wives, this Alice stands out before the world a brave and determined figure full of hope and fearlessness,—characteristics of high value for coming generations.

John Angell’s chief bequest to his descendants was not the property he left, nor the love he showed when he presented his sons, during his own lifetime, with houses and lands “deeded for good affection,” but in the stirring memory they have of his intrepid stanchness, his unshaken courage, when he remained to protect the stricken people against Indian attack. Well might Israel Angell be strong and determined—he had every right so to be! Quieter, yet basic traits, descended from Israel’s grandfather, Hope Angell,—the love of outdoors, interest in the farm, a strong sense of justice, for Hope Angell bore the reputation of being a man of equity. From his maternal ancestors there came to Israel a certain alertness of mind for which he was always remarkable. His mother’s

great-grandfather was that John Smith "the Miller," one of the five first associates of Roger Williams.

In 1646, at a Monthly Court meeting, "It was agreed that John Smith shall have the Value, whereon his house stans in case he set up a Mill as also Excepting sufficient high waies," and after his death contracted with his widow and son, his successor, that no other mill should be erected.

In the next generation the appellation of John Smith "the Miller" carried with it distinction and honor, for he was also one "who staid and went not away" during the terrors of King Philip's war. His dependability and unusual presence of mind were markedly shown at the time his house was burned by the Indians. Seizing the Town Records, which were in his custody as town clerk, he threw them into the mill-pond, from which they were later rescued. Thus by his quick wit, the precious documents were, as Roger Williams thankfully expressed it, "saved by God's merciful Providence from fire and water."

Perhaps the greatest gift Israel Angell's own parents passed on to him was the power for obedience, which gave him authority over himself, and therefore over other men. In the veins of Israel Angell ran the blood of those that had overcome. He was descended from "them that came up at the first," and was to prove himself capable of carrying on to a worthy conclusion their endeavors to achieve freedom and the right to happiness.

CHAPTER II

OUTLINE OF LIFE

Where born—Boyhood—Chief influences—Army life—Later days—
Death.

In an old Bible found in a cellar in Providence, where it had lain for many years, almost destroyed by mold and decay, is found the following entry:

Memorandum of the birth, age, and death
of my honored parents, Oliver and
Naomi Angell.

Oliver Angell, born March 3, A.D. 1717.

Naomi Angell, born Oct. 28, A.D. 1719.

Israel, their oldest son born on Wednesday
the 13th of August old style, which is
the 24th new style in the year of our
Lord, 1740.

These, with other entries, are in Israel Angell's own handwriting.

Born on his father's farm, land inherited from his great-grandfather, situated in what is now known as North Providence, Israel Angell lived the healthful life of all sturdy country lads, but was taught more than the ordinary boy of his time, for his father not

only instructed his sons in the use of blacksmith's and carpenter's tools, which they learned to make as well as use, and in the cooper's trade, which was a business inherited from their grandfather, Hope Angell, but all four boys became expert workers in wood, as Oliver Angell owned half of a saw-mill, and the forest-covered hills on his estate were a source of considerable income. All of this experience was of invaluable service to Israel during the troublous days of the Revolution when a man had need of all he had and all he knew to wrest victory from the veteran troops of England.

Reversing the usual order of the saying, and from the inclination of the tree judging of the direction that the twig was bent, we can fairly accurately imagine Israel Angell's boyhood. For as the older Israel loved all of Nature's wonders, from the glories of the stars to the marvels of the wayside flowers, so the younger Israel must have observed and pondered over the miracles of field and forest. That fine out-of-door life gave him the strength of body that later stood him in such good stead, and the knowledge he acquired assisted him greatly in directing his men during long marches through distant parts of the country while his experience in the use of tools made him capable of directing successfully the building of huts and shelters for his regiment, when materials were scarce, and clever invention essential. A man used to the woods could efficiently direct the hewing of logs for the rough cabins used by the soldiery, and could also instruct them in the quickest way to pro-

ceed with the "hutting" as the building of these shelters was called. The huts were only high enough to "allow a soldier to enter erect under the upper course. The roofs were made of rough clapboards split out of the forest. Places were sawed through the logs for a window and a door in each cabin, into which were placed rude clapboard doors and shutters with wooden hinges and latches. In one end of the cabin a rough stone fireplace was thrown up, surmounted by a plastered log chimney rising but a few inches above the roof. Along the sides of the structure bunks were erected with clapboards, resting upon timbers driven into the ground. These sleeping places accommodated ten or twelve soldiers, and were filled with straw. The spaces between the logs being chinked with pieces of wood and mud, shelter was obtained in a good degree from the force of the wind and the pelting of rain and snow. Rough wooden benches, made of timber cut out of the woods, answered for seats, and fires were kept burning in the fireplaces. These rough and simple features constituted the sum of their furniture and conveniences."¹ In the rear of the huts of the privates, were those of the officers.

It is said that before her marriage, Naomi Angell, mother of Israel, was a school teacher. If that were true, she was probably the head of what was known as a "Dame's School," where the children of a neighborhood were gathered for such primary instruction as a young woman of those almost bookless

¹ *Battle Hill and Madison*, by W. P. Tuttle.

days could command. Scanty as was the equipment of those schoolrooms, limited as was the learning imparted, it was sufficient to start men and women into the world, where Experience completed their education, and caused them to leave to their descendants names that are to-day an inspiration. On the freshly sanded floor, taking the place of a horn-book, the young teacher, with a long rod, traced out letters and words to be copied on the children's slates, or marked out sums that doubtless puzzled many a little head. It was not as easy or as simple as the blackboard, but that sanded floor probably accomplished its purpose just as well as the modern method, for then, as now, he that would be learned, learned; and he that would be stupid, slipped along! Among the chief studies of the curriculum of that day, was good manners, and no occasion was permitted to pass that would emphasize the importance of courtesy. Did the father of some scholar enter the school to give the teacher a word of encouragement and the children a genial greeting? Instantly all were on their feet, and bows and courtesies were promptly made on every hand. Were the hoof-beats of a coming rider heard by the quick ears of the children? Immediately there was a flocking to the door, and as the boys and girls stood out in the flecked sunshine to watch the horseman as he galloped by, the voice of the teacher called out after them, "Make your manners! Do not forget to make your manners!" as she, too, ran out to look after steed and rider until both disappeared in the woods.

farther on. To-day, whizzing motorists rarely see children at play, much less receive their respectful salutations, and teachers seldom attempt to instruct their scholars to "make their manners,"—other days, other ways,—who shall say which are the better? A natural desire for knowledge prompted Israel Angell to learn from all sources possible, and an exceedingly retentive memory served him well, for, as a man, he bore the reputation of being a gentleman of learning, interested in literature and science, particularly that of astronomy.

That Israel Angell possessed an attractive personality as well as intellectual powers, is proved by the fact that he was married three times. His first wife was Martha Angell, his second cousin, daughter of Stephen Angell, of Johnston. This marriage took place on the 20th February, 1765. Israel owned a farm in Johnston; here his eleven children were born, and his family life reputed to be a very happy one. In the Providence daily paper of those times, the death of Martha, 16th March, 1793, is thus recorded:

On Sunday, the 16th instant, departed this Life, at Johnston, in the 47th Year of her Age, Mrs. Martha Angell, the amiable Comfort of Col. Israel Angell, of that Town; and on Tuesday following her Remains were decently interred. She possessed the social Virtues in an eminent degree; and having with great Patience and Fortitude borne a long and distressing illness, met the cruel Messenger of Death with Calmness and Composure, and left the World in Peace.

His second wife was a widow, Susannah Wright, daughter of an old family friend, Consider Luther; and from this marriage there were six children. The third wife of Israel Angell was also a widow, Sarah Angell, her first husband being a distant relative, Richard Angell, and she herself a daughter of David Wood. There were no children by this marriage. That the years had touched him very lightly, that his heart kept ever young, and that his interest in life was undiminished is shown by the fact that at the age of ninety-one, Israel Angell was courting her whom he would have made his fourth wife; but he died at ninety-two before the marriage took place. An unusual love of home life is emphasized by this circumstance, a great independence and an unflagging readiness to assume responsibility, for, even at that advanced age, Israel Angell preferred to be head of his own household rather than an inmate in the home of one of his children.

One would naturally assume that a man of such strong mentality must have decided views on religion, a subject of unending discussion in his day, but very little is recorded of Israel Angell's religious beliefs. His letters to his family unmistakably indicate a reverence for the Divine, the name of the Deity being always written in capitals,—thus, GOD. His spiritual and moral attitude is clearly seen in the following letter to his son, dated Johnston, 18th June, 1797, when he was lamenting the arrival of some undesirable people who had taken the place of good neighbors, recently emigrated to New York State. The

newcomers were causing much disturbance, and he writes:

It is almost impossible for any person to see their own failings, and often condemn their neighbors for less faults than they are guilty of themselves. For my own part I find sufficient business enough in my own family to watch over my own conduct without inspecting into my neighbors, as I wish to live up to that Golden Rule of doing by all as I would wish them to do by me, which I hope with Divine assistance to effect.

The town of Johnston, originally a part of the city of Providence, was set up under separate government in 1759. At that time all males between sixteen and sixty were enrolled in the militia, company and regimental drills taking place on stated occasions, although the administration of the militia law was lax, and the training that the men received of no value whatsoever. Training day was more like a country fair, given over to rough play, drinking, and like amusements, during which the men were mustered, executed a few simple maneuvers, discharged their pieces, and perhaps took part in a sham fight. But there were some men who sensed the necessity for preparedness, and realized how valueless the militia trainings had become. Such men when relations with King and Parliament became strained organized themselves in independent companies, which met as frequently as opportunity afforded, and drilled with

earnestness. Among these organizations were the Kentish Guards, of Kent County, the Train of Artillery in Providence, the North Providence Rangers, and not behind in enthusiasm was the company in Johnston of which Israel Angell was commander. In June, 1769, being then in his twenty-ninth year, Israel was made Lieutenant of this company, and in 1774 became Captain. His temperament demanded order and efficiency in everything he undertook. In the Army, in later years, he had the reputation of being an excellent disciplinarian and of enforcing respect and obedience, therefore it is probable that when an officer in the Johnston militia company, these traits asserted themselves, and that the company gained great benefit under his command. Proof of his ability to enlist and handle men, and also of his intensely patriotic sentiments, is found in the fact that he, a captain of a militia company, was chosen as one of the field officers of the Providence County Regiment, and commissioned Major in the Army of Observation, 8th May, 1775. All of the other field officers of the three regiments or battalions were men of character well known in the colony, and, like Greene, Varnum, and Hitchcock, not only had special qualifications, but were not without influence in the General Assembly that appointed them.

During the Revolutionary War, Israel Angell was promoted to the rank of Colonel, and was in command of the Second Rhode Island Regiment. He retired from the Army in 1781, being at that time

Outline of Life

forty-four years of age. In his Diary, under date of the 25th March, 1781, we find the following laconic entry:

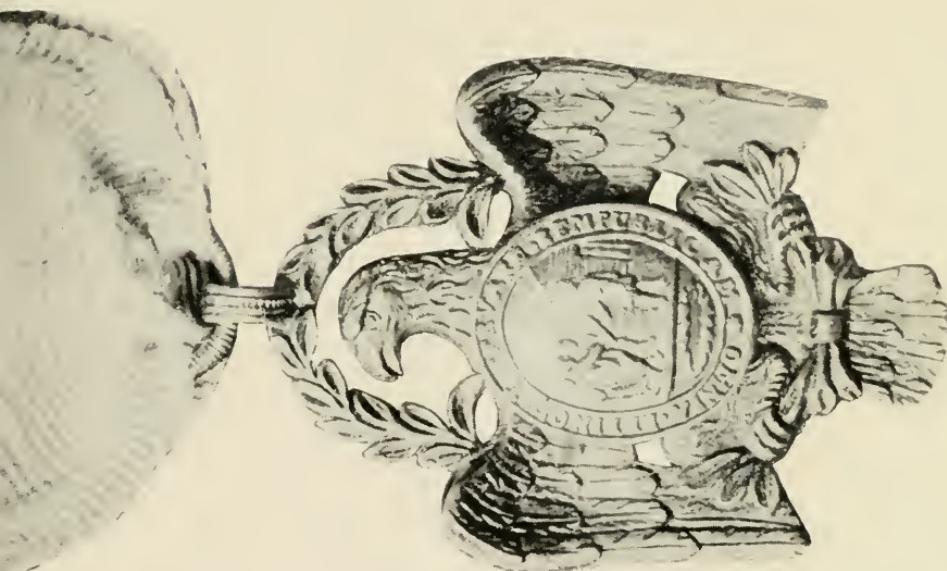
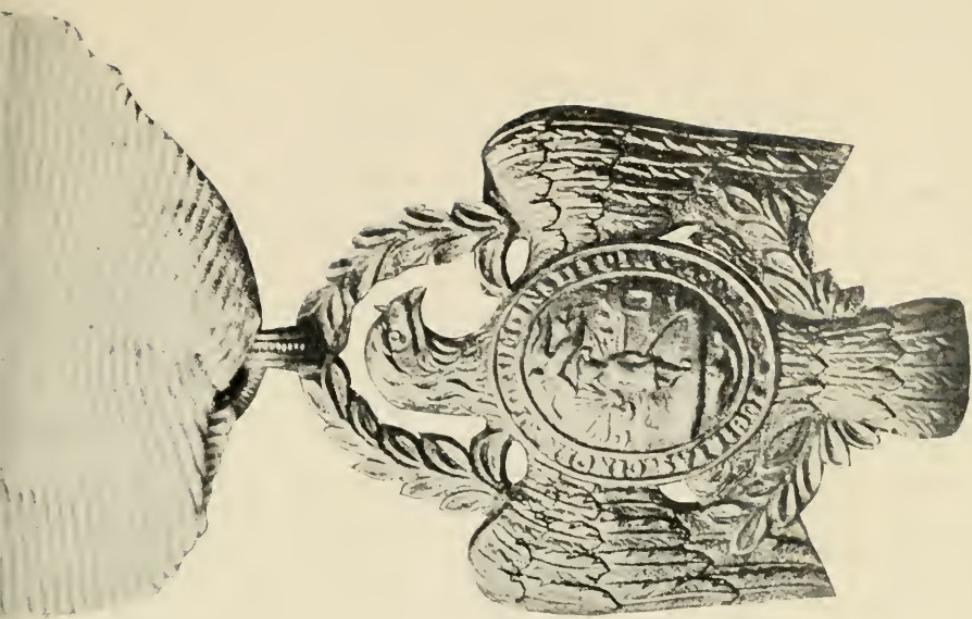
Clear and Cold. My waggon Come up this Morning after breakfast. I set forward after having hired Capt. Bacon to help me on as far as Dorrances in Vollentown where I arrived and Dined then went on to my own hous, found my family well. Left my waggon to come on as fast as possible, and thus Eands the Service with me.

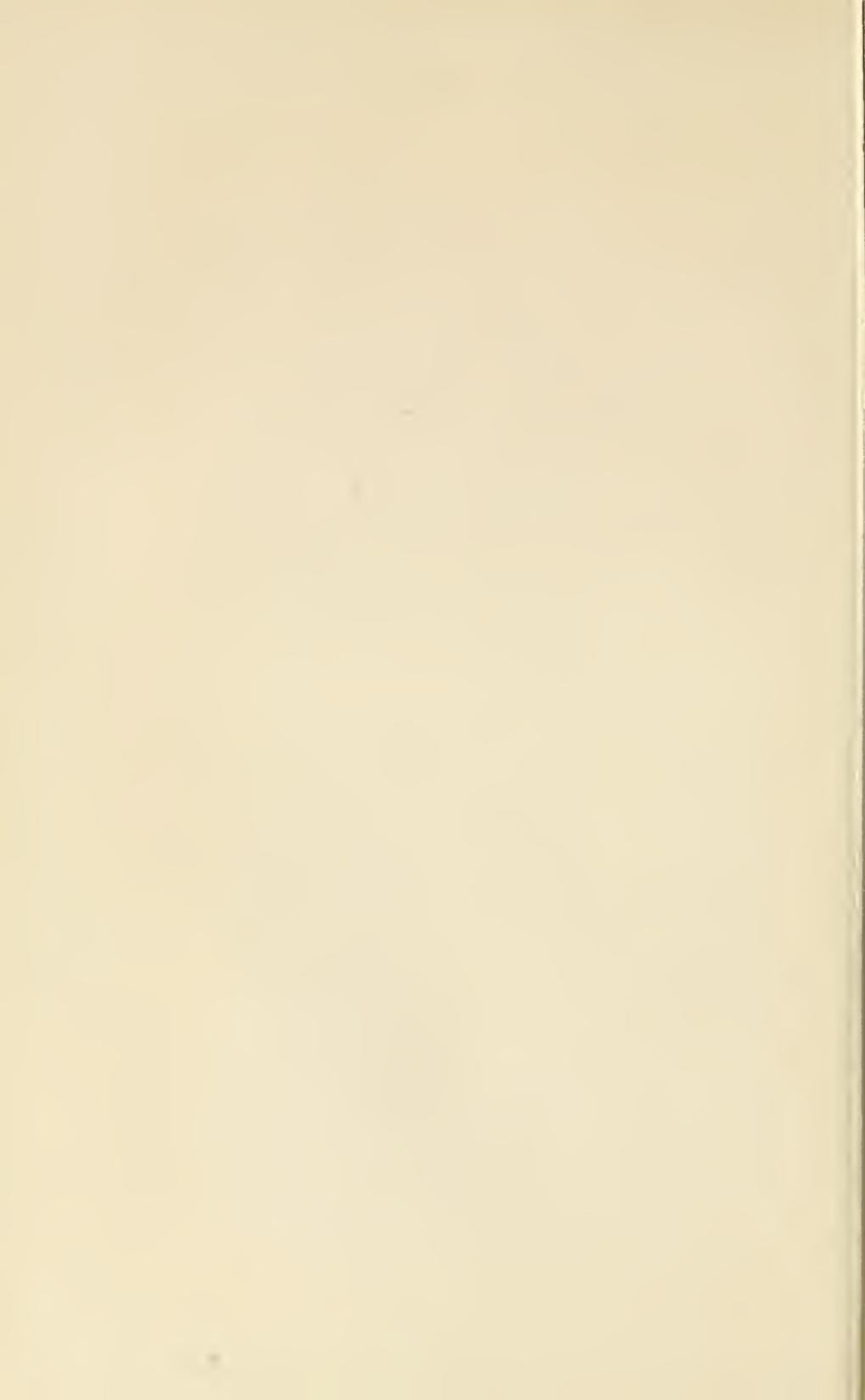
Colonel Angell was one of the original members of the Rhode Island Society of the Cincinnati. This grand Order was established in 1783.¹ It is the oldest of the patriotic hereditary societies in the United States. All officers who had served three years in that capacity with Continental forces, even though no longer in the service, if honorably discharged or deranged, were eligible. Membership²

¹ A paper dated at West Point, 15 April, 1783, containing proposals for the formation of the Order was circulated throughout the army encamped on the Hudson. A caucus, presided over by Major General Baron von Steuben, then Inspector General of the Army, was held near New Windsor, 13 May, 1783, at which were present line and staff officers from the organizations in the vicinity. The original membership consisted not only of those officers then with the army who signed the Constitution at the first meeting, but officers who subscribed papers which were immediately circulated through the various states.

² A feature which led to criticism of the society was the provision permitting original members to be succeeded by their eldest male representative. This to the minds of many was equivalent to setting up an hereditary order of nobility, and led several states to place a ban upon the Order. The first general convention was held at Independence Hall in Philadelphia, May, 1784, and to this meeting the various state societies were requested to send delegates.

Insignia of the Society of the Cincinnati
Observe





in the Order was highly valued, and its insignia worn upon all formal occasions.

Lafayette took an especial interest in the formation of the Order. A branch was established in France, the rolls of which contain many distinguished names. Admiral Count d'Estaing was president, and in 1784 sent to General Washington, the first President General of the Order, the eagle of the Order set in diamonds. This has been worn in succession by each President General.

The eagle¹ of the Order was in due course sent to Colonel Angell, and has passed to the eldest male representative in turn, and now is in possession of Mr. H. I. Angell. It is mentioned in the inventory of the estate of Colonel Angell taken after his decease. It is pictured upon the opposite page.

During the lifetime of the original members resident in Rhode Island the meetings of the state society were held on the Fourth of July, either at Providence or Newport.² The Rhode Island So-

¹ The first eagles, as the medals of the Order are styled, were made in France being struck from a die carved from the design of Major L'Enfant. The ribbon of the Order is blue edged with white, emblematic of the United States and France.

² The last recorded meeting of the State society until its revival in December, 1877, was held 4th July, 1835, although three years previously, in consideration of popular feeling, the members present at the annual meeting had voted to surrender the Charter, which however, was revived 26th March, 1878. In 1802 the by-laws of the society were printed with a list of original members, and of those who had subsequently been admitted. The name of Israel Angell appears among the original members. On the 25th February, 1797, an address was presented by the Rhode Island Society to Washington whose term of office as President of the United States expired the following week.

Outline of Life

ciety was incorporated by the State, 28th December, 1814.

Upon retiring from military life, Colonel Angell returned to his home in Johnston, where he continued the hereditary cooperage business, carried on the affairs of his farm, and attended to the welfare and education of his family. Several of his children and relatives emigrated from Rhode Island to Chenango County, New York State, and in later life Colonel Angell visited them, making the long journey on horseback.

The assertion that Colonel Angell, after he became once more a private citizen, kept a tavern is a fiction originating of late years. The famous Angell Tavern set up in 1710, by Thomas Angell (great uncle of Israel), was maintained in 1783 by Andrew Angell, grandson of the original proprietor, having descended from father to son. None of Israel Angell's immediate branch of the family were tavern keepers, although several of the name kept houses of public entertainment, and kept them respectably and successfully. About this time, Colonel Thomas Angell,¹ a distant relative, was licensed to keep a tavern, in Johnston, so the misunderstanding above alluded to, is not unnatural. *The Angell Tavern*, in distinction to the many others that appeared later, was built in Scituate, $12\frac{1}{2}$ miles west of Providence, on the Norwich Road. The town of Scituate held Town Meetings in this house, and it was a place of attraction for a long period. During Andrew

¹ Colonel in militia.

Angell's time, the Tavern was financially successful and extremely popular. He owned a large farm of 412 acres, which was well managed, containing a large garden and a fine poultry yard, all of which greatly increased his trade. The poor were never sent away hungry, but, if able to work, could earn their food by labor on the farm, as long as they chose so to do. During the Revolutionary War, Lafayette and his officers encamped with his troops at this Tavern. His men were quartered in tents on the opposite side of the road. All were treated with much consideration and kindness. Later, when General Lafayette traversed this same road again, he paused in Scituate and made inquiries for the landlord and lady who had so hospitably entertained him. General Washington also was a guest of Andrew Angell, and Dr. Benjamin Franklin also stopped there.

So far as is known, Israel Angell occupied few civic positions, and those were of only lesser importance. He was for several years Justice of the Peace, at another time, 1782, was appointed to have charge of the Highway District in which he lived, and in 1793, his name appears as one of the Town Council which was also a Probate Court. That he was, however, a man whose clear judgment could be depended upon, is seen by the instances we have of his being chosen to determine certain matters as, for instance, when there was a dispute concerning the rank of Lieutenant Thomas Waterman of Colonel Angell's regiment, and a Lieutenant in Colonel Webb's regiment,—“Lieutenant Waterman was

ordered to Consider himself under arrest—but they concluded to leave the matter to me—"; again, when there was a serious controversy between Major General Baron Steuben and Colonel Hazen, Israel Angell was one of those appointed to decide upon the rights of the affair, which, after one or two meetings, was settled "to the Satisfaction of both Parties."¹ The greatest recognition of his ability to decide matters justly, and of his high reputation throughout the Army, was Colonel Angell's appointment by General Washington as one of the judges in the Court Martial during which General Lee was arraigned, tried, and found guilty. Twelve men sat in this court, which was presided over by General Lord Sterling, four of whom were Brigadier Generals, and eight were Colonels. To be chosen as one of these judges was a signal honor and mark of appreciation which must have been a lifetime satisfaction to Israel Angell.

Always an owner of considerable property, Israel Angell understood the value of land, and probably for that reason, was one of a commission of three chosen by the interested parties,—the others being Captains William Tew and Coggeshall Olney—to go to Conani-

¹ "September 19th, 1780. I was appointed a member to settle a dispute between Baron Stuben and Col. Hazen. The dispute was left to the seven oldest officers commanding the seven lines from the seven states here in service, New Hampshire Col. Cilley, Massachusetts, Gen. Glover, Rhode Island, Col. Angell, Connecticut, Gen. Parsons, New York, Gen. Clinton, New Jersey, Col. Dayton, Pennsylvania, Gen. St. Clair."—*Diary*. The dispute apparently was a question of veracity, or more probably from Hazen's misunderstanding orders.

cut and dispose of at auction or private sale, as they might think best, certain lands which the General Assembly had set aside to discharge the balances due to the officers of his regiment. This occurred just before Colonel Angell left the Army.

After his retirement, his interest in military matters did not cease. Under the militia law, there was formed in the militia a "Senior Class," and for eleven years [1783-1794] Israel Angell was captain of a "Senior Class Company in the Regiment for Providence County."

A certain restlessness of spirit is evident in several of his letters, after Colonel Angell's return to private life, and his constructive mind was attracted by some proposed ventures in new settlements. He wrote regretfully to his children in New York State that he was unable to join them in their country, where the land owned by him in the Mohawk Valley always seemed to him very desirable. He, at one time, held considerable acreage in Vermont, being a proprietor in the grant now incorporated as the town of Lyndon,¹ and was interested in the Ohio Company, in which he became a share-holder.² He made a

¹ Dr. Jonathan Arnold having associated with himself twenty-four officers of the Rhode Island line, and others to the number of fifty-three obtained from the Governor and Council of Vermont a grant of a township, 2d November, 1780. This company was known as the Proprietors of Lyndon. Line officers were required to pay £7 for each right, others £8-10, and each proprietor was required to plant and cultivate five acres and erect a dwelling within four years after the circumstances of the War would permit. Several families from Rhode Island settled upon the grant. Daniel Cahoon, Jr., was the first settler, in 1788, and the town was organized, 1791. Prior to its grant to Arnold, the territory was known as Bestbury.

² Colonel Angell originally held three shares in the Ohio Company,

journey to Marietta in 1788, and at least one to his purchase in Herkimer County,¹ N. Y., in 1805; but none of these investments resulted successfully, and he never removed from Rhode Island.

In politics, Israel Angell was a strong Federalist, and at the time of the second War with England, he writes, under date of 16th October, 1813, to his children in New York, bemoaning the fact that "two of my loving children are led away by French intrigue and subtlety to support the Madisonian War, the greatest curse that ever befel this country or any other."

In the later years of his life, Colonel Angell moved to the neighboring town of Smithfield, which was the

formed in 1787, composed chiefly of men formerly in the army, whose land bounty rights and pay script was accepted for the greater part of their subscription to shares. No one could have more than three shares. The Company obtained a grant of the Ohio lands from Congress payable in national securities, thus enabling the Company to utilize what was received for shares, at the same time helping to restore the credit of the National treasury. In 1788 the Rhode Island "faction" was troublesome in the affairs of the Company, apparently dominated by General Varnum, who went to Ohio and died there. Colonel Angell was probably at the meetings held in March, 1788, at Rice's Tavern, Providence, at which a drawing of lots on the Muskingum was made. Land grants were made by the National Government to Colonel Angell, May, 1792, in all for 1200 acres, of which three hundred were registered 22 April, 1796, and the remainder in February, 1800.

¹ The land owned by Colonel Angell in Herkimer County, was in Norway township, being lot 76, and was purchased from Joseph Nightingale, Nicholas Brown, and Thomas P. Ives by John Whipple of Providence, from whom it passed to Angell. The latter sold one half to William B. Smith, September, 1817, and the remainder to the same purchaser February, 1823. *Herkimer Deeds*, 12:476, and 21:104. In November, 1798, Colonel Angell had sold to John Whipple 90 acres and his dwelling house in Johnston.—*Johnston Deeds*, 2:293.

home of his third wife, and there he died, 3d May, 1832, in his ninety-second year. He was buried in the family graveyard in Johnston, on the South Scituate Road.¹

"There is a life that is worth living now, as it was worth living in the former days, and that is the honest life, the useful life, the unselfish life, cleansed by devotion to an ideal. There is a battle that is worth fighting now, as it was worth fighting then, and that is the battle for justice and equality."²

¹"DIED. In Smithfield, on Thursday, Colonel Israel Angell, in the ninety-second year of his age. He was an officer in the war of Independence, and of him it may truly be said that he was a hero of the Revolution, and as fearless and brave a man as ever faced an enemy. His funeral will be solemnised from his late residence, tomorrow at 11 o'clock, A. M."—*Providence Daily Journal*, Saturday, May 5th, 1832.

² Van Dyke: *The Americanism of Washington*.

CHAPTER III

THE MAN

As the Head of his Family—As a Member of Society—As a Citizen—
As a Friend.

IN the letters that Israel Angell wrote to his family, he shows himself to be a man of deep affection toward his own people; with great interest in their affairs, unceasing parental watchfulness concerning things moral and spiritual, and as repeatedly yearning to hear from his children on all possible occasions. Letters were very precious in those days, and were carried by trusted travelers even more frequently than by the slow and expensive mail. When, at one period, six families, all related to Colonel Angell, emigrated from Providence and thereabout to New York State it seemed to the stayers at home that those enterprising ones were wandering very far afield. Israel Angell often wrote of "your country" and of "our country," making a distinction almost as radical as if between nations; and expressing his impressions of those new settlements as of ventures into a land that was almost a wilderness. A letter to one of his daughters is thus quaintly addressed,—

"To
Mrs. Naomi Hinkley,
Town of Unedilla in the
Country of New York."

In a letter to one of his sons, Colonel Angell, addressing him with a courteous consideration rare in these days, writes words of kindly admonition,—

And now my Son once more permit me to remind you of bad Company & bad language, as good words cost no more than bad and will certainly make a man appear more like a Gentleman among all Classes of people that a Rational being would wish to Associate with, and in the End give that peace and Ease of mind & Conscience that far surpasses what I can with pen Express.

There follows in this letter, and occurs frequently in others, an anxious inquiry as to the loved ones so far away, an inquiry more necessary then than now, for in those days of exposure, poor sanitation, and sometimes improper, insufficient food, that dread disease, tuberculosis of the lungs, was taking toll from many victims. Often, month after month might pass before information concerning matters of life or death would reach members of a family living far apart, and therefore anxious hearts became the rule rather than the exception. We, to whom the telephone seems slow in days of trouble or suspension, will read with understanding and sympathy Israel Angell's further words:

It is a long time Since I heard from you. Must request you not to omit the first Opportunity of writing me how you & family do, what for a winter and Spring you have had, what prospects your

Affairs are at present, and whether it is a general time of health in your part of the world. As I have wrote you before the winter with us was as cold as ever known, & the Spring Do. . . . The Inhabitants here are daily falling a Sacrifice to that raging Disorder that prevails Predominant in this part of the Globe (viz) the Consumption. Stephen Sheldon's family seems to be all gone & going, his wife and one Daughter has been buried Since I wrote you. Seth Harrises Widow that was, was buried the week past. She has one sister more just gone with that disorder. Your Sister Patty I fear is going soon after her Sister Betsy having been in a poor State of Health ever Since her Sister's Death. . . . So Conclude with my love to you & family hoping that through the Blessing of GOD you Enjoy a State of Health.

Your most Affectionate father,
ISRAEL ANGELL.

All the letters end with messages of affection, and at times with postscripts to certain especially beloved persons, as for instance, these words to his son's little boy:

N.B. I Remember my love in particular to My little Grandson Dexter, and tell him that his poor old Grandaddy intends (GOD willing) to Come & see him before one year to an End. I. A.

Every once in a while the children creep into these letters, showing an unceasing interest and devotion to them. It is a proud father that writes:

Stephen has grown finely latterly. Oliver and Luther have been weighed to-day with only their Shirt Jacket and Trouser on. Oliver wd. 48lb., Luther 39lb. !!!

And a sad heart that records:

My little Grand Daughter Patty Angell Deceased 25 April. If she had lived untill the 5th Day of June would have been 11 years old. Age 10 years 10 months and 10 days.

The wish to be with his children, to observe with his own eyes how their affairs progressed, and to welcome such grandchildren as he had not yet seen, caused Colonel Angell to make a trip into Chenango County, N. Y., in 1805 which was his sixty-fifth year. The long journey, 261 miles, was made in company with his cousin, Enos Angell, and entirely on horse-back. The going was good and bad, the taverns fair and indifferent, the weather rainy and sunny—such fortune as falls to all travelers in all times, and was met, according to Colonel Angell's diary, with interest and philosophy, as became veterans in life's experiences. He remarks on the scenery, the fine new turn-pikes, the friends encountered in various places, and writes in detail concerning certain farms he inspected, which he appraised with a keen eye to the proper lie of the land and to the water advantages, as is shown, for instance, in this entry about a "lot of land" that he himself owned:

15th. A clear Morning & cold. Mr. Stely & myself went over the whole Lot this morning & a finer Lot of Land perhaps no Man ever saw. It is as well Watered as any Land can be with two living Brooks and a number of Springs, one of which is more than common beautiful and large.

The agriculturist was uppermost in Israel Angell's character during this trip, and national affairs receded into the background before the importance of such facts as "my son Asa had got him a new house nearly ready to move into," also a barn, "every part of it filled as full as possible with Hay Wheat Rye & Flax," and that on Asa's farm, every portion of which was visited, the white pine timber "far exceeded any I have seen in the Country. We measured 2 that were fallen. One measured 161 feet the other 168."

Dynasties might come and go, but what more vital to a father's heart than the fact that "I spent the Day at my Son's (Israel), who has got a handsome settlement worth 2000 dollars" ! The record of those days is full of items concerning meetings with old friends, as well as various members of Colonel Angell's family, and of detailed mention of their successful farming. ". . . went to Nathaniel Medbury's, there put up our horses, and went a Cross Lotts to Benjamin Medbury's who was building him a large new house." One wonders, parenthetically, if this larger home contained a sufficient number of rooms to deserve their being

1	Day.	32	Wednesday	Jan 5 th	1809	Pomfret
2	8 th	-	41	Thursday	6	Hartford
3	9 th	-	42	Friday	Bethlem	Maryland
4	10 th	-	37	Saturday	Phillips Town	N.Y.
5	11 th	-	35 ²	Sunday	For Mohawk River	
6	12 th	-	39	Monday	62 miles from Oneida	
7	13 th	-	26	Tuesday	Judge Miller's on Mohawk	
8	14 th	-	9	Wednesday	Andrew Miller N.Y.	
9	15 th	-	27	Thursday	Phillips Angell's	
10	16 th	-	38 ¹	Friday	Warren Steele of N.Y.	
11	17 th	-	0	Saturday	Israel Ingall	
12	18 th	-	4 ⁰	Sunday	Afa Ingall	
13	19 th	-	7	Monday	Moner Angell	
14	20 th	-	0	Tuesday	James Lewis	
15	-	-	7	Wednesday	Moner Angell	
16	-	-	10	Thursday	Israel Ingall	
17	-	-	10	Friday	Moner Angell	
18	-	-	3	Saturday	Afa Arnold	
19	-	-	14 ⁰	Sunday	Israel Ingall	
20	-	-	34	Monday	Middlefield Cooper Pat.	
21	-	-	40	Tuesday	Post Tavern 20 miles from	
22	-	-	41	Wednesday	old town Combs Tavern	
23	-	-	30	Thursday	Worthington N.Y.	
24	-	-	42	Friday	Wylton	
25	-	-	12	Saturday	Brookfield N.Y.	
26	-	-	0 ⁰	Sunday	Nicholas Jenckes	
27	-	-	44	Monday	Jason Angell	
28	-	-	36	Tuesday	John Ely	
29	-	-	24	Wednesday		£ 4 9



listed as were, 1711, those of James Angell, whose dwelling, was quaintly described as including, besides other apartments, an "outermost room, easternmost lower bedroom, westernmost lower bedroom, and leanto chamber." Whatever the actual size of Benjamin Medbury's house, his being able to build one shows him prosperous, all of which is corroborated by Colonel Angell's statements, which continue as follows,—"His farm produced him the Season past about 40 tons of Hay 200 Bushels English Grain & 200 Bushels Corn. Nathaniel & Stephen Medbury farms each about the same quantity. Benjamin Medbury had made about 1200 lbs. Cheese the season past." No success on the Stock Exchange could ever be as worthy of note as these simple triumphs of hard work in those early days, when the comforts of life depended chiefly upon the return Nature could be induced to make for man's efforts at cultivation. Sometimes Nature was also held up at the end of a gun, as is seen in the entry that follows:

Nathaniel Medbury Shot a Large Buck supposed to weigh 40lb. per quarter, a little more than 100 rods from James Lewis'. We tarried with Asa. The hounds drove a large Buck off the mountains into the river, by Asa's window, where Vail's son shot at him but missed him.

The James Lewis alluded to was Israel Angell's son-in-law, husband of his daughter Martha, who was generally called "Patty." Lewis was devoted

to the chase, and was known in his neighborhood as "the hunting Squire."

During later years, Israel Angell's desire to see his children and to be in communication with them became even stronger than in earlier life, and in his eighty-fifth year, shortly after the death of his wife, Sarah, he wrote, quite pathetically, a letter addressed to all those of his family then settled in Chenango County, N. Y. His recent bereavement doubtless emphasized the uncertainty of life, and caused him to crave the expression of all the affection that remained to him, so he says,—

I now request the favour of you one and all, my Children, to write to me as often as you have an opportunity, as it is in no way likely I shall ever see you any more, unless you could find it convenient to come & see me, which would greatly rejoice your poor old wornout Parent whose unceasing prayers and wishes are for your Health and Prosperity, and may GOD of his unbounded Goodness and Mercy grant you happiness here and Hereafter, Amen. I have one more favour to ask of you, that is to send me as soon as possible the Number of my Grand Children and Great Grand Children now living and how many Deceased, and send the same by the post if no other Opportunity offers.

My children here All Remember their love to you one and all.

I am your Most Affectionate and loving Parent
ISRAEL ANGELL.

Remembering love, when writing to those at a distance, seems a peculiarly affectionate and sincere way of expressing a message to a person one cares for. Of course, it was a mode of the day, just as we now "send love" in closing a letter in these days, But the quaint words "He remembers his love to you" seems to hold the idea of thoughtfulness, of pleasure in that thoughtfulness, and of time to dwell upon it; while our expression, "He sends his love" gives almost an expression of having received something hurriedly done up in a package and delivered by the first convenient carrier. This may be an exaggeration, nevertheless it is interesting to remark upon ways of speech, which tell us so much of the ways of thought in the times during which they were current. Israel Angell always "remembered" his love to his family, and always took pleasure in meeting and in being with them, particularly when constant military duty kept him absent for long periods. In his diaries is found constant mention of "being at my house to-day," "shall reach my house to-morrow," etc., and he also notes the occasions when he was able to meet members of his family other than his wife and children, as, for instance, in the entry of the 12th of January, 1779:

A cloudy Raw Cold morning but much warmer than it was the fore part of the Evening past. After I got my breakfast set off for Providence by way of Wainscote and tarried at my father's the night following, Where I had the Pleasure of seeing all my

Brothers and Sisters togeather Except my Sister Whipple.

And again, under date of the 27th and 28th of March, 1781,—

27th. After Breakfast I set off for Providence where I spent the day. At Evening went to my father's and tarried

28th. Spent the forenoon at my father's it being exceeding Cold and unpleasant. . . . One circumstance in my journal of yesterday I forgot to mention, that is that I had the Pleasure of seeing Uncle James Angell at my father's who had not been there in 22 years before on acct. of some misunderstanding between him and my father.¹

Which shows that Israel Angell, although being above all else a military man, had in him the qualities of an excellent peacemaker! That he deplored all useless strife and realized its weakening, harmful power, is seen in a letter written to his brother, Hope, the 1st of December, 1775:

Dear Brother—

I take this opportunity to inform you that I still Enjoy that Blessing that is my Health. GOD be

¹ The will of Hope Angell was dated 12th April, 1755; probated 15th May, 1759. After providing for payment of debts and burial charges, and that his executors should pay to the Town Council or to the heirs of his brother James, all that belongs to his said brother's estate, he divided his estate between his sons, Abiah, Oliver, Elisha, Thomas, and James, and named his daughter, Lydia Young, and his granddaughter, Ruth Hawkins. Oliver and Elisha were named executors.

praised, and I hope that you and all Yours Receive the same Blessing. . . . Brother, I am much alarmed at the News of the Conduct of the People in Providence and the Towns adjacent, to hear that they are likely to rise in Mobs on account of Salts rising, and some other Small Articles. I begg Every honest and well meant Person both in Town and Country to Exert Themselves to the Utmost of their Power to surpress any riotous Proceeding among Yourselves, especially at this time. For GOD'S sake, let Us unite as one in America. If we don't, but fall at variance among Ourselves, of all GOD'S Creation we shall be the most Miserablest.

And it was just such words, spoken by the clear-sighted leaders of our War of Independence, that has kept the Flag of our Freedom unfurled over these United States.

"He has friends who shows himself friendly," and in Israel Angell we have an example of the truth of that saying. His natural kindness of heart led him to many considerate acts, and his inherent bravery prompted him even to risk his life for others. An instance of this last is found in his diary under date of 25th February, 1781:

Col. Greene & myself Sett off for the point Early in the Morning. Went to Mr. Mandavil's, there left our horses, then went to cross the ferry, but found it all Blockt up with Ice. We then crost the

Flats upon the Ice to Constitution Island, where we crost just before night. On our way across the Ice, Ensign John Rogers fell through over a deep Crack, caught and hung by his arms. We endeavored to get rails to throw to him, but could find none but some short pieces. At length I thought of tying my Great Coat and Col. Greene's together and then tying them to a stick. With the help of two little boys got it to him and Drawed him out; but I would not have run the risk I did for all the State of New York, had it not been to save Life. Stormed near all this Day.

Bare details, but the essentials form a very vivid picture. The frozen Hudson, rough and white, between the snow-covered hills at West Point, a chilling winter rain at the end of a dark day, worn troops struggling over the ice towards shelter against the quickly oncoming night,—and then came the inevitable climax! This time it was an accident of a serious nature, a life in danger. Nothing in the diary hints at hot tempers or harsh words, but they undoubtedly exploded and were uttered. No one but Israel Angell seems to have attempted rescue and he not only attempted but accomplished, great as was the danger, and sanely as he disliked the risk he ran. Instinctively, one wishes to know who the little boys were, and what they did, and one feels a strong inclination to echo the cheer that is sure to have gone up when shivering Ensign John Rogers was hauled out of those benumbing waters. We

can imagine his devotion to his Colonel, as well as the manner in which Israel Angell put aside all words of gratitude. It is worthy of note that it was the coats of the leaders which were used, and that the men were not asked to risk their garments.

Philosophers of all ages affirm that character is shown more by the manner that the small things of everyday are accomplished, than by the performance of a single heroic act. It is not by the yea or nay of a great decision that a man should be judged, but by the "little words" that he speaks. As the quaint old hymn of our childhood has it, it is the

"Little deeds of kindness,
Little words of love,"

that makes for the happiness of this world; and we know that he who lives in the practice of these lesser things, shall have all else added unto him.

By the sidelights that are found in the letters and diaries of Israel Angell, we can form a very true estimate of the man. He responded nobly to an imperative need, and, without hesitation, saved a life at the risk of his own; in the same simple and direct way, he did smaller acts in the less spectacular, but not less important, daily intercourse with his fellow-men.

During the time that Colonel Angell was at home on a short furlong because of an indisposition, it happened that his friend, Doctor Cornelius, surgeon in the Second Rhode Island Regiment, accompanied

him. Early in the morning after their arrival, one of Colonel Angell's neighbors, Benjamin Luther, came for the Doctor, begging him to return with him to his child who was dangerously sick. This sad occurrence was a matter of serious concern in which the entire neighborhood interested itself, and at noon, when the child was thought to be near death, Colonel Angell and his wife joined others living near and went to the house of the anxious parents to offer such comfort as sympathy might bring. The little life fluttered on until the next morning, when the child died before daylight. In his diary, on the 22d September, 1778, Israel Angell wrote:

A warm Morning & some foggy. About half past 4 o'clock Mrs. Usher came and called up me & my wife to go over to Benjamin Luther's, for their child was a dying. We went as soon as possible, but the Child was dead before we got there.

Then on the next day there follows this entry:

A cloudy morning & rained some in the Forenoon, but the Storm begun to increase about Noon. I & my wife went to Burying at Benjamin Luther's, and immediately after we got there it set in to raining very hard, & Stormed all the afternoon, and after Burying was over, we returned home, & Elder Samuel Windsor came to my house and tarried all Night. He and Elder Hopkins both Spoke at the Funeral.

There were real neighbors in those days, people that were ready to sacrifice any personal comfort if so be a friend were to be helped, either physically or spiritually. How many of us to-day would get up in the first hours of a dark, foggy morning and go to a man's house, merely to show sympathy in a neighbor's trouble? How many would attend a little child's funeral in the pouring rain, when that child was neither kith nor kin, just to make plain to grieving hearts that they sorrowed not alone? May the answer to this roll-call be large! There are, however, probably more than a few of us who would delay the course of a journey in order to be able to carry back to anxious grandparents the happy news of the safe arrival of a new member in their family. Israel Angell did this during his visit to Chenango County, on his way to see his children, when his impatience to proceed must have been great. But, as he states. "I thought it my duty to tarry in the Neighborhood until I could carry news to her Parents in New England—"; and as it is a pleasure to be the bearer of good news, he doubtless found that, in his case,—as, of course, it would be in ours!—, virtue itself was sufficient reward.

No consideration of the character of a man of family is complete without reference to the strongest influence upon it, the influence of his wife. Whether or no a woman be thought the better half of the marriage partnership, there can be no discussion about at least equal division of her sway over family fortunes, for according to the wife so is the peace and progress of her household; and more than this, from

the sacred precinct of the home goes forth the strength for the upbuilding of the nation. The women of Revolutionary days served their country with the same devotion that inspired their husbands, and although not officially recognized as such, were diplomats, strategists, and commanders, quite as truly as were the army leaders. Their service was given with a bravery unequaled by any man, for no man suffered as did these women from the degrading insolence of the enemy, or the humiliations incident to hospitality, all of which were far harder to bear than the physical discomforts amounting at times to bitter privations, which called forth their most patriotic endurance. Instances where women, by courage, wit, and fortitude, won victories over the foe can be gloriously multiplied to the everlasting honor of our Revolutionary mothers; victories with no blood shed, no shot sounded, but as great as if led by the most famous general of the day.

Who among us does not do honor to Mrs. Robert Murray, whose charm, whose cleverness, whose courage were her only weapons, yet who defeated the purposes of the British, enabled Putman to withdraw his troops from New York which led to the situation that made possible the victory of Harlem Heights. While Sir William Howe and his officers lunched with Mistress Murray, General Putnam led his straggling troops, down-hearted from the crushing defeat of Brooklyn, in stealthy retreat along the Bloomingdale Road, not only to safety, but to a commanding position above the city.

Informed of the necessity which she had intuitively recognized, for the detention of her unwelcome guests, Mistress Murray prolonged her hospitality as far as her attractiveness, her invention, her endurance, and her old Madeira would allow, and never, perhaps, had her smiles been more alluring than when her heart was beating with such intense anxiety; for the Britons, flushed with their victory on Long Island as well as the rare wine they quaffed, were foretelling the annihilation of the rebels, which doubtless would have become an historical fact, had not woman's smiles been added to man's energy. Mistress Murray's charm and General Putman's determination saved not only that day, but probably the possibility of our Independence. Only a mile apart, only two hours' delay! But as Opportunity opened wide her gates for those struggling bravely for Freedom she sternly closed her portals against those boasting vaingloriously that she might be commanded at will.

And if we do honor to Mistress Murray, shall we not also praise such a woman as Lydia Darrach, who in her turn outwitted the British and swung the fortunes of war to the American side? In her house near Valley Forge, some enemy officers were quartered, and one evening these were joimed by others for a secret parley. The commanding officer found Lydia at her baking, and gruffly bade her see that the household retired early, but that she hold herself ready to open the door for his guests when they should depart. Agreeing to his demands, as perforce she must, Lydia seized the moment to ask for a pass to

the mill, in order to obtain needed flour; a request promised to be granted the next day. Suspecting the nature of this meeting, Lydia, after a sharp struggle with her conscience, acutely sensitive from stern Puritanical teachings, stealthily listened, every sense a-quiver, to the schemes made by the enemy within her gates, and learned that there was a plot to attack Washington's camp on the following night. Early in the morning, this simple strategist obtained her pass to the mill, and trudging five miles through the snow, never rested until she encountered an American officer, to whom she confided the intentions of the British. Quick woman's wit in grasping the opportunity at hand, saved that day, for those schemes of the enemy were forestalled and therefore failed, causing Sir William Howe to give up the present attack and retire into winter quarters. Clever and courageous as was Lydia Darrach, her greatest bravery consisted not in the listening, nor in the going, nor in the telling, but in her willingness to risk her peace of conscience by doing an underhanded thing, by committing a deliberate sin; she was ready to endanger her soul that her Country might gain Freedom. A soldier on the battlefield makes no greater sacrifice.

As worthy as either of these women, splendidly as they arose to the imperative need of the moment, were the hundreds of devoted wives and mothers who, all day and every day, carried on with courageous perseverance the burdens and responsibilities of homes from which the accustomed support had

suddenly been taken. How loyally these brave guardians of the home accepted the long separations which the patriotic service of their soldier-husbands enforced! How nobly, without rank of Captain or Colonel, without sound of fife or drum, they commanded their little companies the precious children, who, ordered by such wise generalship, became the strong and intelligent forces that have upheld our New England States!

Such a woman, such a comrade in spirit, was Martha, wife of Israel Angell. When he went into the Army, she was but twenty-eight years of age, and their family consisted of six children, the eldest of which was nine years old. Inheriting from her stanch ancestors, as Israel did from his, traits of capability and courage, Martha conducted all their home affairs bravely and well, so that when her husband returned on furlough, were it only for a few hours, he came to a haven of rest wherein he renewed strength both of mind and body. Greater praise can no man give than the words which, again and again, occur in Colonel Angell's diaries, "tarried at my house to-day, and found *all well.*" Therefore, while we consider the character of Israel Angell let us not forget the sweet and enduring influence of Martha, his capable and patriotic wife, who throughout the term of his service in the Army, safeguarded their home and children with unswerving devotion to her family and her country.

All honor to the women of the Revolution! May they be remembered to the third and fourth gener-

ation,—more, may yet further generations bequeath the duty of ancestral reverence as a sacred inheritance to their children's children forever.

Memories of those days when their father was a soldier must have made thrilling fireside stories for Israel Angell's children to tell their own boys and girls. "Your Grandfather rode so well!" "Your Grandfather looked so finely!"—we can easily imagine the bright eager eyes that seemed to take in each exciting detail. Doubtless among other tales, Colonel Angell's grandchildren often heard of his participation in the entry of General Washington into the city of Providence, 5th of April, 1776. This visit of Washington's was a great event in the life of the town, and the various independent companies, cadets, grenadiers, and light infantry of the city were joined with two Continental regiments to form the General's escort. Much pains were taken to have the men fit for inspection, and the following orders were issued by General Greene:

PROVIDENCE, April 4, 1776.

Col^o Hitchcock's and Col^o Little's regiments are to turn out to-morrow morning to escort his Excellency into town, to parade at 8 o'clock, both officers & men dressed in uniform, & none to turn out except those dressed in uniform, & those of the non-commissioned officers & soldiers that turn out to be washed, both face & hands, clean, their beards shaved their hair combed & powdered, & their arms cleaned. The General hopes that both officers & soldiers will

exert themselves for the honour of the regiment & brigade to which they belong. He wishes to pay the honours to the Commander in Chief in as decent & respectable a manner as possible.

It was not only the military that made preparations to impress his Excellency, for fair ladies donned their prettiest, the town was festively decorated, and a house was prepared for General Washington's party, which comprised his official family, Lady Washington, and Mr. and Mrs. Custis. Israel Angell, then a Major only, riding at the head of his battalion, never looked more martial and perhaps never enjoyed more thoroughly the opportunity to show his fellow-townsmen—and without ostentation—what a fine commanding figure had their neighbor! His wife must have been among the ladies of Providence who gathered to view the parade from windows and porches, and with the other children, his boys and girls must have waved and cheered, and pointed out to each other those whom they knew among the men as they marched by. It was a day of pride and rejoicing never to be forgotten for not only the town, but all the country for miles around.

Throughout his life, Israel Angell was noted for his fine horsemanship, and even in his old age, rode remarkably well. One of his descendants who saw him on parade at eighty-five, admiringly spoke of him as "an elegant rider." He has been described as "of medium height, light complexion, auburn hair surmounted by a wig, blue eyes, a strong Roman nose,

and as straight as a ramrod." It is of the greatest regret to his descendants that this word-picture is the only clue that we have to the personal appearance of Colonel Angell. Imagination instinctively adds, a most kindly smile in moments of pleasure, an austere expression when in authority, a fiery eye, a quick temper, an intense sense of justice, and a deeply affectionate disposition. A good man, a good soldier, and a good friend.

A pendulum that does not swing, moves no machinery, both sides of the arc must be touched, so relaxation must balance work, or the results will be disastrous. With satisfaction, therefore, one learns of the enjoyment that the Revolutionary officers had together at mess, or in entertaining friends, and one hopes that the rank and file also found opportunities for pleasure, to counteract the privations and hardships they were forced to undergo.

Israel Angell, possessing unusual social qualities, was a welcome and sought-for guest wherever he might be. His diary abounds with mention of his dining here and there, with this or that person of importance; the facts, however, always being stated with great simplicity and no suggestion of self-consequence. There was no leader of the times with whom he came in contact, from Washington down, that Israel Angell did not associate with on friendly as well as official terms. Naturally, the men from Rhode Island gravitated together, and with frequency Colonel Angell notes that he was dining at the invitation of, or in company with, General

Nathaniel Greene, General Varnum, Colonel Christopher Greene, General Miller, and Governor Bowen, all from that valiant little State,—a brave clan, sons worthy of upholding her most fearless traditions. Constant meetings among the commanding officers of these closely associated regiments, must have added greatly to their unity of spirit, and consequently to their efficiency.

These military dinners were not only occasions for consultation, but were often enlivened by dramatic occurrences, as at the time Colonel Angell dined the officers of his own regiment on the anniversary of the battle of Monmouth. It was on the 28th of June, 1779, the weather had been extremely hot, and Colonel Angell himself not at all well, in fact, as he put it, "In a shocking state of health." However, the 28th being a "raw, cloudy, windy morning" every one felt better, and prepared to celebrate, as the Second Rhode Island Regiment had borne a conspicuous part at Monmouth, and had every right to remember the day with pride. Colonel Angell was then stationed at Barber's Heights, a high hill near North Kingston, R. I., and from its summit a fine view could be obtained of Narraganset Bay and far out to sea. The Diary states,—

This being the day that the battle was at Monmouth, I prepared an Entertainment for all the Officers of my Regt. and all dined together. There came a brigg in from Sea this afternoon. I ordered a piece of artillery down to the Shore and brought

Her to. It proved to be a Brigg from Santa Cruz bound to Providence, with Rum and Sowering on board. Thus ends the day. William Jacobs master of the abovesd Brigg.

A convivially inclined person might query at this point, "*How ended the day? Did Santa Cruz contribute to the high spirits of the occasion?*" Be that as it may, it is certain that few dinner-parties have had so thrilling an ending.

While still at Barber's Heights, Colonel Angell's Regiment celebrated another anniversary, amid even more exciting circumstances than the dinner-party just mentioned. On the 22d October, 1779, they commemorated the victory over the Hessians at Red Bank two years before. The whole country-side for miles around Newport, was aroused over the news that the British were evacuating that city and that their fleet was preparing to sail. Smoke had been seen from the enemy's fortifications, showing that they were burning their platforms and making arrangements for departure, while their ships lay in line ready to get under weigh. Great numbers of the inhabitants came into camp to observe the movements of the enemy, all rejoicing in relief from their hated presence. Obeying the impulse to do something out of ordinary routine, and pleased to indulge in a triumphal celebration, Colonel Angell and his officers "provided a Dinner & all dined together," including also many of the more prominent persons living thereabouts. Doubtless the

anniversary of the victory at Red Bank would have been commemorated under any conditions, but it was especially satisfactory to feast and exult at a moment when the vanquished enemy was retreating from the strongholds they had occupied so long. Several hundreds of the country people came to Barber's Heights in order to see the fleet depart, but the wind not being advantageous, the sailing was postponed. The troops of Colonel Angell's Regiment also celebrated this anniversary and vented their joy by burning an effigy of Count Dunop, and in erecting a Liberty Pole nearly eighty feet high. At the same time, the enemy, after the manner of all the defeated, continued to destroy everything that they could, which in this case included the burning of some hay and the setting fire to the light-house on Conanicut Island. Thus Colonel Angell's guests were entertained by impromptu fireworks on all sides! It was not until late afternoon of the third day following that the British fleet finally sailed. The public interest, however, was not in the least abated by this delay, still due to unfavorable weather conditions, for the people unflaggingly continued to come out to the Hill in large crowds, and on the actual day of sailing "Governor Greene's lady & daughter" were also present to witness the withdrawal of the enemy, which, national interests quite aside, must have been a beautiful sight indeed—all those great vessels under full sail, passing away in the light of the setting sun!

The activities of the British were reported to

Headquarters at all hours, and "Expresses" were received at any time wherever the commanding officers might happen to be. Colonel Angell records that while dining with the valiant Marquis de Lafayette, news reached them of the destruction of Bedford; disastrous and alarming information, which probably turned that pleasant meal into a council of war. His entry of 6th September, 1778, reads:

Clear & hot this morning. There was a firing of Cannon heard the night past & this morning there Came an Express from Bedford informing us that the Brittish troops had landed & burnt Bedford. I dined with the Marquis de Lafayette, & while we were at table there came another Express with four Deserters from Bedford, informing us that all the houses & Stores & Shipping were destroyed at Bedford, and that the Troops were all Embarked on board their Ships. While I was at the Marquis', my brother Jason came to me & brought the agreeable news that my Family & Friends were all well. He set off for Home in the Evening.

Certainly a day of mixed interests! War news interrupting a pleasant meal, with family affairs interspersed.

As the Revolution continued and more of the French arrived to aid the Americans, their intercourse naturally became social as well as martial, our foreign allies being exceedingly popular wherever they went. At first, however, there was a great deal

of curiosity on both sides, and as the Abbé Robin wrote:

The Americans . . . are received with lively joy, we cause our military instruments to play for them; of which they are passionately fond. Officers and soldiers, then, American men and women, mix and dance together; it is a feast of equality; the first fruits of the alliance which must prevail between those nations. These people are still in the happy period when distinctions of rank and birth are ignored; they treat alike the soldier and the officer, and often ask the latter what is his profession in his country, unable as they are to imagine that that of a warrior may be a fixed and permanent one.

The independent character of the American people greatly impressed the Abbé, who further says:

I have seen Washington, the soul and support of one of the greatest revolutions that ever happened. In a country where every individual has a part in supreme authority—he has been able to maintain his troops in absolute subordination, rendering them jealous of his praise, making them fear his very silence.

Rochambeau's men were first quartered in Newport and Providence, and from the diary of the Marquis de Chastellux, we read an interesting account of Providence as it appeared to his sophisticated eyes:

The town of Providence is built on a bank of a river only six miles long, which disembogues itself in the Gulph wherein are Rhode Island, Connecticut, Providence, etc. It has only one street, which is very long; the suburb, which is considerable, is on the other side of the river. This town is handsome, the houses are not spacious, but well built and properly arranged within. It is pent in between two chains of mountains, one to the north, and the other to the south-west, which causes an insupportable heat in summer; but it is exposed to the north-west wind, which rakes it from one end to the other, and renders it extremely cold in winter. Its situation is very advantageous for commerce. . . . Merchant ships may load and unload their cargoes in the town itself, and ships of war cannot approach the harbor.

But it was not the outward appearance of things alone that interested this observant young officer, who notes appreciatively the delightful home atmosphere in the dwelling of an American officer with whom he became on friendly terms: "This little establishment, where comfort and simplicity reign, gave an idea of that sweet and serene state of happiness which appears to have taken refuge in the New World."

Another of Rochambeau's young officers, Baron de Closen, had also a sentimental turn of mind, and made copious notes of the many things that occupied

his attention in the new and strange land in which he found himself. He felt the beauty of the spring as they passed through the country: "The country between Bristol and Providence," he says, is charming. We thought we had been transported into a Paradise, all the roads being lined with acacias in full bloom, filling the air with a delicious, almost too strong, fragrance." And he also felt the charm of his many beautiful hostesses! "Nature has endowed the ladies of Rhode Island with the handsomest, finest features one can imagine; their complexion is clear and white, their hands and feet usually small." The only thing he seems to have had against these fair ladies, is the enormous amount of tea courtesy obliged him to drink when paying social visits. "To crave mercy," he writes, "when one has taken half a dozen cups, one must put the spoon across the cup; for as long as you do not place it so, your cup is always taken, rinsed, filled again, and placed before you. After the first, the custom is for the pretty pourer—most of them are so—to ask you,—'is the tea suitable?'" Another polite custom also struck the Count de Closen as peculiar, and he remarks upon it as follows,—"It is good behavior each time people meet to accost each other, mutually offering the hand and shaking it. English fashion. Arriving in a company of men, one thus goes around, but must remember that it belongs to one of higher rank to extend his hand first."

When at the end of the war, Rochambeau was again in Providence, he gave many delightful enter-

tainments as a return for the generous hospitality offered to him and his officers in former years. According to the Count de Ségur:

M. de Rochambeau, desirous to the very last of proving by the details of his conduct, as well as by the great services he had rendered, how much he wished to keep the affections of the Americans and to carry away their regrets, gave in the city of Providence frequent assemblies and numerous balls, to which the people flocked for ten leagues around. I do not remember to have seen gathered together in any spot more gayety and less confusion, more pretty women, and more happily married couples, more grace and less coquetry, a more complete mingling of persons of all classes, between whom an equal decency, allowed no untoward difference to be seen. That decency, that order, that wise liberty, that felicity of the new Republic, so ripe from its very cradle, were the continual subject of my surprise and the object of my frequent talks with the Chevalier de Chastellux.

One wonders how exactly the French and Americans managed to understand one another in their attempts to speak each other's language. Colonel Angell writes phonetically of a "fu-de-joy" in remarking upon a celebration where the firing of cannon and smaller pieces was used in a demonstration over a victory; doubtless his spoken word was as comprehensive, even if as un-Parisian, as his expressions in

black and white. A noteworthy occasion when a "fu-de-joy" was ordered, was after the success of General Anthony Wayne at Stony Point, when, on 19th July, 1779, "he took the Fort on surprise, carried it with the loss of four men killed & eleven wounded. The Garrison consisted of five hundred British Troops who were killed & made Prisoners to a man. It is said that 100 of them were killed & wounded." Then on the 21st, Colonel Angell continues, "This day we had a fu-de-joy on the occasion of Stoney Point being taken, by firing thirteen pieces of Cannon. I with a number of Gentlemen dined with Peter Phillips Esqr. Thus ends the Day." Mr. Phillips was at that time Assistant Deputy, and, although there could then have been but one main topic of conversation—the Country's weal or woe—it must have been interesting for Colonel Angell to talk matters over with intelligent persons having an outlook other than a purely military one. Sidelights are never neglected by the truly wise. For the above reason, therefore, the invitations to dine with Governor Bradford, General Varnum, Colonel Thomas Potter, and a number of gentlemen of the Superior Court at Little Rest, must have been accepted with pleasure and resulted in an unusually delightful affair. In the quaint manner of the day, Colonel Angell states that he was accompanied on this occasion by three relatives,—"I, Col. Olney, Capt. Coggeshall, & Capt. Stephen Olney set off and dined with them & returned in the Evening."

In this fashion, moments of social relaxation were

enjoyed from time to time during those strenuous days, with interchange of hospitality as occasion offered. As seen in the above record, Colonel Angell dined with Governor Bradford, and he, in turn, came to the mess of the Second Rhode Island Regiment. "Gov. Bradford came to my quarters this Day and Dined with us." And the same pleasant interchange of courtesies was true between Colonel Angell and other dignitaries and officers through the entire period of the war; among many others, General Stark's and Colonel Livingston's names occur as his hosts from time to time.

All the social events of this period, however, were not of a military character. Israel Angell often notes, when on furlough, that "many people were at my house this day," proof of his popularity and of Martha Angell's capabilities as a hostess! He mentions dining "with General Varnum's lady," with Parson Thompson, with his old friend, Mr. Consider Luther, and other private individuals, showing that neighborly intercourse was not entirely displaced by the duties of the Army. While still at Barber's Heights, the officers of the Second Rhode Island Regiment received an invitation to dine with a Mr. Gardner, who owned a large "farm" on Boston Neck, near North Kingston. This property formally belonged to George Rome, "a gentleman of estate," who had come to Rhode Island in 1761, as an agent of the firm of Halsey and Hopkins, of England. There were seven hundred acres in this estate, and the house thereon was famous for its luxurious elegance. We

are told that "the mansion was highly finished and furnished. The beds were concealed from view in the wainscots—the rooms might be traversed throughout, and not a bed for the repose of the guests be seen. . . . When the hour for retirement arrived, a servant would just give a touch to a spring in the ceiling and the visitor's bed, by means of a self-adjusting process, would protrude itself, as if by the effect of magic, ready for the reception of its tenant."

Mr. Rome lived in Newport during the winter, but in summer repaired to his residence on Narragansett Bay, which he called Batchelor's Hall, "my little country villa." Edward Field, in his book on Ezek Hopkins,¹ writes the following description of the place:

The house and the grounds around it were the most elaborate of any in the colony. Here, surrounded by a large circle of friends, he (Rome) entertained in a sumptuous manner. Invitations to partake of his hospitality indicate somewhat the nature of the entertainment provided, for, writing to one of his friends, he says: "My compliments to Colonel Stewart: May I ask the favor of you both to come and eat a Christmas dinner with me at Batchelor's Hall, and celebrate the festivities of the season with me in Narragansett woods? A covey of partridges or bevy of quail will be entertainment for the Colonel and me, while the pike and pearch pond will amuse you."

¹Ezek Hopkins, *Commander-in-Chief of the American Navy.*

Mr. Rome upheld the crown during the excitement of the Stamp Act, and later was obliged to flee the country, when his wonderful estate fell into other hands. The function given by Mr. Gardner in honor of Colonel Angell was of considerable importance, for he notes the event with more than usual detail¹:

This Day we had an invitation to Dine with a Number of Gentlemen and Ladies at one Mr. Gardner's, who lives on the farm that was Rome's. I and Col. Olney went, and spent the Day very agreeable, being a very respectable Company of the most principal Inhabitants for Several miles around.

Although hardly proper to be chronicled among these social matters, it is interesting to note that some representatives of the Indians were entertained at camp, while Colonel Angell was stationed at West Point. These Indians were part of a company of eighteen chiefs that had been invited at the suggestion of the French to visit Providence and Newport, for the purpose of detaching them from the British influence, and strengthening their union with the American cause. General Philip Schuyler approved this proposition and executed orders for its furtherance. Thirteen Oneidas and Tuscaroras, and five Caughnawagas from Canada headed the delegation. The plan was carried out with great thoroughness. In Newport, the savages dined with Rochambeau, who presented them with red blankets

¹ *Diary*, 30th June, 1779, p. 57, and note.

and gave the chiefs medals representing the coronation of the French King! The Indians also dined on board the *Duc de Bourgogne* with Admiral de Ternay, on which occasion, according to a witness, "they behaved themselves well, and ate cleanly enough." That they were not indifferent to the kindnesses shown them, was demonstrated by the savages, who executed a war dance for the entertainment of their hosts. The French, in their turn, paraded for the Indians, and compliments were given and taken to the best of the ability of both sides. On their return North, some of the Oneidas stopped at West Point, where they were also entertained by a parade, reviewed by Washington himself. Colonel Angell thus records the affair under date of Sept. 13th, 1780.

The Brigade of General Starks was reviewed about nine o'clock in the morning, with a Retinue of all the General Officers of the Army and great part of the field Officers, and all the Savages of note.

Orders were given to "make as great Show as possible," and the glistening arms of the Americans, vying with the bright war paint of their Indian allies, must have combined to make a spectacle of the most picturesque description. One witness of the parade tells us that it was a disgusting sight, that the savages were all drunk, dressed in rags, and their horses only bones. There are always two sides to every picture, and probably this person was not interested in

ethnological matters; Colonel Angell is to be commended for his reticence concerning disagreeable aspects of the occasion, and no restraint shall be put on our imagination!

It was not always easy to keep those independent and untrained soldiers up to the mark in niceties of personal appearance, and Colonel Angell, strict disciplinarian though he was, had troubles enough concerning the apparel of his men. It was sufficiently difficult to keep the troops decently clothed, for generally they lacked the very essentials of ordinary comfort, and, therefore after a special effort to improve their uniforms, it was particularly annoying to have the soldiers refuse to be properly dressed. On one day, Colonel Angell writes with pride:

I furnished my Regt. to-day with their new Hatts, all bound, and they made a grand appearance on the Parade, being as well clothed as any troops in the Service.

But later, during a time of mutiny, he records with much displeasure:

Had the Mortification to find that two thirds of the Sergts. in the Regt. had conspired together and ript the bindings off their Hatts, contrary to Orders. I issued an Order to put them on by next morning, by guard mounting, or they would be reduced to the ranks without the formality of a Court Martial, and tried for wilful Disobedience of Orders.

The third entry, brief and terse as it is, expresses satisfaction in every word, "This morning, by eight o'clock, the Sergts. had all their bindings on." And so, as Israel Angell himself would say, "ended the day," which had been one of little things, but had resulted in a victory not to be despised.

So ends also this outline of Israel Angell's character as shown in his own acts and words. And how shall we judge of a man? According to the manner in which he accomplishes the thing his hand finds to do —so is he!

CHAPTER IV

A WORD TO HIS DESCENDANTS

His Character as an Inheritance—His Example as an Inspiration—
His Memory as a Treasure.

His Character as an Inheritance.

HE was not a great man, gauged by the standards of wealth and position, neither does he appear prominently among those made known by fame, but he did his part thoroughly, he lived his life honestly, he served his country bravely;—a loving father, a good friend, an intrepid soldier, a noble patriot,—his memory is at once a pride and a blessing to us all.

Bit by bit the pieces forming the mosaic of his character have been assembled, yet the design is incomplete, and must be finished by our affectionate imaginations. In all the material investigated, no rough or ugly inserts have been found, although doubtless there were some, as is the case with each of us,—some bits we would were not apparent, some bits loosely placed, some bits fallen away. Had such been discovered in Israel Angell's life they would have been frankly mentioned; he stands uprightly before us, a true gentleman.

We solemnly remind ourselves that we are the heirs of a splendid past, and must therefore play a

His Character as an Inheritance 65

worthy part while we are on the stage. We recall the fact that we stand in line of noble ancestry, and must hand on to the coming time an untarnished name. We refresh the recollection that we are guardians of a national treasure which our fathers purchased with their blood and which we must therefore cherish as our life. We emphasize the truth that our costliest heritage is neither gold, nor land, nor rank, but of *character*.¹

His Example as an Inspiration.

How much we owe to the men who stood the test of battle none of us can fully realize, for deeds, lives, honor, and bravery do not end with Peace after War, Oblivion after Death,—no, the influence is endless, the inspiration is unfailing, and the thrilling words of Israel Angell, written to his brother Hope in the first days of the Revolution,—“For God’s sake, let us be united as one in America,” are for you, and for me, and for all true Americans.

“All that our fathers wrought,
With true prophetic thought,
Must be defended.”

The example of a brave man is an inspiration.

His Memory as a Treasure.

Problems of life were the same in his days as in ours, and as Israel Angell left an honorable record,

¹ Duffield, *An American Lineage*.

66 A Word to His Descendants

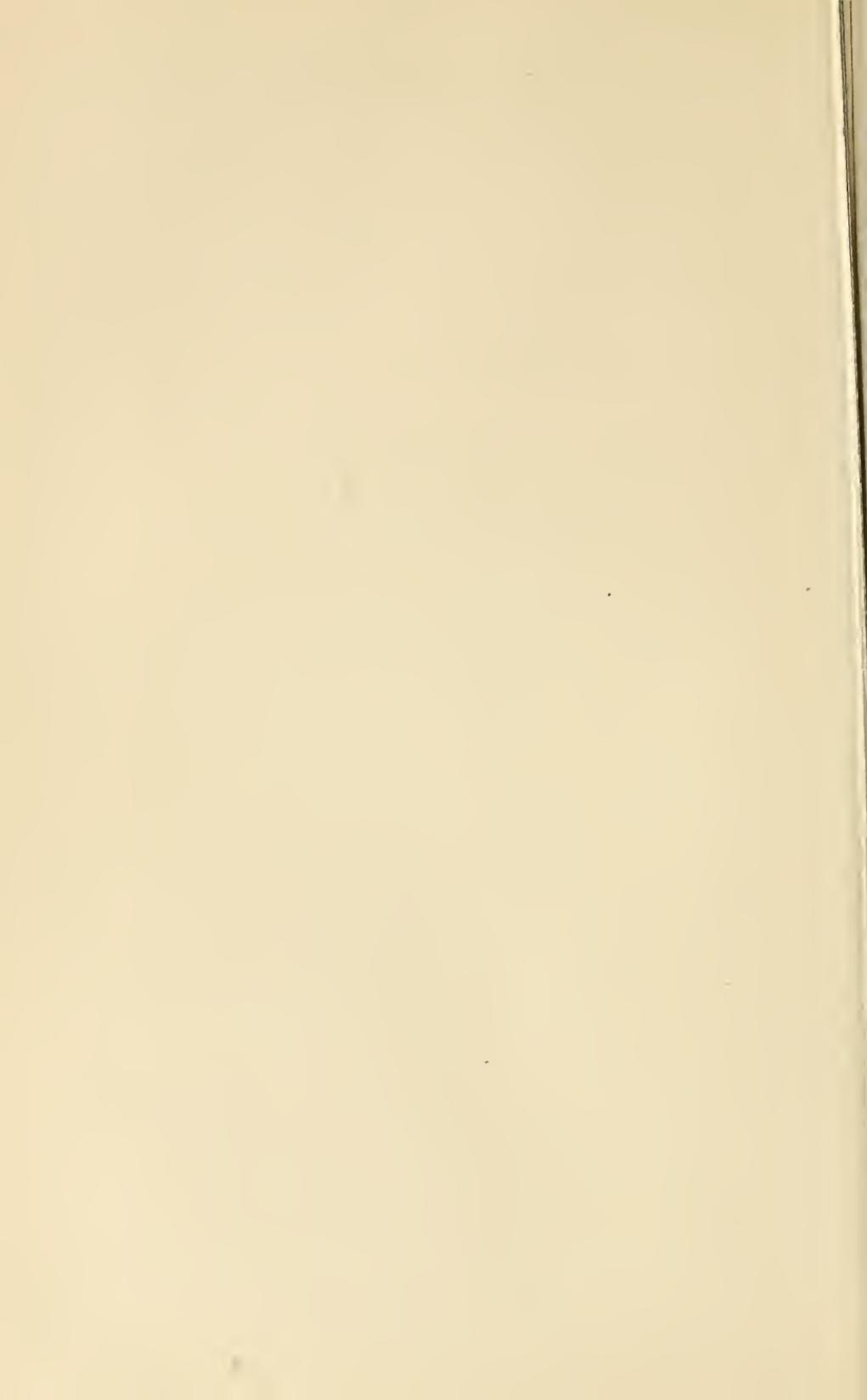
so may we, his descendants. The years of liberty and unlimited opportunity that we have enjoyed, are chiefly due to our ancestors, who fought for us, far more than themselves, the War of the Revolution. No founders of any government have been more patriotic, none ever exhibited greater perseverance and endurance, greater intelligence and bravery, greater ability to conquer, notwithstanding almost overwhelming odds.

To recall their glorious deeds is a holy duty, for "Thou art not for thyself, but for mankind." The memory of a good man is a treasure,—may we that follow after Israel Angell, guard well our inheritance.

"To teach our sons and daughters, by precept and example, the honor of serving such a country as America,—that is a work worthy of the finest manhood and womanhood. The well-born are those who are born to do that work. The well-bred are those who are bred to be proud of that work. The well educated are those who see the deepest into the meaning and the necessity of that work. Nor shall labor be for naught, nor the reward of their sacrifice fail them. For high in the firmament of human destiny are set the stars of faith in mankind."¹

¹ Van Dyke: *The Americanism of Washington.*

PART II
MILITARY SERVICES
OF
COLONEL ISRAEL ANGELL
DURING THE WAR FOR INDEPENDENCE
1775-1781



The story of any member of a military organization is in a great measure that of the unit with which he was connected. This is especially so where the soldier was a member of a small organization, and where as in the case of the subject of this work he was an officer, and a field officer.

The regimental organizations of the Revolution were small in numbers, and the number of officers seems large in contrast with the number of rank and file. Under the system then in vogue this was hardly avoidable.

Team work is the key to all successful military operations; if we know a man was present with his organization and know what his organization accomplished, we know the part he took. If a company or regiment was complimented it meant the officers were entitled to their share of the praise, and the reverse is true. To the officers was due the efficiency of the regiment, and especially was that due to the field officers, who in the period under consideration were much closer to their men than at the present day of large companies and regiments. There is little doubt Colonel Angell knew every one of his men by name; knew their families, and their personal history. There were times when his regiment numbered less than 150 men fit for duty. He was their leader in every thing that word implies. Commencing his military experience in the militia as a private in the ranks, he was soon chosen lieutenant, and then a captain, and when the call came to enlist men for the Army of Observation, his ability as a leader of men was recognized, and he was commissioned a major. By successive promotions he became colonel.

Because the military experience of Colonel Angell was simply the history of the battalion and regiment which he commanded, it has been found necessary to tell the story of the Second Rhode Island Regiment; and because at times that regiment is lost in the small brigade to which it was attached it has been found necessary to tell something of the brigade. During the periods in which Colonel Angell was not with the regiment, some account of the

organization has been given, not only to keep the continuity of the story, but because even if not present it was his ability and faithfulness in training his regiment, the efficiency he inculcated from the top down, which gave the regiment its morale and enabled it to behave well in critical moments. To the commanding officer, whether he be colonel of a regiment, or general who trains a division, even if he is removed on the eve of battle, should go an equal if not greater share of the glory of the day.

Every known instance when Angell was not with his command is mentioned in the following pages. At all other times it is to be assumed, even if he is not specifically mentioned by name, that what is written is a part of his personal history. He was there; he led; obeyed orders and gave orders. His then is the credit for what is told in these pages of the regiment with which he was associated.

E. P.

MILITARY LIFE

ISRAEL ANGELL was thirty-five years of age at the time he was commissioned a major in the Rhode Island Army of Observation. His military life commenced at that time, although his military experience, such as it was, may be said to have begun when he first turned out to train with the local militia company. The law in those days required that every able-bodied man between the ages of sixteen and sixty years of age, unless exempt from certain specified causes, should be enrolled in the militia and should be trained at certain periods. As Angell was not born until 24th August, 1740, he could not have been enrolled in the militia prior to the annual training of 1756. The alarm occasioned by the capture of Fort William Henry, 9th August, 1757, caused more than twenty thousand of the militia of New England to prepare to take the field to defend the country should Montcalm attempt to follow up his advantage. In Rhode Island one sixth part of the military force of the colony was placed under marching orders, but the alarm proving needless they were not called upon to move. The following year Rhode Island proposed to furnish one thousand men, and a contingent formed part of General Abercrombie's force. In 1759 ten hundred men from Rhode Island took part in the expedition against Canada under Sir Jeffrey Amherst.

Whether or no Israel Angell was at any time in the colonial forces, his name does not appear in any extant roll, he was at that age when military preparations and life would seem attractive, and the impressions then obtained would affect his entire after life. Indeed, the inclination for soldiering, if existing at all, is early developed, and Israel Angell was always a soldier. The year 1769 found him already a lieutenant in the local company of militia, commanded by Captain Seth Tripp. The following May, Angell was in command of this Johnston company, a part of one of the three Providence County regi-

ments¹ of militia forming a brigade under the command of Colonel James Angell. One of the field officers in this brigade was Major Daniel Hitchcock.

While in many of the towns the spirit of the times called for the formation of independent companies commanded by the more active and skilful of the militia officers, and whose members were culled from the less efficient mass of militia, often commanded by officers having little or no military qualifications, the character of the officers of the local militia company in Johnston made such an organization unnecessary. Captain Angell had for his lieutenant, Daniel Wightman, and for his ensign, Emor Olney; and had his company well trained, and well in hand for any emergency which might arise.

Providence and the adjoining towns, formerly a part of that ancient township, were intensely patriotic communities. There was little Tory sentiment in that entire region, a marked contrast to the county of Newport.² On the first Monday in April, 1775, a general muster of the militia of the county brought out about two thousand foot and a troop of horse. The independent companies were unattached, and chose their own officers. When tidings of the march of the regular troops out of Boston and of the affray at Lexington reached Providence, the independent companies and some of the militia companies in the smaller towns assembled under arms, expecting orders to march to Boston. But neither the Governor, Joseph Wanton, nor the Deputy-Governor, Darius Sessions, were in sympathy with the popular movement. Indeed, one of the independent companies, the Kentish Guards, commanded by Captain James Mitchel Varnum, a Massachusetts man, and in which Nathanael Greene was a private, having reached Pawtucket, was recalled by orders of the Governor. Greene continued to Attleboro, where word reached him that the regulars had been driven back to Boston.

¹ In 1770 the Providence County militia were organized as one regiment, commanded by Colonel Knight Dexter. In 1774 three regiments were organized. That year witnessed the formation of several "independent" companies, which corresponded to the companies of minute men organized in Massachusetts. James Angell became a brigadier general of militia.

² In June, 1774, the county of Providence had a population of 19,206, the colony, 59,678, of whom 3761 were negroes, and 182 Indians. The population of Providence was 4321, and of Johnston, 1031.

The General Assembly was convened, and on the 25th the Lower House directed that two of its members be appointed to wait upon the Lower House of the Connecticut Assembly, to consult upon measures for the common defense of the four New England colonies, and at the same time resolved, "at this very dangerous Crisis of American Affairs, at a Time when we are surrounded with Fleets and Armies" that fifteen hundred men be raised for the service of the Colony "and the general Cause."¹

At this session it was also voted, "That the military Officers throughout this Colony, or any other Gentlemen who shall be willing, Do forthwith enlist Fifteen Hundred good effective Men, for the service of the Colony; and that each Man, who shall enlist, shall receive a Bounty of Four Dollars, and be entitled to the monthly wages of One Pound, Sixteen Shillings."

The situation caused by the failure of the Assembly to name the officers who should command the levies was not corrected until the next session, a week later. Nevertheless such men as Angell, Simeon Thayer, and many others, at once proceeded to engage men for the little army, although not knowing what rank they might hold, nor even if they would be commissioned at all in this force.

When the General Assembly met, the first Monday in May, steps were taken at once to meet the emergency which had arisen, not only in the need of officers for the force then raising, but with regard to the chief civil officers of the colony.

It was provided that this "Army of Observation," as the force was cautiously designated, should be organized as a brigade of three regiments, each to have three field officers, colonel, lieutenant-colonel, and major, and each to be composed of eight companies. The battery of artillery,² composed of four field pieces, was attached to the brigade.

¹ To this vote Joseph Wanton, Darius Sessions, Thomas Wicks, and William Potter dissented. But three days later General James Angell wrote to the Massachusetts Committee of Safety "at the request of the Deputy-Governor," who was no other than Sessions, stating that he could "only say that as Brigadier of the three Battalions under my Command (which included Israel Angell's Johnston company), in the County of Providence I will furnish you, upon any Alarm, with six hundred men."

² "The United Train of Artillery in the Town of Providence" consisted of the Providence Fusileers, which in December, 1774, had been placed under the

The regiment which claimed to be the senior regiment, having been apportioned to the senior county of the Colony, Providence County, was officered as follows:

Colonel, Daniel Hitchcock; Lieutenant-Colonel, Ezekiel Cornell; Major, Israel Angell; Captain-lieutenants, Simeon Thayer (of the Colonel's company), Stephen Kimball (of the Lieutenant-colonel's company), and John Field (of the Major's company); Captains, Andrew Waterman, John Angell (of the North Providence company), Christopher Olney, Jeremiah Olney, Nathaniel Blackmar.

The oath of enlistment required of each man read in part that he enlisted "as a soldier in his Majesty's service, and in the pay of the Colony of Rhode Island, for the preservation of the liberties of America." The term of enlistment was to the last day of December, 1775.

Enlisted men of the grade of private received 40 shillings a month. The colonel 15 pounds, lieutenant-colonel, 12 pounds, major, 10 pounds, captain, 6 pounds. This pay was in Rhode Island currency, not English sterling, which expressed in dollars was \$3.333 to the pound.

While the newly appointed officers were enlisting and drilling their men, the colony authorities were endeavoring to gather supplies for their subsistence. Some flour obtained by the commissary was seized by the commander of the British ship stationed at Newport, and other difficulties were met with. Finally, however, preparations were sufficiently forwarded to permit a part at least of the force to take the field.

Although Colonel James Angell had written on the 28th of April that men were enlisting fast in the Army of Observation, it is evident that considerable delay was experienced in completing

"special command" of Major Daniel Hitchcock, and the Train of Artillery, which had been commanded by Captain Daniel Tillinghast, with Captain-lieutenant John Crane second in command. These two companies were consolidated 22nd April with Daniel Tillinghast as colonel, Daniel Hitchcock as lieut.-colonel, John Crane, major, and Levi Hall, captain. Previous to December, 1774, Hitchcock had been major of the 1st Providence County regiment, to which belonged the Johnston company commanded by Captain Israel Angell. The latter's ensign, Emor Olney, was one of the deputies to the May session of the Assembly.

Commission as Major in the Army of Observation
Original in Pension Bureau, Washington

Commission as Major in the Army of Observation
Officer in Persian Imperial Mission

By the Honorable the GENERAL ASSEMBLY of the Colony of RHODE-ISLAND, and PROVIDENCE PLANTATIONS, in America.

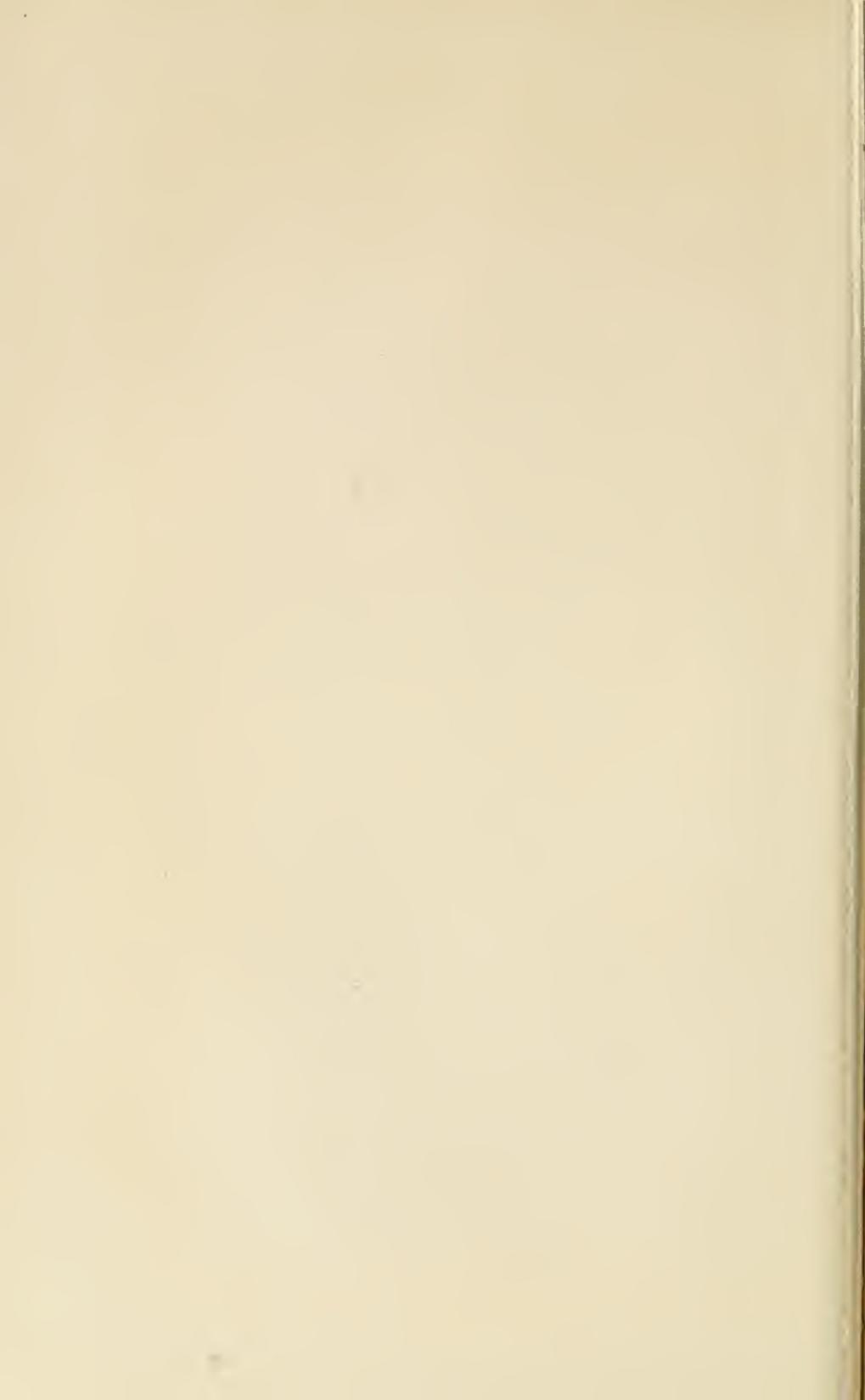
To Israel Angell.

Greeting,

WHEREAS for the Preservation of the Rights and Liberties of His Majesty loyal and faithful Subjects, in this Colony and America, the aforesaid GENERAL ASSEMBLY have ordered Fifteen Hundred Men to be enlisted, and embodied into an Army of Observation, and have appointed you, the said *Colonel, Major*, of the Regiment to be raised in the County of Providence, You are therefore hereby, in His Majesty's Name, G E O R G E the Third, by the Grace of GOD, King of Great-Britain, &c. authorized, empowered, and commissioned, to have, take, and exercise, the Office of *Colonel*, of the Regiment aforesaid; and to command, guide and conduct the same, or any Part thereof. And in Case of an Invasion or Assault of a common Enemy, to infect, or disturb this or any other of His Majesty's Colonies in America, you are to alarm and gather together the *Regiment*, under your Command, or any Part thereof, as you shall deem sufficient, and therewith, to the utmost of your Skill and Ability, you are to Resist, Expel, Kill and Destroy them, in order to preserve the Interest of His Majesty, and His good Subjects, in these Parts. You are also to follow such Instructions, Directions and Orders as shall from Time to Time be given forth, either by the GENERAL ASSEMBLY or your superior Officers. And for your so doing this Commission shall be your sufficient Warrant.

By Virtue of an Act of the said GENERAL ASSEMBLY, I, *Henry T. Angell*, Secretary of the Colony, have hereunto set my Hand, and the public Seal of the said Colony, this *17th July*, A.D. 1775 and in the fiftieth Year of His said Majesty's Reign.

Henry T. Angell



the various companies. Not until the officers had been commissioned was it possible to proceed properly with the organization. This was the 8th of May. Reverend Ezra Stiles in his diary states that enlistments began in Newport on the 10th of May, and that on the 23d the first public parade of recruits, under Captain Tew, took place and that volunteers were called for.

The first of the Rhode Island troops to reach Boston were companies from the Providence County regiment. They were soon joined by the Train of Artillery.¹

Lieutenant-Colonel Miller of Warren may have reached Camp as early as the companies from Providence County. If so, it is likely his was the only company from Church's regiment which was then in Camp. From the fact that neither Colonel Hitchcock nor his second in command, Lieutenant Colonel Cornell, reached camp prior to May 28th, and that it would have been unlikely that any part of his regiment would have been ordered to march unless accompanied by a field officer of the regiment, it follows that Major Angell must have been the first field officer of that regiment and of the brigade to take the field. If, as seems likely, he was in command of several companies of Hitchcock's regiment, already in camp when Lieutenant Colonel Miller brought in his detachment of Church's regiment, the latter would assume command, over both Major Angell's force and that of Major Crane's. He retained command until the arrival of Colonel Hitchcock on the 28th of May.

Perhaps it will never be known to whom belongs the honor of having commanded the first Rhode Island troops to arrive before Boston, but that it was Angell can hardly be doubted.

Drake in *History of Roxbury*, p. 407, repeats the statement that while stationed at Roxbury, that part now Jamaica Plain, the Rhode Islanders were billeted upon the inhabitants, and some

¹ The Artillery had the advantage of being fully organized and were a disciplined body, while the infantry were recruits, and the companies to which they were assigned but newly organized and officered with men with little more experience than themselves. It was commanded by Major Crane, and in the original organization appears to have been attached to the regiment commanded by Colonel Hitchcock. None of Varnum's regiment apparently had reached the camp when General Greene himself arrived.

were at Deacon Nathaniel Weld's and some at Joseph Curtis's in Centre Street. This may have been true of the first arrivals, but the Rhode Island contingent did not lack for tentage, and at that season of the year, even had facilities existed in that neighborhood to billet so large a force, would certainly have camped in the open. The officers we learn from Colonel Miller's epistles to his wife were quartered in the house formerly the residence of Francis Bernard, a former royal governor of Massachusetts, and which immediately preceding hostilities was the residence of the second Sir William Pepperrell. The location was both pleasant and healthful, in close proximity to Jamaica Pond. The hot-house on the estate was utilized as a magazine for the Rhode Island artillery.

No wonder that the demoralization existing among the Massachusetts forces, and even in the Connecticut regiments, who were their nearest neighbors, affected the morale of the newly raised force from Rhode Island. The men were generally entirely ignorant of the first principles of military training. Some had had a few days drill as members of an "Independent Company"; others knew only what little they had picked up in the worse than useless militia trainings. A very few had had experience in the old French War, had, perhaps, served in the British army or navy, both of which branches of the service obtained many recruits in the colonies. Discipline was so lax that it was no wonder that on Saturday, 3d June, when General Greene reached the Rhode Island camp he found it in "great commotion," the men "a factious set," and the officers unable to control them. He related that several companies with clubbed muskets were on the point of starting for home, the commissaries driven off, and there existing an "excitement which in a few days more would have been fatal to the campaign." At that time Varnum and his regiment, which contained perhaps a larger proportion of men who had had military training than the other regiments, had not arrived in camp. Greene wrote to hurry them on, hoping their influence would help settle matters. However, in forty-eight hours he found the situation materially changed. He does not state what were the especial causes which had produced this demoralization among the Rhode Islanders, but it may be suspected that it was in part due to the absence of the

commanding officer of the brigade, and the fact that before leaving the colony no arrangement had been made regarding the relative rank of the field officers of the regiments. In fact the Act creating the Army of Observation had stipulated that when the brigade was formed the different regiments should alternate in taking the right of the line, and that the rank of the officers should correspond. There was a gross neglect in supplying provisions, and undoubtedly the commissaries were under suspicion. Moreover, the Rhode Island troops were not under the command of General Ward, except so far as their officers chose to coöperate with him. It was not until the 28th of June, eleven days after the battle of Bunker Hill, that the General Assembly voted that the Army of Observation, which had been enlisted "in his Majesty's service," be placed under the command of the Commander in Chief of the American Army stationed in Massachusetts Bay.

Greene was summoned to attend a meeting of general officers held at Headquarters at Cambridge, 5th June, and joined with Putnam and Spencer of Connecticut in accepting the authority of Ward as Commander in Chief.

In the meantime, Major Angell and the field officers present were busily engaged in attempting to teach the recruits the school of the soldier, and to shake their organizations into shape. G. W. Greene, the biographer of General Nathanael Greene, asserts that many among the officers of the brigade had been taught their drill by the drill-master of the Kentish Guards, Daniel Box, a former sergeant of the British Army.

Officers' and non-commissioned officers' school was held daily in the Rhode Island brigade, and at four o'clock the battalions were mustered, paraded, and instructed. Colonel Hitchcock's orderly book for this period is quoted in *Life of General Greene*. Under 8th June is found the following order:

Colonel Hitchcock's regiment (will) parade on Wednesday every week, precisely at half after three o'clock and march around the Square. The Colonel expects, in that parade, that every officer appear in his uniform, and that care is taken by the officers that every soldier be clean, and as neatly dressed as possible; and that no one who has breeches be permitted to wear trousers, nor to parade without having on his stockings and shoes; and that,

during the march, no soldier be permitted to talk. As the regiment has gained honor from their regular performance of exercise, 'tis fully expected by the Colonel that the officers spare no pains to instruct themselves in the exercise.

It was not long before the Rhode Island brigade was considered to be one of the most soldierly organizations in the Army, and on the 28th of June, Greene wrote that the Rhode Islanders, "though raw, irregular, and undisciplined" were "under much better government than any around Boston." He found occasion, however, to severely criticize some of the officers, captains as well as those of lower rank, who neglected their duty, "some through fear of offending their soldiers, some through laziness, and some through obstinacy." "This," he continues, "makes the task of the field officers very laborious."

Rhode Island troops did not participate in the battle of Bunker Hill.¹ Nevertheless on that day they were under fire, their first experience. During the action at Charlestown, the troops at Roxbury were prepared to resist any attempt of the enemy to attack the Roxbury lines. The Rhode Island brigade was drawn up just within reach of the British guns on the neck, probably near the meeting-house in the present Eliot Square, or nearer Dudley Street. The fortifications at Roxbury were designed to close the Neck, the only approach to Boston overland, and consisted of redoubts on the Neck, about the Bay, which then covered a wide expanse, and a strong fort on the hill where now stands the Cochituate Stand-pipe. This fort was out of range of the enemy's guns. Stephen Olney of Angell's battalion relates that it was with great difficulty that the officers could keep the men, unaccustomed to shot and shell, in ranks, and that they were not long kept in this exposed situation, perhaps originally chosen to give them a needed experience.

¹ General Greene was in Rhode Island the day of the battle. Hastening to camp, he found the troops "in high spirits." A detachment from Varnum's regiment had been ordered to Prospect Hill to dig entrenchments. Reverend Ezra Stiles, noting that none of the Rhode Island troops were in the battle, gives the personal experience of Reverend Mr. Martin, later chaplain in a Rhode Island regiment, who had accompanied Colonel Prescott. Warner warned Prescott early in the day to send for reinforcements, but the latter delayed until after the attack had begun.

News soon reached the Army that Congress had appointed a Commander in Chief.¹ As early as 16th May the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts had asked the Continental Congress to take the regulation and general direction of the army collecting for the general defense. President Hancock presented this to Congress on the 2d June. Washington was appointed 15th June. He reached Cambridge 2d July, and the next day formally took command. On the 10th of July he wrote to Hancock:

The troops raised in New Hampshire, with a regiment from Rhode Island, occupy Winter Hill, a part of those from Connecticut, under General Putnam, are on Prospect Hill. The troops in this town are entirely of the Massachusetts: the remainder of the Rhode Island men are at Sewall's farm. Two regiments of Connecticut and nine of Massachusetts are at Roxbury.²

On 4th July, General Greene sent a "detachment of two hundred men, commanded by a colonel, a lieut.-colonel, and major, with a letter of address, to welcome his Excellency to camp."³ He does not give the names of the officers but it is evident the detachment was selected from the three regiments, and probably one officer from each. The same day Greene received instructions from Rhode Island that that colony had placed its troops under Washington's command.

On 4th July Washington issued a General Order:

The Continental Congress having now taken all the troops of the several colonies which have been raised, or which may hereafter be raised, for the support and defence of the liberties of America, into their pay and service, they are now the troops of the United Provinces of North America.

¹ Congress appointed the following general officers, ranking in the order named: Ward, Lee, Schuyler, Putnam, major generals; Pomeroy, Montgomery, Wooster, Heath, Spencer, Thomas, Sullivan, Greene, brigadier generals. On Washington's arrival he informed Greene that the "idea of Colony troops is to be abolished, and that the whole army is to be formed into brigades, and the generals to be appointed by Congress."

² Sparks: *Writings of Washington*, 3:18. Sewall's farm covered that part of Brookline which lay between the Charles River and Roxbury. A road ran directly from there to the place where the Rhode Islanders had encamped.

³ Letter of Greene, quoted by G. W. Greene, 1:99.

Pursuant to an order of the preceding day, a return made of the Army showed an enrolled force of 16,770 men, exclusive of Gridley's regiment of artillery, 489 men, and the Rhode Island Company of Artillery, 96 men. The other Rhode Island forces were returned as follows: Commissioned officers and staff, 107; non-commissioned officers, 108; rank and file present fit for duty, 1041; absent sick, 18; present sick, 24; on furlough, 2; total strength exclusive of artillery, 1181. This included the three regiments of Varnum, Hitchcock, and Church.

The colonels of the three regiments at General Greene's suggestion drew lots to see what should be their relative rank, and Hitchcock was the fortunate man, but never pressed his good fortune, as it was evident from the first that Colonel Varnum was the officer most favored by Greene and the powers at home.

The various colonies provided supplies for their own troops. General Greene had occasion to complain to the Rhode Island authorities of the condition in which supplies arrived. On 4th July, he wrote:

About the provisions falling short, some barrells not having much more than one half and two thirds the quantity they ought to contain. . . . The field officers are continually complaining to me of the imposition, and requesting me to have a stop put to it as soon as possible. Many people in camp suspect the fidelity of the committee. . . . A quantity of bread arrived from Providence last week, and today the much greater part was mouldy and unfit for use. . . . Such bread being brought here begets jealousy among the people, and that they are going to be imposed upon; and little grievances are sufficient reasons to ground their complaints and murmurs upon. . . . There was a quantity of beef condemned last week, as being horse meat. . . . Captain Jerry Olney, Captain Kitt Olney, and many others came and informed me, that the people had a conceit it was horse flesh; and they had gone without victuals all day.

An examination by competent butchers confirmed the suspicions of the men, as to a great portion of the beef. This incident is suggestive of what may have been happening before the General arrived at the camp, and is likely to have been the cause of the dissatisfaction he found so evident.

Greene was obliged to protest against the sale of liquor

within the limits of the camp,¹ and the orderly book of Colonel Hitchcock shows that infractions of discipline were not infrequent and were severely punished. He described Varnum and Hitchcock as excellent disciplinarians.

On the 5th July Washington visited Roxbury, inspecting the defenses, and inspected the Rhode Island camp.² He again visited Roxbury on the 13th. On Tuesday, the 18th July, 1775, a proclamation from the Continental Congress was read to the troops.

General Lee was much pleased with the Rhode Island brigade. On the 20th July he wrote to Dr. Benjamin Rush:

Upon my Soul, the materials here (I mean the private men) are admirable, had they proper uniforms, arms, and proper officers, their zeal, youth, bodily strength, good humour and dexterity, must make 'em an invincible army. The Rhode Islanders are well off in the article of officers and the young officers of the other Provinces are willing . . . but from the old big wigs *libera nos Domine.*

On the 22d July Washington rearranged the forces. General Greene was given a brigade, composed of his three Rhode Island regiments and four Massachusetts regiments.³ This brigade, to be posted at Prospect Hill, with General Sullivan's brigade, posted at Winter Hill, formed the left wing or second division of the army, and was under the command of Major General Charles

¹ *Journals of the Prov. Cong. of Mass.*, p. 461.

² Greene refers to his expected visit in his letter of 4th July, as to take place 6th July.

³ G. O. 22 July, 1775. . . . That Colonel Stark's, Colonel Poor's, Colonel Read's New Hampshire, Colonel Nixon's, Colonel Mansfield's, Colonel Doolittle's Massachusetts, be formed into another brigade under the command of Brigadier General Sullivan, and posted on Winter Hill; that Colonel Varnum's, Colonel Hitchcock's, Colonel Church's Rhode Island, Colonel Whitcomb's, Colonel Gardner's, Colonel Jona. Brewer's Massachusetts, be formed into another brigade to be commanded by Brigadier General Greene, and posted upon Prospect Hill." A day later Little's regiment was joined to the brigade. Glover's Orderly Books are in the possession of the Essex Institute. They begin with an entry of 30th June, 1775. The first book extends through 14th September, 1775. The second book covers the period from 15th September, 1775, to 1st January, 1776. Extracts have been printed in *Essex Institute Hist. Col. 5.*

Lee. On the 25th the Rhode Islanders moved to Prospect Hill, and according to a letter written by Lieut.-Colonel Miller were posted to defend the breastworks there.

The Reverend William Emerson, whose own quarters were at the foot of Prospect Hill, has left a description of the camp soon after its reorganization. He wrote:

The strictest government is taking place, and great distinction is made between officers and soldiers. Everyone is made to know his place, and to keep in it, or be tied up and receive thirty or forty lashes according to his crime. Thousands are at work every day from four to eleven o'clock in the morning. . . . It is very diverting to walk among the camps. They are as different in their form as the owners are in their dress; and every tent is a portraiture of the temper and tastes of the persons who encamp in it. Some are made of boards, and some of sailcloth. Some partly of the one and partly of the other. Again, others are of stone and turf, brick or brush. Some are thrown up in a hurry; others curiously wrought with doors and windows, done with Wreathes and withes, in the manner of a basket. Some are your proper tents and marquees, looking like a regular camp of the enemy. In these are the Rhode Islanders, who are furnished with tent equipage, and everything in the most exact English style.¹

Up to this time the health of the camp had been fairly good, but in August Greene wrote that "our troops are very sickly with dysentery."

During the remainder of the summer, the various regiments in the army were gradually instructed in the fundamental duties of the soldier. Much of this work, in his own regiment, devolved upon Major Angell.

The two Rhode Island regiments which were to form part of the permanent army were numbered 12 and 14. Varnum succeeded in obtaining for his regiment the lower number. This affected the relative standing of all of the field officers in both regiments.

During July and August several officers whose conduct on the 17th of June, and on later occasions, was open to criticism, appeared before court-martial. One of the courts, set for the 14th August, by Orders of the preceding day, was to try

¹ Sparks's *Washington*, 3: 491.

Colonel John Mansfield, "accused by three of his officers for high crimes and misdemeanor." General Greene was president of the court, and Colonel Varnum, Lieut.-Colonel Miller, and Major Angell were members. The sentence in his case was announced in General Orders of 15th September, "for remissness and backwardness in discharge of duty at the late engagement on Bunker Hill" he was found guilty of a breach of the 49th Article of War, and was in consequence cashiered and found unfit to serve in the Continental army. Colonel Mansfield's trial attracted much attention. A similar sentence was approved in the case of Captain Christopher Gardner of Varnum's regiment on the 2d of August, who was found guilty of deserting his post. Colonel Church was president of the court. What the occasion was is not told, but some chagrin was caused in Hitchcock's regiment by reason of Gardner being at first described as of that regiment. So far as the records have been recovered there is not a single instance known of an officer in the latter regiment, from its first organization in 1775 to the time Israel Angell retired from its command in 1781, who was court martialed for misbehavior in the presence of the enemy.

Not the least of Washington's troubles from the moment he took command of the army, were questions relating to recommendations for commissions, settlement of seniority in rank, and promotions. The Act passed by the Rhode Island Assembly authorizing the Army of Observation provided that in turn "each regiment be placed in said brigade upon the flanks, and in the center, so that perfect equality of rank be preserved, and that a similar equality of rank be preserved among the field officers of different regiments."

"Rules and Articles" formed by the Continental Congress for the government of the "twelve United Colonies" were distributed 9th August, to every regimental commander, who was to see that all officers and soldiers subscribed to them, after which each company commander was to keep the roll signed by his company. (G. O., Aug. 9.) A fortnight later these were called for by Headquarters to enable a correct list of officers to be obtained, to whom commissions were to be issued. It was announced, however, that those officers holding already a commission from their colony, in the same grade in which they were

to be commissioned in the Continental army, were not to apply for a new commission. The commissions were finally delivered the last few days of September.

On the 18th of August a return of the army showed that Major Angell and all the other officers of both regiments were present, and that the 12th Regiment, having a paper strength of 401 men, had 308 present fit for duty, while the 14th Regiment, numbering 445 men, had 342 present fit for duty. On the 23d September another return was made, showing all the officers present except Lieut.-Colonel Crary, and that the strength of the regiments was somewhat more nearly equalized. The 12th now had a strength of 422 men, of whom 362 were present fit for duty, and the 14th had 421 men, of whom 310 were present fit for duty. Advantage had been freely taken of the opportunity to visit home on furlough, and absence from camp, either on furlough or unauthorized, became more and more a matter of concern.

On the 15th of October a Committee of Congress, one of whom was Benjamin Franklin, enlarged by the presence of several delegates from the New England colonies, met at Washington's Headquarters, and after deliberations of a week, arrived at a plan for the reorganization of the army. On the 22d a General Order was issued requesting officers to inform the Commander in Chief if they would continue in the service. Three days later attention was called to the fact that the declarations must be explicit, without reservation, that officers would remain until the last day of the year 1776. Major Angell was among those who agreed to remain.

On 11th December Washington issued a General Order:

The Congress thought proper to increase the pay of Captains and Subalterns of the Continental army and as uniformity and decency in dress are essentially necessary in the appearance and regularity of an army, his Excellency recommends it earnestly to the officers to get themselves in a uniform dress. The field officers of each new corps will set the example by clothing themselves in a regimental of their respective corps. The General by no means recommends or desires officers to run into costly or expensive regimentals. No matter how plain or coarse so that they are but uniform in their color, cut, and fashion.

On Prospect Hill the construction of barracks had proceeded with as much rapidity as possible but in November, when orders were given to occupy the barracks, many were as yet unfinished. General Greene wrote as late as December, "many of the troops are yet in tents, and will be for some time, especially the officers." No word of complaint concerning the discomforts of his life is found in the only letter of this period we have of Israel Angell. He wrote from Prospect Hill to his brother under date of the 1st of December, but his concern was for the people of Rhode Island, who were even then finding fault because salt had risen in price. The condition at Prospect Hill was such that Greene wrote, "many regiments have been obliged to eat their provisions raw for want of fuel to cook it . . . (for want of fuel) our sufferings have been inconceivable. The barracks have been greatly delayed for want of stuff. . . . The fatigues of the campaign, the suffering for want of wood and clothing, have made a multitude of soldiers heartily sick of service."

As the enlistments began to expire, and men insisted upon leaving for home, militia were brought into the camp to take their places, but this temporary expedient did not serve to allay the fears of the general officers lest January 1st, 1776, would find them with only a skeleton army. General Lee, who commanded the division to which Major Angell belonged, was particularly outspoken in his opinion of the men who would not remain. There is good reason to think that his language and acts with regard to this matter served rather to repel than attract reënlistments. He went so far as to post before his quarters a copy of a proclamation, which the men were given to understand would be circulated along the route they were to follow in returning home.¹

A general return of the army was made as of 30th December, 1775, and from this we learn that in the 14th Regiment, commanded by Colonel Daniel Hitchcock,² there were 16 line

¹ See *Conn. Hist. Soc. Col.*, 7, where Lee's address to the "Publicans and other Housekeepers residing on the different roads betwixt Cambridge, New London and Hartford" is printed in full. The Connecticut troops whose enlistment expired left camp the 10th December. Many had reënlisted, and many more reënlisted after having visited their homes. Nowhere has mention been made of the Rhode Island troops doing less than was expected of them.

² On the 1st January, 1776, the officer personnel of the regiment was as

officers, 12 staff officers, 19 sergeants, 15 musicians, 383 rank and file, of whom only 255 were present fit for duty. This gave a total regimental strength of 445.¹

The total strength of the army was 16,786; present fit for duty of the rank and file, 11,752. In addition there were two artillery corps; the Providence Company of Artillery, Major John Crane, having a total strength of 95, and the regiment of artillery commanded by Colonel Richard Gridley, numbering 483 men.

The new year opened with the announcement by General Washington of the organization of the new Continental army, and on that day there was raised over Headquarters at Cambridge a new flag bearing seven red and six white stripes, emblematic of the thirteen colonies, and also bearing the British union, indicative that as yet there had been no severance of the ties which bound the colonies to the empire. This flag was raised the same day at Prospect Hill. A British observer, Lieutenant Carter, quoted by Frothingham, noted its appearance at Prospect Hill, and that it was saluted with 13 guns and as many cheers. This flag took the place of the old flag with a red field.

In the reorganization the Rhode Island regiments lost their former numbers, and became the 9th (Varnum's) and the 11th (Hitchcock's) Continental regiments. Major Angell received his Continental Commission on the 4th February.²

The troops had orders in November to occupy barracks prepared for them, but it was not until winter had set in that

follows: Daniel Hitchcock, colonel; Ezekiel Cornell, lieutenant-colonel; Israel Angell, major; Jeremiah Olney, William Tew, Stephen Kimball, Francis Symonds, Silas Talbot, Coggeshall Olney, Ephraim Bowen, John Spur, captains. The staff officers were, Oliver Noble, chaplain, Samuel Tenney, surgeon, Cyprian Sterry, quartermaster. The officer personnel of the regiment commanded by Colonel Varnum was, James Mitchell Varnum, colonel; Archibald Crary, lieutenant-colonel; Christopher Smith, major; Ebenezer Flagg, Elijah Lewis, Nathaniel Hawkins, Oliver Clark, Thomas Cole, John Lane, Joshua Read, John Gooch, captains; Ebenezer David, chaplain; John Singer Dexter, adjutant; Clark Brown, quartermaster; Joseph Joslyn, surgeon.

¹ The 12th Regiment (Varnum's) showed a total of 488; of the rank and file but 307 (out of 420) were present fit for duty. These returns may be seen in Force, *American Archives*.

² G. O.; that General Greene and the colonels of his brigade repair to Headquarters to receive the commissions for their officers. *Glover's Orderly Book*.

Commission as Major, 11th Regiment of Foot
Original in Pension Bureau, Washington

W

The new army started with the command given by General Washington of the organization of the new Continental army under his direction. There was raised over Headquarters at Cambridge a new flag bearing seven red and six white stripes emblematic of the thirteen colonies, and also bearing the British union, indicating that as yet there had been no severance of the ties which bound the colonies to the empire. The flag was raised the same day as Washington's Commission as Major General of the Foot Guards, and the first battle of Lexington and Concord was fought.

IN CONGRESS S. S.

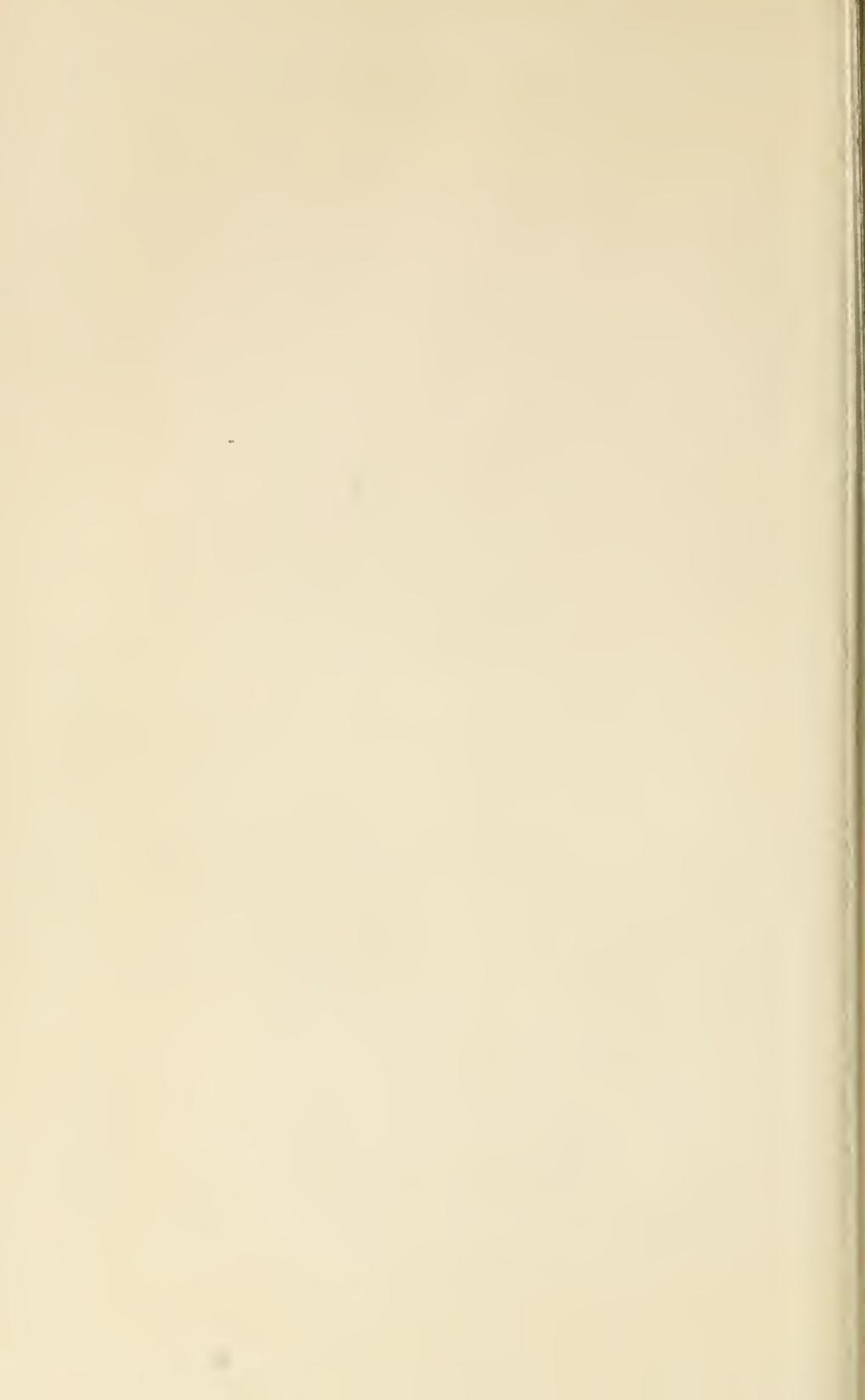
The DELEGATES of the United Colonies of New-Hampshire, Massachusetts-Bay, Rhode-Island, Connecticut, New-York, New-Jersey, Pennsylvania, the Counties of Newcastle, Kent, and Sussex in Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North-Carolina, and South-Carolina, and Georgia,

WE reposing especial trust and confidence in your patriotism, valour, conduct and fidelity, DO by these presents constitute and appoint You to be *Major of the Regiment of Foot Commanded by Colonel Daniel Webb, and*

in the army of the United Colonies, raised for the defence of American Liberty, and for repelling every hostile invasion thereof. You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge the duty of Major by doing and performing all manner of things thereto belonging. And we do strictly charge and require all officers and soldiers under your command, to be obedient to your orders, as Major. And you are to observe and follow such orders and directions from time to time as you shall receive from this or a future Congress of the United Colonies, or Committee of Congress, for that purpose appointed, or Commander in Chief for the time being of the army of the United Colonies, or any other your superior officer, according to the rules and discipline of war, in pursuance of the trust reposed in you. This commission to continue in force until revoked by this or a future Congress.

Attest
John Hancock President
January the 1st 1776

By Order of the Congress,
John Hancock President



Major Angell exchanged his "marquiss tent" for a rough hut. With cold weather came rumors that with the freezing of the bay and river an attack was to be expected. This failed to materialize, and with the approach of the colder weather of February signs of activity in the American camp gave warning that effective steps were to be taken to end the siege. However, the bay remained open. Washington now determined to seize Dorchester Heights. A cannonade begun on the night of the 2d of March continued until the 5th, and on the night of the 4th Dorchester Heights were occupied. High winds on the afternoon of the 5th prevented the British from embarking the force intended to assault the American entrenchments. On the Cambridge side, ready to embark in boats to cross the bay as soon as the enemy had begun their attack at Dorchester, was General Putnam in command of the two divisions of Greene and Sullivan. With Greene were his two regiments of Rhode Islanders, and with them Major Angell. They waited but for the prearranged signal. Greene was to land at Barton's Point, or a little to the south,¹ and having secured that post, were to force the works on the Neck, and let in the troops from Roxbury. Night came with further opportunity for strengthening the hastily constructed redoubts on the Heights. So strong was the position that General Howe determined upon the evacuation of the place. A tacit understanding between Howe and Washington caused the latter to refrain from attack as long as no damage was done to the town, and preparations continued for the evacuation of Boston, which, however, had to be stimulated by activities on the part of the besieging force. On the 17th of March the last of the British forces embarked, and the fleet dropped down the harbor. The same day detachments of the American army entered the town, the command being taken by General Putnam.

¹ A cove with flats extended south of the Point, covering the region immediately north of Cambridge street. There were earth works protecting the landing places, both at Barton Point and the lower slopes of Beacon Hill. Had the attempt been made it is probable hard fighting would have resulted. Only well disciplined and determined men could have been successful, which shows the reliance Washington placed on the troops selected. Sullivan wrote to John Adams a few days after the 17th, that boats could be had sufficient only for four thousand men, and the men were paraded ready to embark. See *Mass. Hist. Soc. Proc.*, March, 1876.

No general entry of the victorious troops was made. Small-pox was prevalent in the town, and the occupying force was carefully selected from among those who had had the disease.

Washington wrote to Joseph Reed from Cambridge, 19th March, 1776: "I have already marched the riflemen and five regiments for New York; I cannot spare more, whilst the fleet hover in our harbour. So soon as they are fairly gone, more will follow with all expedition, as I shall do myself, as I suppose New York to be the object in view." He wrote again on the 25th, giving his opinion that the British were but waiting a favorable opportunity to "retrieve their disgrace before they go off." Six regiments had been detached to New York, and the term of enlistment of ten regiments expired on the first of April. In a letter of the 28th he mentions that the British fleet, except a vessel or two, had left Nantasket, that six more regiments from his own army would immediately march to New York, and a day or two after that his whole force, except three or four regiments left to guard Boston, and that in three or four days he, himself, would follow. The following day, 29th March, orders were given for Varnum's, Hitchcock's, Reed's, and Bailey's regiments to march on Monday morning (1st April) at sunrise. Brigadier-General Greene¹ to take command of the brigade.

The people of Rhode Island since the evacuation of Boston had been apprehensive that the enemy would seek to occupy Newport, and Governor Cooke had made urgent representations to Washington of the need of Continental troops for the protection of that colony. This had not been, and could not be, acceded to. Washington also denied the request that the army moving from Boston to New York should be marched through Rhode Island, in order that if the much-feared attack took place, there might be a force at hand to repel the invasion. The route of the troops was by way of Waltham, Sudbury, or Framingham, Grafton, to the Connecticut line, and thence to Norwich and New London, where transports were to be taken for New York. This was the route which Greene's brigade expected to follow, notwithstanding that the Rhode Islanders were in that brigade.

¹ General Greene wrote on the 24th March, to Colonel Joseph Nightingale, at Providence, "Rhode Island has as good troops as are on the continent."

However, on receipt of an express from Governor Cooke, bringing the tidings that a man-of-war had just arrived in Newport harbor, and that twenty-seven sail of vessels had been sighted off Seconnet Point, Washington ordered General Greene to proceed with his brigade to Providence.

The march thither was uneventful, though without doubt hastened by the anxiety of the commanding general and his Rhode Island troops to reach their homes, now as they thought threatened by the enemy. This anxiety was relieved, however, by learning *en route* that the report of the arrival of a British fleet off Newport was a false alarm.

Colonel Little's Orderly Book, quoted by Johnston,¹ gives the order of General Greene for the escort to Washington, who had followed the brigade to Providence, and whose visit was quite an event in the life of the town. He had left Cambridge on the 4th and arrived at Providence the following day. The Governor met him there and called out the various independent companies, cadets, grenadiers, and light infantry, of the town, which with the two Continental regiments formed Washington's escort.

Hitchcock's regiment was undoubtedly chosen as part of the escort because of its being known originally as the Providence County regiment, and most of its officers, if not the men, were residents of that town and county. Little's was chosen perhaps as a compliment to Massachusetts, for it is not likely that it excelled Varnum's regiment in military appearance. It is also possible that an opportunity had been given many of the officers in Varnum's regiment, and as many of the men as could be trusted to report promptly the following day to resume the march, to visit their homes in Kent County.

The march for Norwich was resumed by part of the brigade on the 5th, and the following day those who had taken part in the parade also left Providence. The road followed was what then was considered the best road. For many years it was the Post Road. It led out of Providence at the corner of Westminster and Stokes streets in Olneyville, thence it passed along the present line of Plainfield Street, formerly the boundary between Johnston and Cranston, to South Scituate and to the Connecticut

¹ Johnston, *Campaign of 1776*, p. 62. See page 46.

boundary, at what is now Oneco.¹ The line of march was therefore not far from Major Angell's homestead, which was on the Scituate Road.

The last of the army arrived at New York on the 24th, and on that day, the temporary brigading of regiments, made at Boston, changed. The whole army was divided into five brigades, commanded by Generals Heath, Spencer, Sullivan, Greene, and Lord Stirling. Heath and Sullivan each had five regiments assigned to their brigades, the others but four. Greene lost Bailey's regiment. This organization lasted but five days, for on the 29th, Sullivan with six regiments having been ordered to reinforce the Northern army, the whole army was organized as four brigades, and the third, originally Sullivan's, which was to defend the Long Island lines at Brooklyn, was given to Greene. It was not until the 3d or 4th of May,² however, that General Greene crossed to Long Island with his troops. His command then consisted of the regiments commanded by Colonels Hitchcock, Varnum, and Little, and Colonel Edward Hand's Pennsylvania Riflemen, the 11th, 9th, 12th, and 1st regiments of Foot respectively.

Hand's regiment was already on Long Island, engaged in scouting and patrolling, and was stronger by a hundred men than the other regiments in the brigade. The average strength of the Rhode Island and Massachusetts regiments was about 380 officers and men.

Many of the inhabitants of Long Island were Loyalists; some, indeed, were rampant Tories. Through these sympathizers the British commander obtained full information of the movements and strength of the patriot forces, and of the fortifications they were erecting.

At Red Hook was an important battery, where from the 8th August, Colonel Varnum's regiment was posted.³ One of the Rhode Islanders stationed there gave to Reverend Ezra Stiles a description of the American fortifications, on the construction of which the division was constantly engaged.

¹ Wood, *Post Roads of New England*. The distance in Rhode Island was twenty-one miles, in Connecticut to Norwich, nineteen miles.

² See Johnston, *Campaign of 1776*, p. 65.

³ Greene's Orders, quoted by Johnston.

East of the neck which led to Red Hook were the Gowanus Marshes and the creek, which on the day of the battle was crossed by the detachments of Hitchcock's regiment under the command of Cornell and Angell in retreat from their exposed position.

Major Angell was "field officer of the Picquet" on the 8th May, and again on the 20th. The 17th was set aside as a day of fasting and prayer, as directed by Congress, and by order of Washington all duties, except the necessary guard, were discontinued. The troops were ordered to attend the duties of the day in a devout and cleanly manner. On the same day, General Greene forbade any soldier to mount guard without shoes, recalling to mind Hitchcock's order of the year before concerning bare-foot men on parade. Two days later Hitchcock's regiment was reviewed.

On the 9th July, Washington published a General Order:

The Continental Congress impelled by the dictates of duty, policy, and necessity have been pleased to dissolve the connection which subsisted between this country and Great Britain, and to declare the colonies of North America, free and Independent States—the several Brigades are to be drawn up this evening on their respective parades at six o'clock when the declaration of Congress, showing the grounds and reasons of the measure is to be read with an audible voice. The General hopes that this important Point will serve as a fresh incitement to every officer and soldier to act with courage and fidelity, as knowing that now the Peace and safety of this country depend (under God) solely on the success of our arms, and that he is now in the service of a state possessed of sufficient power to reward his merit and advance him to the highest honor of a free country.

That evening Hitchcock's regiment was drawn up on the beach and listened to the reading of the Declaration of Independence.¹ To the Rhode Islanders this must have seemed a resounding echo of the vote of their own General Assembly, which at the preceding May session had adopted a resolution releasing the inhabitants of that colony from their oaths of allegiance to King George.

There was now and later considerable discontent among the officers regarding pay and promotion. A letter of General

¹ *Narrative of Stephen Olney.*

Greene to John Adams alludes to the condition of the officers, "the very soul of an army." "The field officers in general," he wrote, "and the colonels of regiments in particular, think themselves grievously burthened upon the present establishment; few, if any, of that rank that are worth retaining in the service will continue, if any dependence is to be made upon the discontent which appears." Again he says, "their pay will not defray their expenses."

General Greene feared that good officers would be lost to the army, and in their place less able men appointed: "People engaged in the service in the early part of the dispute without any consideration of pay reward; few, if any, thought of its continuance; but its duration will reduce all that have not independent fortunes to attend to their family concerns."

Major Angell was one of those who had volunteered without thought of the consequences which a long contest would entail, but he never flinched from his duty. Nowhere in diary or letters, nor in any family tradition, is there a hint that financial difficulties or family ties had caused him to contemplate resignation from the army, either at this time or during the more trying period of the winters at Valley Forge and Morristown.

On the 12th of August, 1776, General Greene requested Washington to recommend Colonel Varnum for promotion.¹ The feeling engendered by the rivalry between Colonels Varnum and

¹ On the 14th Washington wrote to the President of Congress that that morning Colonel Varnum had been with him to resign his commission, conceiving himself greatly injured in not being noticed in the late arrangements and promotions of general officers, but upon being remonstrated with had consented to remain. On the 25th Varnum wrote to Washington, that "ever since I waited upon your Excellency," alluding to the interview of the 14th, "expectation of a battle hath continued me in my present command. New difficulties arising, I can derive no satisfaction from that quarter, my disgrace is unalterably fixed by conferring the 'detur digniori' upon those of inferior standing, without the least competition of superior merit. Was promotion in the army a favour, my tongue and pen should be silent; but it is the just reward of merit and rank. My continuance can be of no possible advantage. The variety of incidents that may happen in an engagement will possibly demand my submission to the orders of a Brigadier General, whose standing till lately, hath been subordinate to mine . . . how can you deny me the only consolation left, your permission to retire from a service no longer eligible." The letters and Order referred to may be found in *Force*, 1: 950, 1067, 1151.

Hitchcock, both worthy officers, does not appear reflected in any of the writings of Major Angell, and it is very doubtful indeed if Hitchcock's statement, that if Varnum was preferred to him, his regiment at the end of the campaign would refuse to reënlist, had any basis other than his own fancy. Certainly Major Angell had no such feeling. Officers had already learned that promotion was not, just as Varnum stated, always conferred because of superior merit. As soon as the principle of promotion by reason of seniority, the unfit being eliminated, is abandoned, favoritism steps in. How Greene came to regard these jealousies is shown by his letter to Marion, of 1782: "Rank is not what constitutes the good officer, but good conduct. Substantial services give reputation, not captious disputes. A captain may be more respectable than a general. Rank is nothing unless accompanied with worthy actions." (Greene, *Life of Greene*, 3: 453.)

In the meantime the long expected British fleet arrived. Each day brought several vessels, and on the 29th June, forty-five sail anchored off the Hook. By the 2d of July the number had increased to 130 vessels. Sir William Howe had arrived a week before, and these ships brought the troops who had sailed for Halifax after the evacuation of Boston. The British were landed on Staten Island. A fortnight later Admiral Howe arrived with reinforcements from England, and on the 1st of August, Clinton and Cornwallis returned from their unsuccessful expedition against the Carolinas. On the 12th the last of the British expeditionary forces arrived—Hessians and a regiment of Guards. The fleet in the Narrows now consisted of more than four hundred ships. Never before had England sent forth so powerful a force. Of the 31,000 men constituting the army, about one-fourth were Hessians. To oppose this veteran army, of whom 25,000 were fit for duty, Washington had nearly 19,000 effectives, of whom about two thirds were from New England, 800 from Rhode Island.

Upon Greene's promotion to major general, his brigade had been given to John Nixon, who the same day, had been promoted from colonel to brigadier general, and Heard's brigade of five New Jersey regiments reënforced the division on Long Island. On 15th August the entire division, of two brigades,

numbered 2900 men fit for duty, to which in a few days were added about 600 militia from Long Island and Connecticut.

These changes in command brought old associates together. When Major Angell was stationed at Prospect Hill he had seen much of both Nixon and Sullivan. The Continental regiments had confidence in each other, but they well knew how little dependence could be placed upon militia and new levies, who might fight with the desperation of enthusiasm, or become panic-stricken. Tests were soon to come.

On the 22d August the British began disembarking troops at Gravesend and occupied Flatbush. Immediately the intelligence was received by Washington, he sent six regiments comprising about 1800 men to reinforce Sullivan, and as it happened it was a part of this force which on the day of the battle held the left of the line, and which was outflanked by General Cornwallis. An immediate attack was expected. General Sullivan issued the following order 23d August:

The men not to turn out to their alarm posts this afternoon, but to get two days provisions ready, and to be at their alarm posts to-morrow morning by 3 o'clock in order for action.

Col^s Miles and Ransom's reg^{ts} to take possession of the Bedford Road this night. Col. Ransom's regt. to march at 5 o'clock. Col. Miles' regt. is on the spot. Col^s Little's and Hitchcock's Regts. to possess the Flatbush road and Col^s Johnson's and Martin's to take possession of the road near the river. All these rgts. to be at their posts by 6 o'clock.

All troops within the Department were ordered to wear a green "bough or branch of a tree" in their hats.

The force which was relieved by Little's and Hitchcock's regiments had during the afternoon a smart skirmish with the Hessians who had advanced beyond Flatbush, and drove them back through the town. After this the Americans retreated to the hills.

Washington instructed Putnam to man the interior lines with the militia and least disciplined troops, while the best men were "at all hazards" to prevent the enemy's passing the woods and approaching the works. The dependence placed upon Hitchcock's regiment, notwithstanding the absence of its colonel, is shown by the position assigned to it.

Washington visited the Long Island lines on the evening of the 26th. In company with Putnam and Sullivan he rode down to the outposts near Flatbush and examined the position of the enemy.¹

Between eight and nine o'clock General Sullivan rode out to the Flatbush pass. Here Major Angell was stationed with his battalion. The Hessians had made little attempt to advance and the situation was satisfactory.

In the meantime the British third column had progressed by the Jamaica road to a point which before nine o'clock had brought them unobserved to Bedford, well in the rear of the American left. They had been successful in surprising and capturing the only patrol which had been sent out on that road, a party of five inexperienced officers, and with the aid of a local guide had had no difficulty in making excellent time. Colonel Miles, whose duty it was to cover the American left, did not discover this flanking movement until the British advance had passed Bedford and was actually between him and the Brooklyn lines. After slight encounters in the woods Miles, with part of his men, surrendered, the others made their way through the woods and got back to the American lines, as did the troops stationed at the Bedford pass. The firing to their left and back was the first intimation to the troops at Flatbush pass that the enemy were in their rear. Sullivan was at this point. To abandon this position meant to sacrifice Stirling, to hold it until Stirling had made good his withdrawal meant the sacrifice of the force there. The pickets with supports were left to hold the Hessians while Sullivan turned to attack the British advance in his rear. Most of the American commands succeeded in making their way through the enemy, with small losses, and regaining the Brooklyn lines. Sullivan, however, was cut off, and after some time gave himself up. While this retreat was taking place the Hessians made their advance on the abandoned posts, and found but little resistance, which they overcame with the bayonet, and here occurred several instances of killing men who had surrendered, which gave rise to the stories of a general massacre. Hitchcock's regiment

¹ See footnote, p. 153, Johnston, *Campaign of 1776*. Johnston's account of the battle is followed in attempting in these pages to show the part taken by Major Angell's battalion of Hitchcock's regiment.

left a company to support the pickets. Their loss was trifling, although this regiment sustained their full share of the attack.¹ They came away in good order. On the day of the battle Colonel Hitchcock was not in command of his regiment. He had several days before sustained a fall from his horse, which prevented his performing any active duty for some time. In consequence his regiment was commanded by the lieutenant-colonel, the only other field officer being Major Angell. This was the first time the regiment had actually been engaged, although during the siege of Boston it had been under the fire of heavy guns. The officers and men behaved with the steadiness of veteran troops.²

Major Angell expected that Hitchcock's regiment would be called upon to repel desperate assaults on Fort Putnam, for it was not anticipated that Washington would abandon the Brooklyn defenses without a struggle, nor does it seem that such was his intention. Circumstances which rapidly developed brought about the decision to move the entire American force from the Island. Each regiment was ordered to be drawn up on the evening of 29th August, and wait orders. Boats were provided, and the embarkation of the troops began. Washington, in person, superintended the embarkation, and did not leave until the last detachment was ready to cross. By seven o'clock the American troops were all safely on the New York side.

Although the retreat from Long Island had been successfully accomplished, the position of the army was a precarious one. Energetic measures on the part of the enemy might enable them to effect a landing in Westchester County, and to command the roads passing north from the city. Washington entertained the hope he could delay the occupation of the city for a time. General Putnam commanded the defences of the city, and General Heath the troops to protect Westchester County.

¹ The killed and missing in the 11th (Hitchcock's) regiment were in the companies commanded by Captains Kimball (one missing), Symonds (1 killed, 2 missing), C. Olney (4 missing, one of whom was London Citizen, a negro), and Bowen (1 missing). See *Campaign of 1776*, p. 180, *Documents*.

² With characteristic modesty Israel Angell in his Pension declaration of 1818, stating his services, simply alludes to his being present at "Red Bank, Mudfort, Princeton, etc." Long Island, Harlem, Rhode Island, Springfield, were apparently "mere incidents."

Nixon's brigade at once marched to Harlem Heights, where it was intended to make a stand, and with the rest of Greene's old division took position on the high land on the northerly side of the Hollow Way, extending from the Point of Rocks to the River. Thus they were not participants in the unreasonable panic which overtook the militia stationed at the point where on the 15th September the British made their landing. Fortunately for the Americans stationed in the lower part of the island, General Howe, perhaps expecting a more determined resistance, appears to have been diverted from the business directly in hand, that of occupying all roads leading from the island, after effecting his landing. Moreover, he paused to partake of refreshments at Mrs. Robert Murray's, who did all she could to delay his departure.¹ While Howe and his staff were dallying at Mrs. Murray's, the American troops who formed the garrison of the city, by following the Bloomingdale Road, were enabled to gain the protection of the partially prepared lines at Harlem. Here the two Rhode Island regiments were encamped, somewhat in advance of the entrenchments, and on the extreme right near the river, northwest of the Point of Rocks. The following morning, Washington, who had ridden down to the Point of Rocks, conceived the plan of cutting off the enemy with Knowlton's Rangers reënforced by three companies of riflemen from Weedon's Third Virginia regiment, in the meantime holding their attention by a feint attack in the front. A small party of volunteers from Nixon's brigade, commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Crary of Varnum's regiment, advanced to attack, but soon fell back slowly drawing the British after them, while the flanking party attempted to get in the rear of the enemy, but attacked too early, preventing Knowlton's carrying out the original plan. Reinforcements were sent the enemy, and Washington in turn ordered forward detachments from Nixon's brigade, as well as other troops. The enemy were driven back about a mile to their original post at Bloomingdale, where they were strongly reënforced. The main action took place on and northwest of the grounds of Columbia University and Barnard College. Each side had somewhat less than two thousand men engaged.

¹ Regarding this tradition, however, compare Johnston's *Battle of Harlem Heights*, page 39.

Washington, not desiring to bring on a general engagement, withdrew to his former position. This spirited action, which in its various phases lasted more than two hours, although it resulted in the death of the gallant Knowlton, and equally brave Major Leitch of the Virginians, did much to restore the morale of the American army, suffering from the events of the day before.

The losses in killed and wounded on both sides, for the numbers engaged, were heavier than in the battle of Long Island. The loss fell heaviest on the Massachusetts and Rhode Island regiments. Hitchcock's and Varnum's regiments each lost four killed, among them Lieutenant Noel Allen of Varnum's regiment. The total loss of the brigade was about seventy-five, fully ten per cent. of those engaged.

It so happened that neither Colonel Varnum nor Colonel Hitchcock were present. General Greene was sufficiently recovered from his illness to be present during the battle, and took a part. He was thus a witness of the good behavior of the regiments of his old brigade.

From his letters we know that Crary and Cornell commanded the 9th and 11th Regiments respectively, and although Greene takes pains to mention that both behaved well on the 16th, neither were recommended for reappointment. Colonel Varnum had already determined to resign his commission. Lieutenant Colonel Cornell was soon detailed to other duties, which took him entirely away from the regiment, of which hereafter, from various circumstances, Angell usually was actually in command.

The day after the Harlem fight, General Greene was ordered to take command in the Jerseys,¹ with headquarters at Fort Constitution, on the Palisades, designed, with Fort Washington on the opposite shore, to command the passage of the river and

¹ G. O. 19th September, General Nixon's brigade was ordered to move to New Jersey and join General Greene. The following day Greene was ordered to appoint careful officers at Burdett's ferry to examine passengers. A return of the brigade as of 20th September, gives a total of 1040 present fit for duty, in addition to officers, of whom 184 were of the 9th and 152 of the 11th Regiments. Colonel Hitchcock had returned to duty, but both the other field officers were absent, probably on detached duty, as 73 men of the 11th were "on command" and 68 of the 9th. One hundred and forty men were sick in the 11th and 137 in the 9th, showing how the ravages of the fever to which they had been exposed on Long Island had affected both regiments. The

secure the ferries. Nixon's was one of the three brigades which formed his command. It was from Fort Constitution that Greene wrote on the 3d October:

We want nothing but good officers to constitute as good an army as ever marched into the field. Our men are infinitely better than the officers. I do not speak of Rhode Island officers, for they are generally good, and behaved exceeding well in the late action. They did themselves a great deal of honor. I shall send a list to the Governor of such as deserve a preference.

On the 11th he wrote to Governor Cooke:

His excellency, General Washington will transmit you a list of officers, to constitute the two new regiments to be raised by your state. The most of those officers are gentlemen whose conduct has been approved by those under whom they have served. The success of the Cause . . . altogether depends upon the establishing a good core, or corps, of officers . . . In the last action, every regiment behaved with a becoming spirit, especially Colonel Hitchcock's and Colonel Varnum's . . . Colonel Varnum, from the treatment he has met with from Congress, has taken the resolution of leaving the army. . . . Perhaps the House may think proper to re-elect him, and give him the opportunity to refuse the appointment, as a compliment due to his party services.

The list above referred to was duly forwarded with Washington's recommendation that Israel Angell be appointed lieutenant colonel.¹

At the October session of the Rhode Island General Assembly,

9th reported two, and the 11th three, as having been lost by death since the last return. On the 5th October there is a return for the 9th Regiment, dated at Fort Constitution.

¹ Washington sent to Governor Cooke on the 12th October the names of the officers he recommended for retention and promotion. "Presuming that your state are about to make an arrangement of officers for the quota of troops which they are to furnish, and that they may wish to know those belonging to them who have served with reputation and bravery, I have thought it expedient to obtain a return by such means as seemed most likely to be well founded. To this end I have made enquiry, and the enclosed list . . . comprehends the names of those who, in public estimation, and that of the generals under whom they have more particularly acted, have behaved themselves well and to good acceptance."

it was voted to raise immediately two regiments,¹ agreeably to the requisition of the Continental Congress, and officers were chosen for the two "battalions." Colonel Varnum's "party services" were duly recognized, as he was chosen to command the First Battalion, having as his field officers Adam Comstock as lieutenant colonel, and Henry Sherburne as major. Colonel Hitchcock was chosen to command the Second Battalion, Israel Angell as lieutenant colonel, and Christopher Smith, major.

During January, 1777, both Washington and Greene begged the State to complete their two Continental line regiments before enlisting men for the State brigade, which had been placed under command of Varnum, now a brigadier general of Rhode Island State troops. In February, Angell was specifically appointed as colonel and commander of the "second battalion,"² and Samuel Ward, major of the first, the positions of the other field officers being left vacant. Nor was Christopher Greene formally appointed colonel until May. His commission, however, was dated back thirteen days prior to Colonel Angell's.

Many stirring events happened before the General Assembly acted upon the recommendations, in October, of Washington and Greene concerning the officers of the Rhode Island troops, and these events served to confirm those generals in their estimate of the soldierly qualities of Major Angell.

Major Angell was at Fort Constitution or vicinity the last of September, and on the last day Lieutenant Colonel Cornell was appointed by General Greene, Deputy Assistant Adjutant General of the Division. The duties of this office relieved him from duty with his own regiment, leaving Major Angell the only field officer other than the colonel. The regiment was principally employed in guard duty at the ferries, and in repairing and strengthening the works, as well as building huts. On Oct. 13th,

¹ Lippitt's regiment, of the Rhode Island State forces, marched to reinforce Washington 15th September, Stiles's *Journal*.

² The 2nd Regiment or Battalion retained its organization throughout its history, promotions being made largely from its own personnel, whereas the so-called 1st Regiment entirely lost its distinctive features. In 1778, its entire officer personnel was sent to Rhode Island to recruit, and its rank and file were transferred to Angell's Regiment. The recruits obtained in 1778 were colored, and formed but four small companies.

in anticipation of an attack by the enemy on the American posts east of the Hudson, Nixon's and Roberdeau's brigades were ordered to draw and cook three days' provisions; and on the same day General Nixon ordered his brigade to be ready to march that night to King's Bridge to cross the river, and thence to Fort Washington, where they were to await further orders.

Until Lee assumed his command, General Heath retained command of the troops in Westchester County, and on the arrival of Nixon with his brigade ordered him to "have the troops which marched this day, take position to the eastward of the bridge by Williams's completely ready to turn out, in case the enemy should make an attack that night," or if the attack was made at Frog's (Throgs Neck) Point to support the forces there. If at or near East Chester to make the best disposition of his force he could. He was to post a guard at Pell's Point. Hitchcock's regiment was stationed in the lines near Hell Gate.¹ On the 16th headquarters of the brigade were at East Chester, and Varnum's regiment was ordered to relieve Nixon's regiment at Throgs Neck, where Howe had landed the greater part of his army on the 12th.

General Lee² had returned from Charleston, S. C., and was given this sector to defend; thus, as at Prospect Hill in the fall of 1775, the Rhode Islanders were again under the immediate command and observation of Lee. His fame and popularity was at its height. Fort Constitution was renamed in his honor. He had left the army before Boston in January, 1776, and now for the first time since was to meet the Rhode Island regiments whose discipline and soldierly appearance had so attracted him during the siege of Boston. The regiments assigned to his command truly consisted of the "flower of the Army," as described by

¹ Statement of Stephen Olney in his MS. *Narrative*. On the 29th of September the regiments of the brigade were mostly at "English neighborhood," and on the 15th of October, Nixon's brigade was taken from Greene, and with McDougall's and Glover's assigned to a division to be commanded by General Lee.

² This was the second time Major Angell had been in a division commanded by Lee. Major Angell could not have been but pleased with the thought that now for a time at least his own merits might become known to one so fully qualified to judge. By the strange vicissitude of fate, two years later this plain country major was to sit in judgment upon General Lee to whom doubtless he owed much of his knowledge of military affairs.

Lieutenant Tilghman in his letter to Honorable William Duer of the 15th of October.¹

With the surrender of Fort Washington on the 16th November ended the disastrous New York campaign of 1776, in which Major Angell had taken part from the beginning to end.

On the 1st November the 11th Regiment, Colonel Hitchcock in command, was stationed at Philipsborough. A return made that day showed that there were fit for duty of the rank and file only 109 men. The total strength of the regiment was 351 rank and file, lacking 289 to bring the regiment to full strength. The return shows that Colonel Hitchcock and Major Angell were present with the regiment.

A return of the 24th showed a slight gain, but the number absent sick was still appalling. Hitchcock's regiment then showed a total strength of 335, of whom 132 were present fit for duty, 90 absent "on command," and 110 sick. Both regiments were commanded by the majors.²

A court martial was held at Philipsborough, 12th November, to try Major Austin, charged with wanton cruelty and barbarous treatment of helpless women and children. Colonel Hitchcock was president and Major Angell was a member of the court.

On the following day, 12th November, Washington wrote to Lee from Peekskill regarding enlistments to begin in the Rhode Island regiments, and added, "Colonel Hitchcock will inform you of the officers recommended to that State by General Greene," and that such as agree to stay were to be commissioned in rank assigned him in that recommendation. We have already seen that Major Angell had been recommended for promotion, and although it probably was not then known in camp, he had been chosen by the General Assembly as lieutenant-colonel at the session commencing 28th October.

After the loss of Fort Washington, Fort Lee was abandoned, and Washington with his ever-dwindling army hastened to a position on the Delaware, falling back through Brunswick, Princeton, and Trenton. He had but 4000 men, and ordered Lee, who had been left to guard the approaches to the Highlands, most urgently to join him. Lee delayed his march until

¹ See Johnston, *Campaign of 1776*, p. 270.

² Force, *Archives*.

the 2d December. He crossed the river at Haverstraw with 3000 men. About 500 men were dropped on account of sickness before reaching Baskingridge. Gates followed with 1700, and about 2000 Jersey militia joined the army. This was the statement made by Lee's aide, William Bradford, to Reverend Ezra Stiles, 13th January, 1777. Lee proceeded by slow stages, and reached Baskingridge on the 12th December. There, twenty-two miles from the advance guards of the enemy, on the 13th, he was surprised and captured, by a party of fifty light horse. Lee's quarters were about two miles in the rear of the main body. Bradford escaped and overtook Sullivan with the news of Lee's capture, about noon, eight miles distant.

From General Sullivan's orders on the 11th, we learn that on that day the whole army was ordered to strike tents at half past seven and to march at eight o'clock. Hitchcock, who now commanded the brigade in the absence of General Nixon, had the advance, followed by the brigades of Glover and Sargent. In case of attack Hitchcock's and Glover's brigades were to form the first line, with Hitchcock on the right. This brought Colonel Hitchcock's regiment, now commanded by Angell, in the van. After Lee's capture, Sullivan, being in command, hastened the march, endeavoring to comply with Washington's orders. The division crossed the Delaware from Phillipsburg, New Jersey, to Easton, Pennsylvania, and joined Washington the 20th December.¹

The Rhode Island troops were attached (22d December) to Cadwalader's division, stationed at Bristol. Washington's headquarters were at Newtown. Washington informed Cadwalader of his intention to surprise the Hessians at Trenton, and ordered him to cross the Delaware at Dunk's Ferry, and if he could "do nothing real, at least create as great a diversion as possible," while Washington crossed nine miles farther up. The attack was scheduled to begin one hour before daylight on

¹A return of the army of the 22d December gives Colonel Hitchcock in command of a brigade composed of the remnants of the regiments known as Nixon's, Varnum's, Hitchcock's, Little's, and Lippitt's, having a total strength of 822 officers and men, of whom but 680 rank and file were fit for duty. Hitchcock's own regiment had but 114 men fit for duty. Officially it still lacked a lieutenant-colonel, but Major Angell was acting as such, commanding the regiment.

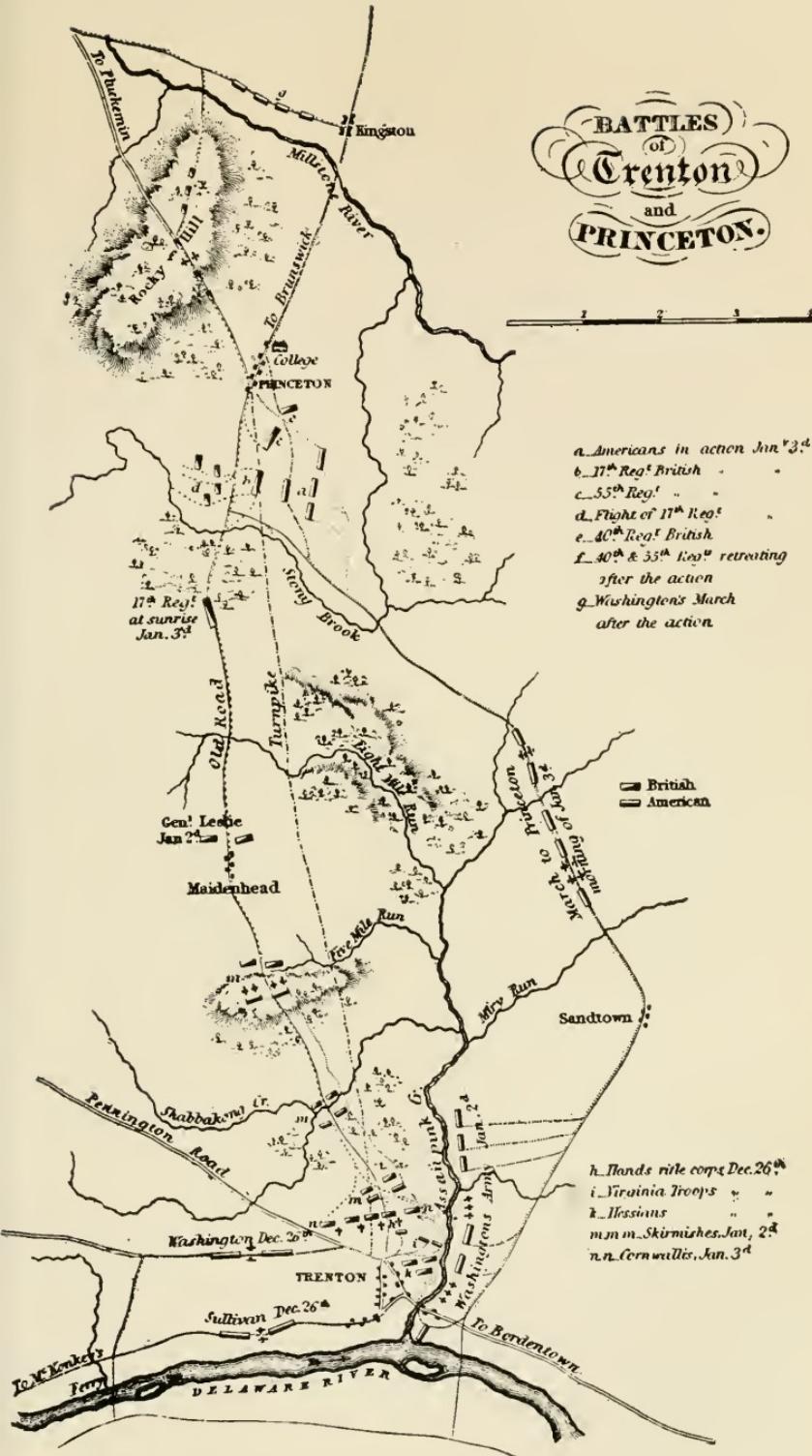
the 26th. On reaching the river at Dunk's Ferry, which had been chosen rather than the crossing at Burlington, a small party crossed to the Jersey side, and there found that the ice had caked along the shore to a distance which made it impracticable to cross with artillery. During the whole time the storm of wind, hail, snow, and rain was severe. The firing at Trenton was distinctly heard at Burlington and Bristol, and the following day Cadwalader, learning of Washington's success, determined to cross the river, expecting to find Washington at Trenton, not knowing that he had retired immediately after his success. Colonel Hitchcock, on being asked if his troops would willingly (their terms of enlistment soon expired) make the crossing, was obliged to tell Cadwalader that unless they were supplied with shoes, stockings, and breeches, they would not march.¹ Cadwalader procured seven hundred pair of each of the articles named from the Pennsylvania Council of Safety. Delivery was made at sunrise 27th December, and that morning the entire division crossed the river at Bristol. After crossing it was learned that Washington had abandoned Trenton and returned to Newtown. Hitchcock now advised that the troops should recross the river, because if they should be attacked, having no support, and the river being still very difficult to cross, the consequences might be fatal. It was determined, however, to march to Burlington, and thence if the intelligence warranted to proceed to Bordentown and Mt. Holly. It was found that Count Dunop, who commanded the Hessians at Bordentown, on the arrival of the fugitives from Trenton had immediately marched to Crosswicks, whence he proceeded to Princeton. On receipt of this news Colonel Cadwalader wrote to General Washington, late on the night of the 27th, that though not quite conformable with the latter's orders, he should at once proceed, and if Washington thought proper to cross again "a pursuit would keep up the panic."

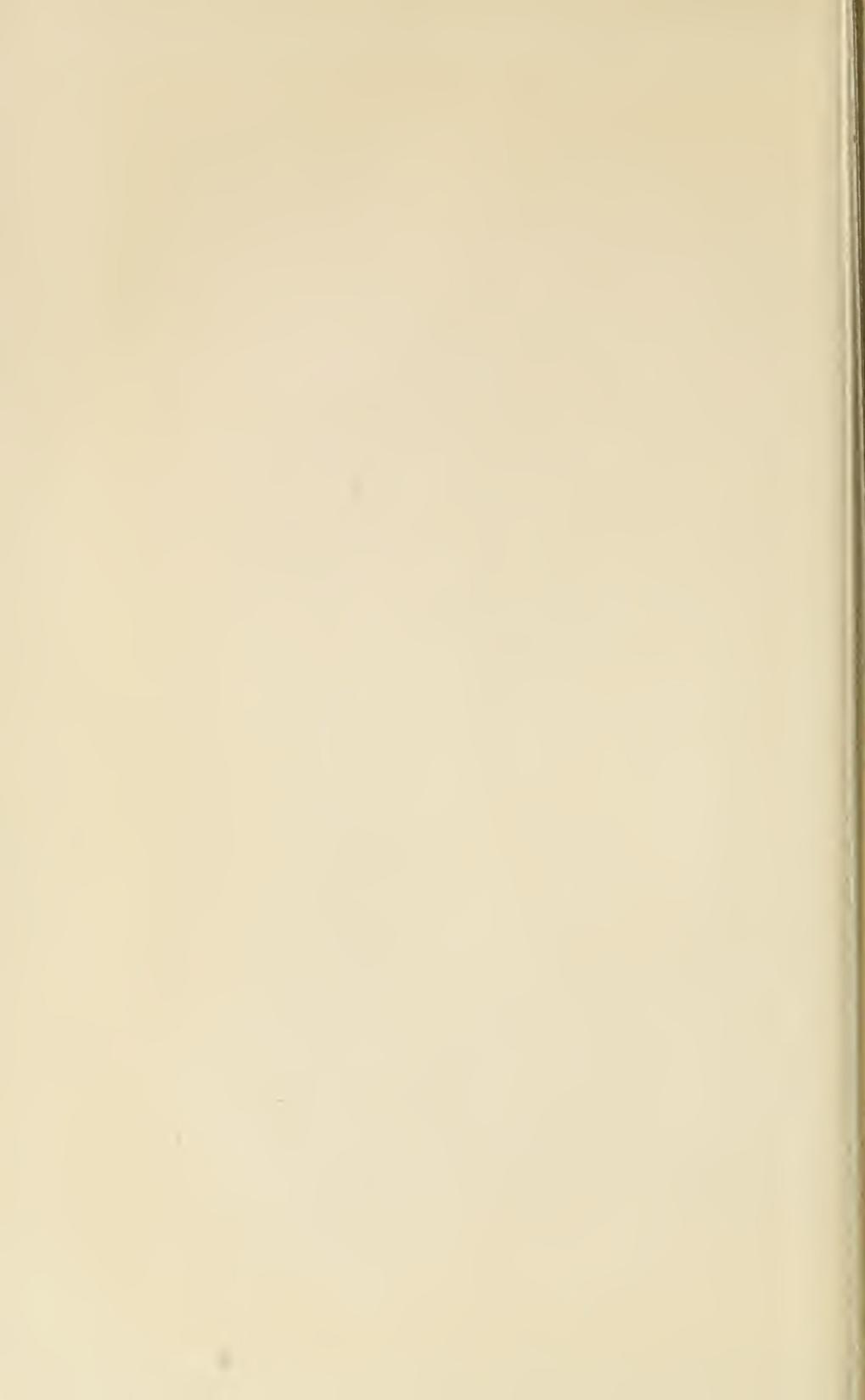
Hitchcock's brigade was at Crosswicks on the 31st December, and its time of enlistment expired the following day. General Mifflin appealed to the patriotism of the men, and at the same time they were informed that money had been provided to pay those

¹ On 23d December, Washington wrote that the Rhode Island regiments were "much in want of everything."

BATTLES
of
Trenton
and
PRINCETON.

1 2 3 Miles





who remained a bounty of \$10, and made other promises which appealed to the half clad, miserably equipped men, standing on snow covered ground, who knew how well the enemy were equipped. Howland reports that all agreed to remain the month, signifying assent by poising their firelocks. "Two hours after this we were on our way to Trenton." The march consumed the whole night, as the roads were in poor condition, and accidents happened to the artillery, to say nothing of the condition of the men themselves.

Howland¹ explains what happened between the alarm caused by the approach of the enemy, and the retreat of the American outposts which had been placed to delay the entrance of the enemy into the town, not with the purpose of bringing on a general engagement. Howland stated that a company of artillery and picket guard were placed on the road leading from Princeton, and that Hitchcock's brigade was ordered from its position on the south side of the bridge, where the army about four thousand strong was drawn up, to march through the main street of the town and cover the retreat of the artillery and pickets into and through the north end of the town. Hitchcock's brigade, having allowed them to pass through their ranks, now began falling back pressed closely by the enemy, who were in a solid column, as the street was quite narrow. Other parties of the enemy followed a parallel road nearer the river, and attacked from between the houses. This was toward the close of the short day. When the advance of the retreating force had nearly reached the bridge a vain attempt was made to cut it off, but the enemy was unable to stand the artillery fire directed upon them by a battery posted at the southern approach to the bridge.

The bridge was narrow and crowded,² and as Howland passed

¹ Letter from John Howland, Esq., relative to the Rhode Island regiment commanded by Colonel Christopher Lippitt in the years 1776 and 1777. Providence, 1831.

² Olney frankly states that they crossed the bridge in great disorder, caused he says by the fact that the first platoon wheeled, some others "turned about as they had been taught on parade," causing confusion at the bridge head. The advance of the enemy reached the north bank of Shabbocunk Creek, three miles north of the town, about noon. Having driven in the outposts they continued the advance until checked by several battalions posted on the high ground near the town. This is the "eminence" which Olney de-

he saw Washington there on horseback, his horse pressed against the rail, and heard him direct Hitchcock to take his men to a meadow and form them there on the south side of the creek. This was promptly done. The brigade then advanced to the bank of the creek, whereupon the enemy withdrew to the shelter of houses on the other side. As the creek was not fordable, except in a few places, and the bridge was well protected by the guns planted near it, the day closed without any decisive result.

The day had been mild, but the night came on intensely cold. Fires were purposely permitted, and replenished liberally, and a working party sent out to give the enemy the impression that earthworks were being erected, preparatory to a desperate stand the next day. But in silence, about midnight, Washington led his entire force off the field, and tired and nearly exhausted as they were, hurried them on toward Princeton by a round-about road,¹ south and east of the main road from Princeton down which Howe had marched the preceding day. Even the American sentries did not know of the retirement until the next morning. Howland recalled that on the march, whenever halts were called, men would fall asleep standing, only to be awakened by stumbling when the men in the rear pressed upon them.

At daybreak, the army was close upon Princeton. General Mercer, who commanded a column marching on a road which diverged from the route followed by the larger force, came in contact with a regiment of British troops already on their march to join Howe, the advance of the three regiments who had slept at Princeton that night. Mercer's few hundred men broke when the enemy charged, and Mercer, himself, was mortally wounded.

Colonel Hitchcock worn out with the campaign of the past weeks, although able to command the brigade the 2d of January, had now reached the limit of his endurance. At Princeton Angell led the regiment of which he had had charge since leaving the Hudson. Olney states that Colonel Hitchcock was sick and absent. He further states, "After marching all night we found

scribed and from which Hand's battalion of riflemen had just been driven. It would seem that there had been ample time for the men of Hitchcock's brigade to have had breakfast. Probably the majority sought rest rather than food after the night's march.

¹ The Quaker Road to the east of the Assanpink River.

ourselves in the vicinity of Princeton, and a detachment of British drawn up with field pieces to receive us. . . . Major Israel Angell, the only field officer present, made a short speech to the regiment, encouraging them to act the part of soldiers, worthy of the cause for which we were contending. We marched a short distance with a wood on our right and partly in front, and the first notice I had of the enemy being so near, they to the number of thirty or forty, fired a volley on the front of the column composed of Jersey and Pennsylvania militia, who broke and came running through our ranks. Ordered to join Captain Jeremiah Olney's company, a few did, but the rest made off." When clear of the woods the column "displayed" and marched in line, receiving "a full discharge of musket and grape shot." The colors were borne by Ensign Oliver Jencks of Cumberland. The advance continuing, the enemy fled, and were pursued to Princeton college, where, says Olney, "three hundred submitted as prisoners." From this account it is evident that Hitchcock's brigade was with the main column and immediately behind the Pennsylvania militia who had led the advance from Trenton.

On the 3d March, Stiles entertained two officers of Lippitt's regiment who were present at Princeton, and who gave him the order of battle after the rout of the Pennsylvania militia. According to these eye-witnesses, Angell formed his regiment about two hundred yards distant from the enemy, and advancing at one hundred yards fired two or three volleys, and then charged impetuously. The enemy retreated to their "two field pieces," which were rushed, but recovered at several intervals and delivered their fire. About 200 reached town and surrendered. Lippitt's regiment numbered 128 men, and, notes Stiles, "our five regiments might be 5 or 600." He gives a plan of the "order of battle," representing General Washington on the left of the line, Hitchcock leading, and the regiments in line in the following order, from the right, Nixon's, Varnum's (commanded by Crary), Lippitt's, Hitchcock's (commanded by Major Angell), Little's (commanded by Lieut. Colonel Henshaw). He also notes that the regiments marched platoon front, sixteen platoons, each of eight men.

Howland states, "it was about noon when we left Princeton. We turned off to Somerset Court House," where they arrived at

about 10 or 11 P.M.¹ The prisoners were shut up in the Court House. The troops rested on the frozen ground, there being barely enough houses for the general officers. This was the third night's march in succession, with the days intervening spent under arms or marching all day. The next day the brigade proceeded to Morristown, and after Hitchcock's death the brigade was broken up, the regiments composing it being sent to various stations near the enemy lines.

The news that a British force had occupied Newport reached the Rhode Islanders when they were crossing the Delaware at Easton on the way to join Washington. Many of the men were in consequence desirous of reaching home as soon as possible to participate in the defense of their own State. Notwithstanding that the term for which they had voluntarily agreed to remain was as yet unexpired,¹ many were dismissed, and marched by way of Peekskill for home. At Peekskill, they were met by an agent of the State with a supply of the much needed shoes. New regiments were being formed in Rhode Island, not only to meet the demand of Congress for her quota, but for a shorter term of service, fifteen months instead of three years or for the war. Enlistment in these organizations, which the State patriotically placed at the disposition of Congress, was preferred to enlistment in the Continental line.

This condition did not exist for the officers. They had been appointed for the duration of the war, but had what the enlisted man did not, the opportunity of resigning from the army. Major Angell had been appointed Lieut. Colonel of one of the Rhode Island line regiments, and his new commission dated from the 1st January, 1777. On the 13th of January, Colonel Hitchcock died. He was interred at Morristown with the honors of war, "as the last mark of respect we could show him," writes General Greene. Colonel Angell was now the commanding officer of the regiment, the post he had so satisfactorily filled during the period when Colonel Hitchcock was acting as commander of the brigade. It was probably a foregone conclusion that he

¹ Washington led his army by way of Kingston to Somerset Court House, and there the exhausted men rested. On the 5th January, Washington was at Pluckemin, and thence removed to Morristown, which became winter quarters. The British withdrew to Amboy and Brunswick.

卷之三

Commission as Colonel, Army of the United States
Original in Pension Bureau, Washington

W. W. & Co., -at 3rd and Custer, -one Person's Value. Considerable
of their Factory, considerate to Appropriate to
the public.

Colonel, Army of the U
in Pension Bureau, Washington

and were put up in the Court House. They were frozen ground, there being several officers. This was the third day with the day intervening spent un-
til the 20th. The next day the brigade pro-
ceeded to New York after Hitchcock's death the brigade
composing it being sent to various
points in New Jersey.

A French force had occupied Newport reached
the Delaware where they were crossing the Delaware at
the end of May to join Washington. Many of the men were in
fear of reaching home as soon as possible to
the defense of their own State. Notwithstanding
the hope for which they had voluntarily agreed to remain
in the army, many were dismissed and marched by
Commissioner ^{as Colonel} ^{of the United States} At Peekskill they were met by an
^{Original in Peerson Bureau, Massachusetts} Committee of the other needed shoes.

Long Island, not only to
quarantine, but for a shorter
time than some years or for the
State patriots of Connecticut referred to

Colonel Angell had been
engaged in the service of the United States and was enlisted
in the army. Major
General Greene, one of the Rhode
Island regiments, who died from the
diseases of the camp. On the 20th January, Colonel Hitchcock
had his funeral services with the honors of war,
“the last mark of respect we could show him,” writes General
Greene. Colonel Angell was now the commanding officer of
the regiment, the post he had so satisfactorily filled during
the period when Colonel Hitchcock was acting as commander
of the brigade. It was probably a foregone conclusion that he
would be put in his office by way of Long Island and the Court House,
where he remained until the 20th January. When it was at
Long Island he was made Adjutant, and remained there until the
20th January when he returned to Albany and Brooklyn.

IN CONGRESS.

The DELEGATES of the UNITED STATES of New-Hampshire, Massachusetts-Bay,
Rhode-Island, Connecticut, New-York, New-Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia,
North-Carolina, South-Carolina and Georgia, TO

Colonel Thomas M'Gowen

WE, reposing especial Trust and Confidence in your Patriotism, Valour, Conduct and Fidelity, DO, by these Presents, constitute and appoint you to be *Colonel of our Regiment from the State of Rhode Island to take command the Thirteenth Day of January next*

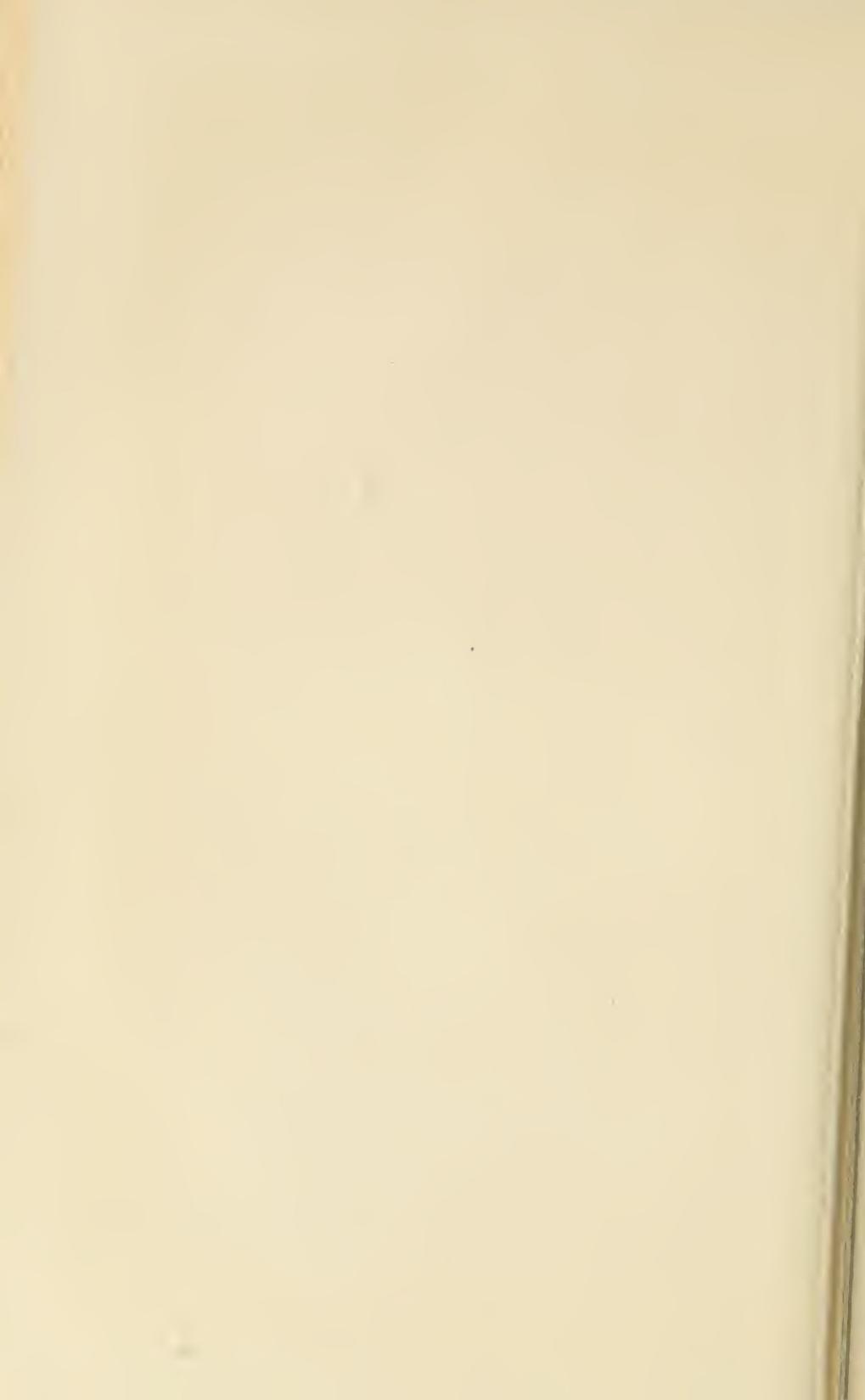
in the Army of the United States, raised for the Defence of American Liberty, and for repelling every hostile Invasion thereof. You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge the Duty of *Colonel* by doing and performing all manner of Things thereto belonging. And we do strictly charge and require all Officers and Soldiers under your Command, to be obedient to Your Orders as ^{to} *Colonel*. And you are to observe and follow such Orders and Directions from Time to Time, as you shall receive from this or a future Congress of the United States, or Committee of Congress, for that Purpose appointed, or Commander in Chief for the Time being of the Army of the United States, or any other your superior Officer, according to the Rules and Discipline of War, in Pursuance of the Trust reposed in you. This Commission to continue in Force until revoked by this or a future Congress. Dated at *Wth of January 1776*.

By Order of the CONGRESS,

PRESIDENT.

John Hancock

F R E S T.



would be promoted, but the appointment did not come until February.

General Greene wrote to Governor Cook on 28 January, 1777, that. "Colonel Hitchcock's death leaves a vacancy in that regiment that will be necessary to fill up. Colonel Angell stands in the line of promotion. Captain Olney will make either a good lieut. colonel or major."

Some time after Colonel Hitchcock's death, how soon cannot be learned from any of the records or letters which have come down to us, Colonel Angell appears to have been given leave of absence. His presence in Rhode Island was sorely needed to hasten the enlistments for the regiment he was to command, and as the entire force of Washington was at this time reduced to but three thousand men fit for service, two thirds of whom were militia under their own officers, not only was recruiting urgently necessary, but officers could be spared for that purpose. A circular letter dated 12th March, 1777, which had been sent to "all the colonels of every State," was enclosed under cover of a letter to General Varnum, addressed to Colonel Angell.

HEAD QUARTERS, MORRISTOWN, March 12th, 1777.

SIR:

You are hereby required immediately to send me an exact return of the state of your regiment, and to march all the recruits you have, after they get over the small pox, to join the army; leaving a sufficient number of proper officers to carry on the recruiting service, who are to follow as fast as they are ready. No pleas, for delay, drawn from the dispersion of the officers and men can be admitted. Every commanding officer should know where his inferior officers and these where their recruits are, and should be able to collect them in the most expeditious manner.

You are to remain behind to complete your regiment, sending forward your Major, and as circumstances shall permit, your Lieutenant Colonel also.

I am Sir

Your most humble servant
GEO. WASHINGTON.

Col^l Angell.

Recruiting of the ten hundred men needed to complete the State's quota for the two Continental regiments had begun prior to Colonel Angell's return to Rhode Island, and in this

duty Simeon Thayer, who had been captured at Quebec, and was home on parole, proved invaluable in procuring recruits.

There is an undated "Return of the Second Battalion in Rhode Island commanded by Colonel Israel Angell," listing the recruits by towns. The total was but 141. The date may be placed early in March.

The Rhode Island Assembly at its April session, proportioned five hundred men to the several towns to be raised before the 10th May, for filling the Continental battalions, under penalty of £10 for each soldier not furnished. As on that date the number of men needed from the various towns had not been supplied, the towns were given until the 15th to complete their quotas. That month Christopher Greene was commissioned colonel of the 1st Continental regiment then being raised, Ebenezer David, chaplain of Angell's regiment, and Elijah Hawkins, Jr., and Nathaniel Phillips were appointed ensigns in the same regiment. Charles Thompson was appointed chaplain of Greene's regiment. Six hundred suits of clothes were ordered made for the Continental recruits. The records contain every evidence that the General Assembly was attempting to do its part in providing the State's quota. Exeter, having refused to supply its quota, General Spencer was authorized to use any troops, including Continentals, to enforce the act of the preceding April requiring each town to provide its quota of men for the Continental army. The various towns were also ordered to provide their proportion of five hundred blankets for the Continental regiments.

Major Simeon Thayer of Angell's regiment was still in Rhode Island in June. In July Colonel Angell was paid £4-6-0 on account of transportation. Captain Thomas Hughes of the regiment, who had been wounded at the battle of Long Island, was left to attend to the forwarding of recruits and of necessary equipment. The recruits forwarded by Colonel Angell to the camp at Morristown formed a considerable detachment.

On the 19th July, Captain Flagg of Angell's regiment was appointed Brigade-major, and the following order published:

Coll. Green's and Coll. Angells Battallions to be immediately divided into two cores—the commanding Officers are required to give each Compy an equal number of Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, and privates. In ye Brigade Coll. Green's

Battallion to take ye right, Coll. Webb's ye Left, Coll. Sherrburn's on ye Right of Centre, Coll. Angel's on the Left of Centre, when ye Brigade is called into a Line either for exercise or Action. The Artillery must be equally divided on the Right & Left Flanks ye Distance of ten Feet to be allowed between each Battalion.

On the 31st July, a detachment from Angell's regiment was ordered to garrison Fort Constitution. Colonel Angell was Officer of the Day, on the 18th and 19th August. During the remainder of the summer the regiment was doing duty at various places in the Highlands.¹

On the 18th September Colonel Angell issued the following regimental order:

As the Regiment was first arranged to consist of eight companies, but being sent forward by detachments, the companies have not yet been formed, the Colonel orders the Captains or commanding officers of the several companies to make a return of the commissioned and non-commissioned officers in their respective companies to be returned to the Colonel by 8 o'clock tomorrow morning, and as it is thought to be more convenient on many accounts to have each company in the regiment of an equal number, or as near as possible, the officers are requested to bring in a return of the men's names that properly belong to the company.

On the 23d September the regiment was ordered south to join Washington, then attempting to avert the loss of Philadelphia.

Unfortunately Captain Allen's orderly book, giving the orders of Colonel Angell, ceases with the entry of September 25, 1777. Samuel Smith in his *Memoirs* states that Angell's regiment, when he joined, was in the Highlands on the east side of the Hudson River and that it marched thence to Red Bank.

Orders had been issued under date of 23d September that

¹ Colonel Angell rejoined the regiment between the 14th and 18th Aug. He was President of a Court Martial held at Peekskill, 2d September, at which several men of Greene's regiment, charged with raising a mutiny, were found guilty only of behaving in a disorderly manner. The sergeants concerned were suspended, the privates reprimanded. He was also on Court Martial duty 5th September.

Varnum should march to reenforce the main army. He was met on his march by an express from Washington, bearing a letter dated 7th October, directing him "immediately upon receipt of this letter (to) detach Colonel Greene's and Colonel Angell's regiments with their baggage, with orders to throw themselves into the fort at Red Bank upon the Jersey shore. . . . General Greene has written a particular letter to Colonel Greene, in which he will find instructions."

General Varnum was given command of the American force designed to protect the Jerseys. Washington wrote him, repeating what had been told Greene, "the post with which you are now intrusted is of the utmost importance to America, and demands every exertion of which you are capable for its security and defence. The whole defence of the Delaware absolutely depends upon it; and consequently all the enemy's hopes of keeping Philadelphia, and finally succeeding in the object of the present campaign."¹

Enclosed with this order to General Varnum, were instructions to Colonel Greene,² informing him that his and Angell's regiments were to proceed to Red Bank, where he was to occupy the fortifications, and to immediately communicate with Colonel Smith, commanding Fort Mifflin, and with Commodore Hazlewood, commanding the fleet in the river. Greene was told he would be in command at Red Bank, and that he would find there a good fortification, the artillery in which would be directed by Captain Duplessis who had been sent with some officers for that purpose.

Colonel Greene reported to Washington that he arrived with his regiment at Red Bank on the 14th, "much fatigued with the march, as I forced 35 miles one day. They are now in high spirits, and go to their duty with the greatest cheerfulness. . . . I have found it necessary to contract the fort; but it is now too large for our numbers, as we have very little to expect from the militia." Two or three days later he was reënforced by Colonel

¹ Greene, *Life of Greene*, 1:485. The regiments commanded by Colonels Greene, Angell, Durkee, and Chandler, were formed into a brigade commanded by General Varnum. G.O. Oct. 16th, in *Weedon's Orderly Book*.

² See Ford: *Writings of Washington*, 6:104. Greene's regiment had evidently preceded the rest of the brigade.

Angell. The following instructions indicate a change from the original orders:¹

Sir:

Head Quarters 16th Oct^r. 1777.

With the regiment you command & with what Baggage you think is absolutely necessary, you are immediately to proceed to Bristol, Cross the Delaware at that place & continue your Route to Red Bank, this March should be performed with the utmost Secrecy & under pretence of Conveying the Stores at Bristoll untill you arrive at that place, as the Enemy might endeavor to Intercept you should your Route be known. Upon your arrival at Red Bank you are to consult with Commodore Hazlewood & Colo^{ls}. Greene and Smith & act in such manner as you think will be most conducive to the Security of the Posts in general without considering yourselves as attached to any particular one. I think it more than probable that the greatest part of your men will be wanted in fort Mifflin, & as you have many seamen you will give the Commodore every Assistance which may be thought prudent & necessary. I have no doubt but you will use your utmost Exertions both in the Expedition of your March, & after your Arrival, for the Tenure & Security of the Posts you go to defend. As an opposition made in that Quarter becoming brave & Determined Officers, will greatly facilitate the Operations of this Army, & distress that of the Enemy to such a degree as must very soon place them in a most hazardous & disagreeable situation.

I am &c

Col. Angell.

[Geo. Washington]

These orders gave Colonel Angell certain discretionary powers, and in fact an independent command. He exercised the discretion given him well. He immediately reënforced the garrison of Red Bank, and joined in the heroic defence of that post. The night of the attack of the British ships upon Fort Mifflin, Colonel Angell sent a detachment from his regiment to Mud Island, to repair the breaches in the walls and erect a palisade.

Fort Mercer, says Stephen Olney in his *Narrative*, was con-

¹ Varnum was not at Red Bank until about the 1st November. Washington addressed him on that date, "I hope this will find you arrived safe at Red Bank with your detachment." From this time until the evacuation of Fort Mifflin, he was at or near Red Bank. The orders to withdraw from that post were given after Generals St. Clair, Knox, and DeKalb, sent by Washington, had counselled with him. As Washington stated, forts Mifflin and Mercer were mutually dependent upon one another.

structed to be defended by not less than 1500 to 2000 men, and the combined strength of Greene's and Angell's regiments was not much more than 500 effectives, including the artillery detachment. To better his chances of successfully defending the fort Colonel Greene caused about two thirds to be cut off by a breastwork, intending to defend the smaller third to the last extremity. The entire force was engaged continually, attempting to complete this interior earthwork before the expected attack of the enemy should materialize. On the 22d October a force of about 1200 Hessians appeared before the fort, whose commander, Count Dunop, demanded its surrender, threatening if obliged to take the works by assault he would give no quarter. Lieut.-Colonel Jeremiah Olney of Angell's regiment met the flag, and having told the British officer that the garrison would defend the fort to the last extremity and neither asked nor expected quarter, had barely time to reach the cover of the walls before the enemy artillery opened fire. The Hessians about quarter of five in the afternoon advanced in two solid columns. Their left came first within range of the American fire, which was well directed and threw them into disorder, but did not stop them. The enemy reached the top of the breastwork, but were then obliged to retreat. In the meantime the second column had overcome the slight resistance offered by the few men posted on the outer walls of the fort, and had broken into the enclosure. Finding it abandoned, they jumped at the conclusion that the fort was theirs. As they pushed forward with "huzzas," at about fifty or sixty paces from the new breastwork they received the fire of the defenders. Although they continued their advance to the breastwork, they at last broke and fled, leaving the ditch filled with dead and wounded. The next day 87 of their dead were buried in the ditch where they fell. The American loss was trifling. Captain Sylvanus Shaw and four or five privates of Angell's regiment were killed, and a number wounded. Dr. Peter Turner, of East Greenwich, who was surgeon at the fort, stated that Colonel Greene sprang upon the rampart, calmly surveyed the enemy through a little pocket spyglass, and told his men as he stepped down, "Fire low, men, they have a broad belt above their hips, aim at that." More than 400 of the enemy were killed and wounded.

"I heartily congratulate you upon this happy event," wrote Washington to Colonel Greene, "and beg you will accept my most particular thanks, and present the same to your whole garrison, both officers and men. Assure them that their gallantry and good behaviour meet my warmest appreciation."

Fort Mercer and Fort Mifflin were erected, and obstructions placed in the river, in the hope that with the aid of the American flotilla of gun boats, the British fleet would be prevented from ascending the river to Philadelphia. If Howe could not open communication from Philadelphia by water, his occupation of that city was futile; and if the opening of the river could be prevented until freezing weather set in, it was the hope and expectation of Washington that Howe would be obliged to evacuate the place.

On the 10th November batteries constructed by the British on the Pennsylvania shore opened fire on Fort Mifflin, and Colonel Samuel Smith of Maryland, then in command, was wounded. His place was taken by Lieut.-Colonel Russell of Connecticut, who in turn was relieved by Major Simeon Thayer of Angell's regiment. Major Silas Talbot was with him, and was wounded. The defence was continued until the fort was in ruins. Colonel Angell's own description of the defence of Fort Mifflin was written to secure to Major Thayer the credit due him.

Camp Valley Forge, Feby 17th 1778

Sir

As the loss of fort Mifflin on the Delaware was an Event, which, by producing Consequences of great Importance, threw a new Appearance on the face of affairs of both the Contending powers, the Circumstances that led to, and Attended, the Incident, together with the persons Conducting it, Ought to be Impartially pointed out that a proper judgment may be formed of the measure, and the praise or blame fall where it is due. I have been lately on a tour through the State of new Jersey, and the upper part of the State of Pensylvena, on publick business, and finding that the Country in General had imbibed notions Relative to that affair, differing much from the truth, for which Reasons I have been induced with most freedom to State the matter right, in view of my Country Men, Humbly trusting that they will Excuse the liberties I take in addressing them.

The Garrison Consisted Originally of a Detachment from the Virginia Troops commanded by Lt. Col. Smith, who is still Generally supposed to have Continued in the Command till the

Evacuation. The fort is built on the lower End of Mud Island, and was designed Only to Command the Channel of the river; for this reason those parts alone that were Exposed to the fire of the shipping were Regularly fortified, the remainder had Only a row of Pallisades, & lay Intirely open to the opposite shore, which forms a kind of half-moon round it for a Considerable Extent. On this shore the Enemy had Erected several Batteries Early in the fall, and kept up a Scattering Cannonade for several weeks before the memorable defeat of the Hessians at fort Mercer on the other Shore. After this, the firing was discontinued till the 10th of November, when they Opened a new Battery within point blank shot of the fort, and began a very sevier Cannonade, the 11th, in the afternoon, Col^o Smith received a wound in the arm, and left the fort. Lieut. Col^o Russell, of Gen. Varnum's brigade, succeeded him in the Command. On the 13th, by the particular Request of Gen. Varnum, unexpected as his desire was, to major Thayer; Major Thayer went over, and relieved Col^o Russell, and the Remainder of Col^o Smith's men; part having been relieved before, with a Detachment from Col^o Durkee & Col^o Chandler's Regiments, of Gen^l Varnum's brigade. The Garrison then consisted of 286 Rank & file, and Capt. Lee's Company of artillery, of about 20 men. On the 14th, in the morning, a floating battery came down upon the fort, and was silenced from our works in about Two hours. The Cannonade¹ [continued the whole day and night. On the 15th, in the morning, the enemy opened a new battery on Province Island, directly opposite to the fort, and within a very small distance. This made five batteries playing into the fort, with eighteen pieces of cannon, two mortars, and ten howitzers.

It may be proper to observe here that there was no place of safety in any part of the fort. Such was the situation of the batteries, that they kept up a cross fire in almost every direction. The only covering the troops had was without the fort, under the wall, and this afforded a shelter from nothing but the enormous balls. At 8 o'clock this morning, (15th,) seven large ships drew up to the *chevaux de frise*, and began a brisk fire on the fort, and on a small battery Gen. Varnum had erected down the river against the ships. The enemy's ships annoyed our troops on Mud Island exceedingly, for against them they had not the least shadow of defence. At 11 o'clock, a large ship, mounting twenty twenty-four pounders, and a sloop with three twenty-four pounders, which she brought to bear on the fort by her being ballasted on the opposite side with stone, warped up back of Hog Island, and came up so near the fort that they threw hand

¹ The portion within brackets being lost in the original as entered in the letter book, is copied from the printed version, which differs in a few slight unessentials from the original.

grenades from their round tops directly into the works; they had also forty rifle-men in their tops. At first the garrison had two pieces of cannon, which played upon them with good success, but they were soon dismounted, as the rest had been before. At a quarter before 3 P. M., General Varnum sent a line to Major Thayer, informing him that the floating batteries and some of the galleys were working up to attack the ship and sloop that lay under the fort, and desired him to take what advantage he could of this circumstances. They accordingly went part of the way over, but returned without doing any thing. In the evening, Gen. Varnum sent over a number of boats, with discretionary orders to hold or evacuate the fort as he (Major Thayer) should judge most prudent, but in case he left, to destroy what he could not bring off. Our cannon were now all dismounted, block-houses destroyed, barracks shattered to pieces, and palisades beat down. The garrison was exposed to the whole fire of the enemy, without the power to make the most feeble defence, or give in return the least annoyance. The fire continued from all parts except from the shipping, which had dropped down to the lower *chevaux de frise.*] (—) firing, this being the situation of affairs the major judg'd it impossible to Effect any Valuable purposes by a longer posession of the fort, and seeing the inevitable destruction to which the Troops would be Exposed by further obstinacy, he thought most prudent to Evacuate it. He Accordingly sent off all the Ammunition and stores, and at 7 O'Clock in the Evening he sent over all the Garrison Except 40 men, that ye^e main body might be out of danger; with them he kept Possession of the fort till 12 O'Clock and then finding no favourable Circumstances turn up, he spik'd (all) the Cannon, set fire to the barracks, & passed out with the rest of the men, to fort Mercer, without sustaining any loss in the retreat, tho much exposed.

Thus my Countryman, I have given you such an Account of the Circumstances of the Evacuation as will enable you to form a Tolerable Judgment of the propriety or Imprudence of the measure, and I make no doubt, but the major's Conduct in the affair, will meet with the Approbation of the Judicious & Candid, & I shall Esteem myself happy, in Representing the matter in a trew light to you whatever may be the oppinion of the Ignorant & malicious, [five words lost]. I have the Honour to be, my dear Countrymen, your most obedient, & most humble Servant,

Israel Angell, Col^o

2nd Rhode Island Regt.

Mr. Carter, by giving the Aforegoing lines a place in your paper, will be doing Justice to one of the bravest of Officers,

& much Oblige your

Humble Serv^t,

Israel Angell

To Mr. John Carter
Printer in Providence

The defence of Fort Mifflin and Fort Mercer are counted among the most notable and gallant events of the whole war. General Charles Lee, while still smarting from what he considered, perhaps justly, the unfair treatment he had received at his trial, praised the bravery of the American troops. He "ever had the highest opinion of the courage and other good qualities of the Americans as soldiers," and instanced the "defence of Red Bank, by Colonel Green, and Mud Island, by Colonel Smith," as forcing a "concession, even from the most determined infidels on this point, of the British officers, to the honour of American valour, . . . that no men could have done better; which from unwilling mouths is no small panegyric."¹

Samuel Smith related his experiences, which were those of the rest of Angell's regiment. After the withdrawal from Red Bank he stated that the regiment marched to Valley Forge, the men being nearly destitute of clothing, except for what they had secured from the defeated Hessians. On the march, he says they stopped "some time" in the "mountains" until they could secure provisions. He evidently alludes to the days following Varnum's junction with Washington at Whitemarsh, which was in a hilly country just north of Chestnut Hill, where Howe attempted to bring on an engagement, and where originally it had been proposed to establish winter quarters. Thence they proceeded to the Schuylkill, and that night "laid down on their arms," some on the frozen ground with no covering, others had blankets, but none had other covering or protection. During the night, which was evidently that of the 17th December, nearly six inches of snow fell. Two days, he says, were spent here, indicating this halting place was Gulph Mills, near Matson Ford. On the second day a flock of goats was discovered, driven in, butchered and eaten. On the same day the wagons were unloaded, and utilized to make a bridge, over which the crossing was made. The men suffered severely on the next day's march, and their progress could be traced by blood on the snow. Some of the men who had blankets cut off the corners,

¹ General Lee's *Vindication to the Public in Memoirs*, 1792. General Lee had served in the British army in America, against the French, and after service in Europe, returned to America in 1773. He died 2d October, 1782, at Philadelphia. Like Gates and Conway, he was not American born.

and wound them about their feet. Others used any old rags available. The frozen ground, snow and ice, and wet feet caused intense suffering.

The story of the winter spent at Valley Forge has been told again and again. The sufferings of the army were great, caused chiefly by the negligence and incapacity of the Quartermaster and Commissary Departments. The camp was south of the river, and entrenchments ran from Valley Creek to the Schuylkill. Washington's headquarters were near the junction of Valley Creek and the river, and somewhat east, guarding the bridge which was thrown over the river, called Sullivan's bridge, near which Varnum's brigade, including the Rhode Islanders, was stationed.

On January 1st, Angell's regiment of 275 men, and Greene's of 290, together with Sherburne's and Henley's battalions, formed Varnum's brigade, which with the brigades of Poor and Huntington formed McDougall's Division.

On the 29th of December Colonel Angell was field officer of the day.¹ The week before a serious condition had existed. On learning that a strong party of the enemy were advancing toward Derby, Washington ordered the troops to hold themselves in readiness to march, when he became convinced that "the men were unable to stir on account of provisions, and that a dangerous mutiny begun the night before, and which with difficulty was suppressed by the spirited exertions of some officers, was still to be apprehended for want of this article. This brought forth the only commissary in the purchasing line in this camp; and with him this melancholy and alarming truth, that he had not a single hoof of any kind to slaughter, and not more than twenty-five barrels of flour," nor "he could not tell when to expect any."²

¹ General George Weedon's *Orderly Book*.

² Sparks's *Writings of Washington*, 5:197. Greene wrote that the officers were complaining for lack of "spirits," but "observe, however disagreeable their situation, they would patiently submit to their hard fortune, if the evil in its own nature was incurable, but they think by proper exertions spirits may be procured to alleviate their distress until they had an opportunity to provide for themselves." He then suggests, as Lord Stirling had discovered a store of liquors, sufficient to supply all officers, that it be seized and distributed among the regiments for the officers' use. Waldo notes under date of December 28th, "yesterday upwards of fifty officers in General Greene's division resigned their commissions, six or seven of our regiment are doing

On the 3d January, 1778, General Greene wrote to his brother Jacob: "Each state will be compelled hereafter to furnish clothing for their own troops. . . We have had three thousand soldiers unfit for duty for want of clothing this fall and winter. The Rhode Island troops have done themselves great honor this campaign. . . We are all going into log-huts—a sweet life after a most fatiguing campaign."

Because of General Varnum's suggestion, which had Washington's approval, the attempt to raise a regiment of freedmen was made by Rhode Island. Governor Cooke thought that perhaps 300 slaves, who would be freed, could be enlisted. While in camp in Valley Forge, Colonel Angell, in accordance with this plan, enlisted in his regiment a negro named Tony, and gave to his master the following certificate:

Camp Valley Forge, 30th March 1778

I engage to write as soon as convenient to Colo. Greene now raising a Regt. of negros in the State of Rhode Island, respecting negrow Tone, (the property of Mr. Luke Griffith of the State of Maryland) now serving in my Regt. as a soldier, properly enlisted, and if it is agreeable to his sentiments, to purchase and pay upon demand for sd negro tone whatever sum of money the State of Rhode Island allows for able bodied slaves. And to acquaint Mr. Griffith as soon as possible on receipt of an answer from Col^o Greene, but if the contrary, to deliver up sd negro Tone to his master or order whenever cal'd for, Also in case of any misfortune happening to or befalling sd Negro Tone previous to an answer respecting him, to pay his master or order whatsoever money shall be due him at sd time, and further in the case of the death or desertion of sd Negro after an answer from Colo. Greene intimating a desier to have him in his Regt., to pay Mr. Griffith the price allowed.

Israel Angell.

I hereby certify the above to be a true copy sent to Mr. Luke Griffith concerning his negro Tone. Joseph Burchinal.

the like today. All this is being occasioned by officers' families being so much neglected at home on account of provisions. Their wages will not, by considerable, purchase a few trifling comfortables here in Camp, and maintain their families at home, while such extravagant prices are demanded for the common necessities of life. What then have they to purchase clothes and other necessities with. The present circumstances of the soldier is better by far than the officer, for the family of the soldier is provided for at the public expense, if the articles they want are above the common price." Waldo was in Prentice's regiment, Huntington's brigade.

Pay-rolls of Colonel Angell's regiments for the months of February, March, and April, 1778, while at Valley Forge, are in *Massachusetts Archives*, vol. 47: 277,279. The return for the month of April shows that Olney was in command of the regiment on the date it was made up. A letter from Colonel Angell shows he was at the camp on March 30th, and a return dated May 4th, reports him as absent on furlough. The same notation occurs on the return of 2d June, and that for June, dated 13 July, shows he was absent "on Court Martial."¹

There is extant in Colonel Angell's copy-book, which he began at Valley Forge, a copy of the third letter he wrote, and probably dated in early February. This letter was addressed to one of the officers named in General Varnum's letter of January 2d. Colonel Angell alludes to the severe season of the year, and referring to his men, wrote:

Any thing more then to See them all Swept away by Sickness that does not Desert. When we consider the fatigue that they have gone through. And now at this Sevear Season of the year, are, the greatest part of them almost Stark naked, and Destitute of Every necessary of life. Except fresh Beef and flower, which they draw, if Vegetables was to be had, they have nothing to purchase them with, nor I see no prospect of their having anything Soon. The Paymasters Sets off for Lancaster tomorrow To See if they can finde the Paymaster General, but whether when they have found him, by the best information — can get there will be no money for them. Three of our men have deserted to the Enemy since you left us, that . . . Viz. Enoch Young is one of them, Matthew Bar and Alexandria Burt is the others; Bar was as good a Soldier as we had in the Regt and I believe would never deserted had he been Paid his money, and had his Cloaths According to Agreement. Deserction is what we may ever expect so long as the Soldiers see that the Publick faith is not to be depended upon. I desire you would write to me by the first opportunity, and let me know whether the black Regt. is like to be raised or not. I have been informed that the State is about to raise a Number of troops for one year but if the black Regiment is dropt I should think that the best Plan [. . .] for both the State and Continent would [. . .] Governor and Council to [?petition his] Excellence, that the two Rhode-Island Regiments might return to

¹ Regimental Pay Abstracts in Congressional Library, abstracts in Rhode Island State Library.

the State, & drop the raising of the twelve months men, by which means I think it likely that the two Continental Reg'ts might be safely filled, and as it is less trouble to Command troops Abroad than it is at home, they might be marched to any Part of the Continent and that Number of Continental Troops from Another State Replace them, as I think the troops now about to be Raised in the State is more than their Proportion Or more than the State is Able to furnish with Cloaths and other Necessaries.

General Greene was also trying to prevail upon Washington to permit the Rhode Island troops to return home. He found Washington opposed to his succeeding Spencer in command at Rhode Island, and in a letter of 5th February freely criticizes the holding of troops at Albany who would be of service in Rhode Island. He hoped the Rhode Island regiments might recruit with the understanding that they were to remain in Rhode Island until the British abandoned their posts there.¹

General Greene had charge of the detachments which were sent out through the surrounding country, and on some occasions accompanied them. It was distasteful duty to all engaged, but it was necessary to requisition forage, provisions and horses wherever found. The inhabitants, many of whom in that vicinity were anything but warm supporters of the American cause, much preferred British gold to depreciated Continental currency, and concealed whatever they might have on their farms which the army needed. But the measures taken, required by the inefficiency of Congress and its appointees, saved the situation for the army, which was now smaller than ever.

The business upon which Colonel Angell was engaged in

¹ The British occupied Newport 6th December, 1776, and soon took over the whole island. They raided Bristol and other points. Rhode Island raised a brigade of three regiments, with nominal strength of 750 men each, and called upon the militia to guard her shores. Help was summoned from the other New England states. In November, 1777, troops were collected, almost entirely militia, strengthened by some units of state troops, and General Spencer, who was in command, hoped to drive the enemy from Rhode Island. The lack of boats, and other circumstances, caused the expedition to be given up, and the militia returned to their homes disgusted. On 5th November, 1777, Washington wrote to Heath: "The expedition to Rhode Island is just as much a secret to me as it is to you. I never was consulted upon it, neither do I know from whence or whom it originated." *Heath Papers*, 1:78.

February was undoubtedly that of leading a foraging party, as well as intercepting supplies for the enemy.

HeadQuarters Valley Forge 1st Feby 1778

Sir:

I am favoured with yours of yesterday. As it is my wish to cut off the intercourse with Phila as effectually as possible, I desire that no passes may be granted by you to any persons upon any pretense whatsoever; and that you will do all in your power to apprehend those who attempt to go into the City with merketting. There is no way so likely to put a total stop to this practice as making an Example of some notorious offender. If therefor you can hear of any person who has made a practice of going to Philadelphia with provisions or horses I would wish you to take pains to have him apprehended.

I am Sir

Your Most Obed. Serv.

Geo Washington

Col^o Angell.

This duty necessitated Colonel Angell visiting parts of New Jersey and upper Pennsylvania, and on his return, learning of the failure of Major Thayer to receive recognition due him for his gallant defence of Fort Mifflin, and of another's having had the honor ascribed to him, he wrote the letter already referred to, describing Major Thayer's part in holding the fort against such heavy odds. This letter was dated the 17th February.

The high opinion held by those best acquainted with the circumstances, concerning the New England line regiments, is expressed in a letter from General Sullivan to Meshech Weare, 13th February, 1777:

General Washington made no scruple to say, publicly, that the remnant of the Eastern regiments were the strength of his army.

. . . At Princeton, when the Seventeenth regiment had thrown thirty-five hundred Southern militia into the utmost confusion, a regiment of Yankees restored the day. This General Mifflin confessed to me, though the Philadelphia papers tell us a different story.

On another occasion Washington wrote to his stepson, from Morristown, 22d January, 1777, concerning the Eastern troops:

I always have, and always shall say, that I do not believe that any of the states produce better men, or persons capable of making better soldiers, . . . we have found, that wherever a regiment is well officered, their men have behaved well—when otherwise, ill . . . no people fly to arms readier than they do, or come better equipped, or with more regularity into the field than they.

A return of the 2d Rhode Island regiment dated 28th February, 1778, for the month of February, shows the following field and staff:

Israel Angell, colonel,
 Jeremiah Olney, lieutenant-colonel,
 Simeon Thayer, major,
 Thomas Waterman, adjutant,
 Charles Holden, paymaster,
 Samuel Tenney, surgeon,
 John Parish, surgeon's mate,
 Benjamin Peckham, quartermaster,
 Nathan Whittlesey, quartermaster-sergeant,
 William Proctor, sergeant-major,
 Daniel Hudson, fife-major.

No change appears in the abstracts for March and April.²

The abstract for May bears the title of "1st Rhode Island Battalion," and this change from 2d to 1st, was retained for several months. In May the names of the captains appear as follows: William Tews, Coggeshall Olney, David Dexter, Stephen Olney, William Allen, William Potter, Thomas Hughes, William Humphrey. These officers commanded the companies numbered one to eight in the order given. Colonel Angell's signature appears on this abstract as it does on that for June and July.³

Baron Steuben arrived in Camp 27th February. He was amazed at the conditions which he found. Men in rags, half

¹ While Colonel Angell was with his regiment on the Jersey side of the river, a general order of General Washington designated Doctor Samuel Tenney, surgeon of his regiment, to act as Surgeon General of the army until one shall be properly authorized by Doctor Cockran. This was on the 25th November.

² *Mass. Archives, Revolutionary*, 47: 277-82.

³ The same officers, given in February and May, appear on the roll for January, 1778, with the addition of the name of Ebenezer David, chaplain, against whose name is "discharged 20 Jan. 1778." He died 19 March, 1778.

naked, starving; officers appearing at "grand parade" in blankets arranged as a kind of dressing gown in lieu of a coat. So little was known of the approved European methods of handling the arms that Steuben, himself, would seize a musket and go through the manual, and took upon himself the duties of a drill sergeant. His ability and enthusiasm soon had effect, and the officers of the army did their best to emulate him.

On the 20th of March, Colonel Angell is mentioned in orders in connection with the court-martial of a lieutenant who refused duty, but during parts of the months of April and May, Colonel Angell was absent on furlough. On the 28th of March he wrote the following urgent letter¹ to the Governor and Council, acknowledging the receipt of eight boxes of clothing, but insufficient to wholly supply the regiment.

Camp Valley Forge, March 28th 1778

Gentleman

Although I had the Satisfaction to receive eight boxes of Clothing, from the state, the 16th Instant, which in some measure Releiv^d the Troops under my Command, from the Great Difficulties and hardships under which they then Labour^d; yet as there was Not a Sufficiency to serve the whole, I am under a Necessity of applying for Further Supplies; there are still many in the Regiment who are unfit for duty, for want of Cloaths; & others [will] soon be in the same Situation, Frequent Applications have been made to the Cloathier General; but the Demands on him are so Great that he is unable to afford us much Assistance, and tho' we have Receiv^d small Quantities of several Articles from him, yet there is no prospect of being able to obtain Enough to Compleat the men. I have Inclos^d a Return of the Cloathing wanted, which I am constrain'd, by the duty I owe those under me, to Request may be forwarded with all possible Dispatch. This, Together with what we have receiv^d, will probably last us till the Fall; by that time I imagine we shall have Occasion for a new suit, which I wish, on account of the Influence it may have on the minds and Behaviour of the Troops, might be uniform in Colour and facings; to be able to make a handsome appearance Naturally inspires men with a laudable Pride and ambition; which will not only induce them to keep themselves Clean and whole, but stimulates them also to behave like men in the field of Battle.

Tho' the Army in General is remarkably Healthy, I am sorry

¹ From the letter-book.

to inform you that a very great sickness and mortality prevail among the Rhode Island Troops, which is judg'd to proceed in some measure from the badness of there Cloaths, I sincerely hope that thro the spirited Exertions of the Gentlemen appointed for cloathing the Troops, there sufferings are approaching to a Speedy End,—Permit me, Gentlemen, thro your means, to inform the friends of the Rev'd Mr David, late Chaplain of my Regiment, that that worthy Divine Departed this life the 19th inst. at Lancaster of a tedious putrid Fever.

I have Nothing further to Communicate at this time, but that I have the Honour to be, with due Respect,

To the Hon^{ble} the Governor
& Council of the State of
Rhode Island.

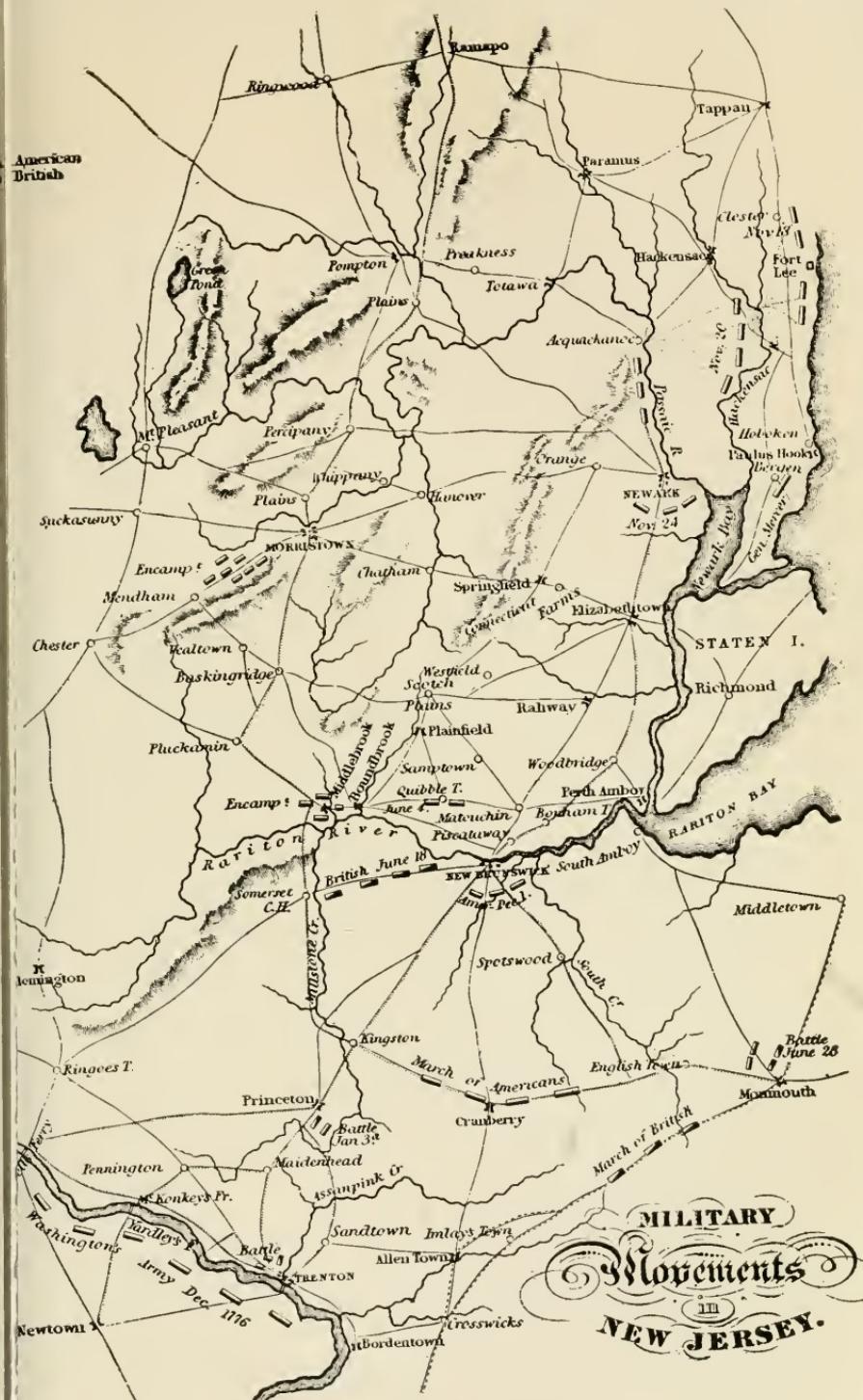
Gentlemen
your most Obedient &
most Humble Servant.
Israel Angell Col^o

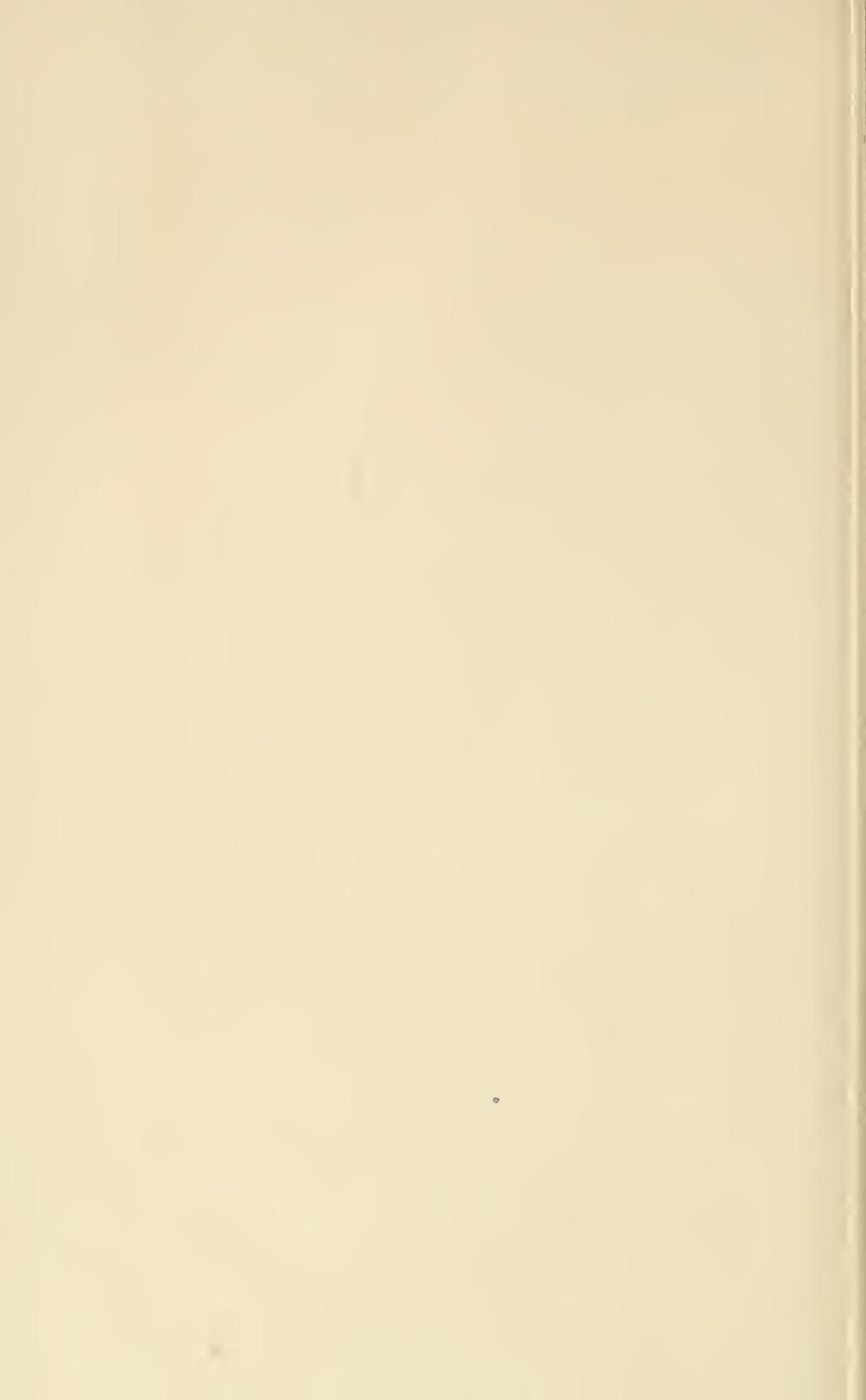
Colonel Angell was in Rhode Island on May 6th when Washington published the announcement of the French Alliance. This was a grand occasion. The various brigades were formed; the chaplains read the Gazette and then offered a prayer of Thanksgiving. A salute of thirteen guns was fired, followed by a "feu de joie" from right to left along the line. At a signal the whole army shouted "Huzza, Long Live the King of France," and upon another signal "Long live the friendly European powers," and finally after another national salute and a running fire of musketry, "Huzza to the American States." Instructions for the day, and all the details thereof, were given in Washington's orders of the 5th of May. On the 7th of May all officers in camp were required to take the oath of allegiance to the United States. During Colonel Angell's absence, John Lewis Drew, one of his regiment, having threatened the lives of several officers of the regiment was sentenced to receive sixty lashes. This was the 30th of May, and on the 5th of June, William Powell, having deserted from Angell's regiment and enlisted in another, was sentenced to receive 300 lashes and return to his former regiment. Washington mercifully reduced the punishment to 100 lashes.

With the coming of warm weather the huts were abandoned, and the troops moved into tents. During May¹ the British made

¹ On 20th May Lafayette who was nearly cut off by the British at Barren Hill, was not sorry he had with him a detachment from Angell's regiment.

American
British





preparations to abandon Philadelphia, and on the 18th June began their march across New Jersey for New York.

On the 23d of May General Lee took over the command of the division lately commanded by General Greene, to which Varnum's brigade was attached,¹ as Greene had accepted the post of Quartermaster General.

Colonel Angell was on his way back to the army when Washington set forth in pursuit of Clinton. The battle of Monmouth (28th June) was fought on one of the hottest days of the year, and in that battle Angell's regiment, commanded by Lieut. Colonel Olney took part.² Lee's conduct on that day was resented by Washington, and his letters to the Commander in Chief, complaining of the latter's treatment to him, caused charges to be presented against him.

After the battle of Monmouth, Clinton drew away, unmolested, toward New York, and Washington into the highlands of New Jersey, and finally to Westchester County, New York.

In the meantime Colonel Angell, who had joined the army, had been detached for duty with the Court Martial to consider the charges against Lee.³ This court consisted of Major General Stirling, Brigadier Generals Smallwood, Poor, Woodford, Huntington, and Colonels Irvine, Shepard, Swift, Wigglesworth, Angell, Clarke, Williams, and Febiger. John Lawrence was Judge Advocate General. As originally drawn the order for the court designated Colonels Grayson and Johnson, who were relieved by Irvine and Shepard, by orders dated the 2d and 3d July. The court was first called for 2d July, but was postponed, and its first meeting was 4th July at New Brunswick. The charges were disobedience of orders in not attacking the enemy, misbehavior before the enemy, unnecessary, disorderly, and shameful retreat, and for disrespect to the Commander in Chief in two letters, dated 28th June and 1st July. On 10th July the court sat at Paramus, on the 17th at Peekskill, and on the 21st

¹ *Orderly Book of General George Weedon at Valley Forge.*

² Varnum's entire brigade on the day of the battle numbered but between 300 and 350 men, and the brigade was commanded by Colonel Durkee. See testimony of Lieut. Colonel Brooks at Lee's trial. Major Thayer and Lieutenant Nathan Weeks, both of Angell's regiment, were wounded.

³ G. O., Spotswood, 1st July, 1778.

at Northcastle, and on that day Lieut.-Colonel Olney gave his testimony, which was favorable to Lee. The last session was held at Northcastle, August 12th, 1778. Immediately upon adjournment of the court, Colonel Angell made preparations to join his regiment, which had already marched to Connecticut.

The finding of the Court Martial was unknown to Greene as late as 28th August. It was not until after he had met Colonel Angell during the Rhode Island Campaign, that he was able to form a definite opinion, and even then neither he nor Angell knew if the verdict of guilty found by the court had been approved by the Commander in Chief.¹

On the 3d July the army was at New Brunswick, N. J., and the General Orders² for the day direct that on the following day the anniversary of the Declaration of Independence would be observed by a salute of 13 guns and a *feu-de-joie* along the whole line. The army to be formed on the Brunswick side of the Raritan at 5 P.M. On the 24th the army reached White Plains. The crossing was at Kings Ferry.

Persifer Frazer, writing from Greenwich, Conn., 23d July, tells his wife that two brigades of New England troops marched from that place on the morning of the 22d for Rhode Island. This march through Connecticut can be followed by references in Stiles's diary and letters of Lafayette. There is also preserved in the Library of Congress, an undated paper entitled, "The Rout of Col. Angel's Regt." The distances and route to be followed are given as follows: Groton to Salem, 14 miles; to Danbury, 10; to Newton, 10; to Woodbury, 10; to Southington, 10; Farmington, 10; to Hartford, 10; a total of 86 miles; to Bolton, 14; to Windham, 17; to Canterbury, 10; to Plainfield, 4; to Voluntown, 4; to Coventry, 7; to Providence, 18; a grand total of 160 miles. The regiments marching by way of Stamford, covered a distance of 164 miles.

Lafayette, who commanded the column,³ on 28th July wrote

¹ "People are very anxious to hear the issue of General Lee's trial. Various are the conjectures, but everybody agrees he is not acquitted." *Greene to Washington, Aug. 28th.* Washington laid the findings of the court, which omitted the word "shameful" from the charge, before Congress 20th August.

² *Itinerary of Washington.*

³ Washington on 22d July, instructed Lafayette: "You are to have the

from Saybrook, where they were crossing the "Grand river," to General Sullivan: "General Varnum is of the opinion that the upper road is better than the lower. We parted the day before yesterday, and he went by that with his brigade and Jackson's Regiment, while I am marching this." Lafayette, with Glover's brigade, had hoped to reach Coventry by the 31st.¹ In this he was disappointed. He had not progressed beyond Norwich on the 30th, as he had to keep his troops in condition "for fighting soon after their arrival." He himself intended to proceed to Coventry, to receive Varnum's brigade which were some miles ahead, and had "marched very quick."

Varnum's brigade was encamped at Johnstown on the 3d August, and the following day General Varnum addressed General Sullivan, who had notified him to have his brigade under arms at three o'clock, that previous to the receipt of the order, "not imagining you would review them until the marquis should return from the field," he had put his men "in dishabille," but would be completely prepared at eight o'clock the following morning "on the Plains this side of Providence."²

One-half the effective militia of Rhode Island were called out August first, and troops were expected from the other New England states. Sullivan concentrated his forces at Tiverton. The British destroyed their shipping, to prevent the vessels falling into the hands of the French, and to obstruct the entrance into the harbor, but this did not prevent the French entering the harbor on the 8th August. By the destruction of the British vessels 212 guns were silenced. D'Estaing landed

immediate command of that detachment from this army, which consists of Glover's and Varnum's brigades, and the detachment under the command of Colonel Henry Jackson. You are to march them with all convenient expedition and by the best routes to Providence." Later Washington ordered General Greene to Rhode Island, and instructed General Sullivan to divide his army into two divisions, making an equal distribution of Continental, State, and militia forces, one to be commanded by Greene, the other by Lafayette. General Steuben was instructed by Congress, to repair to Rhode Island, to give his advice and assistance to General Sullivan. Washington entertained the hope that the successful culmination of the Rhode Island Campaign "would have given the finishing blow to British pretensions of sovereignty over this country."

¹Sparks MSS., 49, iii:33.

²Sparks MSS., 20: 394.

about 4000 troops on Conanicut Island, which were intended to coöperate with Sullivan, who, however, being strongly reënforced, crossed to the island of Rhode Island from Tiverton on the ninth, occupying the posts abandoned that day by the enemy. The French reëmbarked their troops on the tenth, and in accordance with the decision of the council of naval officers, D'Estaing decided to give battle to the fleet of Lord Howe which had been sighted the preceding evening.

According to the narrative of Samuel Smith, a soldier in Angell's regiment, the regiment had just reached the island, and had not had time to erect their tents before the storm broke. This was the great storm of the 12th and 15th August which shattered the hopes of coöperation by the French fleet in the attack upon Newport, for when D'Estaing reached port after his futile meeting with the English fleet, his ships were so much in need of repairs that he dared not remain in Narraganset Bay. The troops suffered severely, being mostly without shelter. Many horses, and it is said some of the men, died, unable to stand the exposure.

On the 13th the main body of troops was posted on Quaker Hill. On the morning of the 15th the army advanced to within two miles of the town of Newport.

On the 17th August the remaining effectives of the Rhode Island militia were called upon to supply the loss of the French contingent. The enthusiasm of the American troops was intense. Their strength was about 10,000. On the night of the sixteenth a fatigue party of 800 Americans supported by a detachment of 1000 men, took possession of a hill commanding the British front lines, about half a mile from their works, and by the morning of the 17th had partially opened a covered way, referred to by Colonel Angell in his diary of the 24th. To the right a battery was begun, and within twenty-four hours this battery and the covered way were nearly completed.¹ The detachment commanded by Colonel Angell was to protect this work. The next few days was devoted to construction of works, and on the 21st the French fleet returned.

Colonel Angell may have arrived in time to have joined the army by the fifteenth, but the first few pages of his diary cover-

¹ *Letters of Lyman to Heath, Heath Papers, vol. ii, 255 et seq.*

ing this period are lost. The first entry is under date of August 20, 1778.¹

Colonel Angell's participation in the activities of the next ten days is learned from his diary.²

On the 20th Colonel Angell notes, "A cloudy, foggy morning, but broke away by nine o'clock, and the cannon begun to play. Governor Bradford came to my quarters this day and dined with us. I was ordered on duty today, and marched with a detachment of 500 men as a covering party at five o'clock, P. M., and relieved Colonel Wigglesworth. The French fleet not being yet heard of, spread great consternation in the army." The following day his detachment was subjected to heavy fire, and one man had the calf of his leg shot away. Angell was relieved by Colonel Jacobs at nine o'clock that evening. On the 22d he notes that cannon were placed in position the preceding evening, and that the thick weather had prevented their use as early as

¹ Lyman wrote on the 21st "On the 19th we oppen'd one battery of four 18 pounders commanded by Lincoln of my regt. We soon silenced two of their redoubts, one they have entirely quitted, and the other they have not fired from since. We also killed two of the enemy and wounded one. We have had one kill'd and one wounded. On the 20th we oppen'd another battery of four 18 pds and two howitzers, and kept up a considerable fire yesterday, but with what effect cannot say. We are now making our advance very fast and expect in a few days to have one bomb battery and six others mounted with 24 and 18 pds. We open a battery this day of two 24 and two 18 pds, near 200 yards advanced of the first. We have had 102 deserters from the enemy since my arrival in camp. . . . The enemies' works, redoubts, lines &c., extend from Tammany Hill to a beach of neck near two miles, within which is a pond on their right and the river on their left. . . . the French . . . are this moment in sight and coming up the harbour or river. They have taken one frigate and one bomb ketch, one of their ships dismasted."

² *Diary of Colonel Israel Angell, Commanding the Second Rhode Island Continental Regiment during the American Revolution, 1778-1781.* Transcribed from the original manuscript, together with a biographical sketch of the Author and illustrative notes by Edward Field, A. B., Historian of the Rhode Island Society of the Sons of the American Revolution. Providence, R. I., Preston and Rounds, 1899, pp. 149. The diary covers the periods, 20th August, 1778, to 1st February, 1779, inclusive, 18th June, 1779, to 13th December, 1779, inclusive, 10th August, 1780, to 30th September, 1780, 14th February, 1781, to 3d April, 1781. The originals of the diary are in possession of Mr. H. I. Angell, Chester, N. Y., and photostat prints in possession of Mrs. F. H. Lovell, Washington, D. C.

would have otherwise been the case. This day also he notes that on the evening of the 20th an express had come from the French admiral, and that on the 21st, "we saw the ships, two of them had been dismasted in the late storm, one was the Admiral's ship, she was totally dismasted; the other had her mizzen mast carried away, and her main top." On the 23d he dined with General Greene. That day "a most terrible cannonade" was kept up. The diary also gives expressions to the feeling prevalent in the army: "the French fleet left us today bound to Boston, and I think left us in a most rascally manner; and what will be the event God only knows." On the 24th, the cannonade continued "very severe," and the Colonel and Lieutenant Colonel Olney were "curious enough to measure all the covered way, which was 1512 yards." The 25th saw precautions taken in case of a necessary retreat; the heavy baggage being got off. The Colonel sent off his "marque," and took quarters with Colonel Livingston and Major Huntington. That night all the teams were mustered "and proceeded to the lower works in order to get off all the Cannon and mortar as a retreat was determined upon." On the 27th, the Diary records, "I had one Ensign and 14 men taken prisoners (last evening) by the British troops as they was a setting their sentries. The ensign was John Viol. General Varnum formed an expedition against a picquet, which lay near our right wing, which proved unfortunate, being drove off with the loss of one lieutenant and three privates. I was officer of the day today. Three large ships arrived in the harbor, supposed to be from New York. I dined with Colonel Greene thro' day, and spent the greatest part of the afternoon in visiting the Guard." On the 28th orders to move having been countermanded, Angell's command tarried on the ground. That evening orders were received to strike tents and march to the north end of the Island. "The advanced picquet was to come off at 12 o'clock. The enemy, finding that we had left our ground, pursued with all possible speed; came up with our picquet about sunrise, and a smart firing began. The picquet repulsed the British troops two or three times, but was finally obliged to retreat, as the enemy brought a number of field pieces against them. The enemy was soon checked by our cannon in comming up to our main body, and they formed on Quaker Hill,

and we took possession of Buttses Hill. The left wing of the British was composed of the Hessians, who attacked our right wing and severe engagement ensued, in which the Hessians were put to flight and beat off the ground with a considerable loss. Our loss was not very great, but I cannot ascertain the number. I was ordered with my regiment to a redoubt on a small hill, which the enemy was trying for, and it was with difficulty that we got there before the enemy.¹ I had three or four men killed and wounded today. At night I was ordered with my regiment to lie on the lines. I had not slept then in two nights more than two or three hours; the regiment had eat nothing during the whole day. This was our situation to go on guard, but we marched off cheerfully and took our post."

The following morning Colonel Angell's regiment was relieved, and got provisions, and their commander went to a house and had "a good knap." The troops were under fire, and that night "received orders to retreat off the Island, which we did without the loss of anything. This retreat was in consequence of an express from General Washington informing General Sullivan that the British ships of war and transports had sailed from New York, some days before." On 31st August Angell notes, "Our retreat off the Island was completed by three o'clock this morning. It is supposed the enemy attempted a retreat last evening but after finding that we had retreated, they returned to their ground, as it was late in the morning before they took possession of the forts we left."

The retreat from the island practically ended the campaign. The hopes, once so high, of the Rhode Islanders, were completely dashed. Their harbors were to be blockaded for another year, and during all that year the State was obliged to watch and guard her long coast line.

The campaign was well planned; the retreat was admirably conducted. The Island of Rhode Island extends north and south,

¹Smith, in his *Memoirs*, relates that the retreat was so conducted that the Rhode Island brigade was the rear guard, and that about "sunrise it became our turn to fight, and we descended on a party of British at the fort on Butts' Hill"; that the enemy scaled the walls on one side while the men of Angell's regiment entered the gate, and that after completely driving the enemy from the fort, their party dismounted and spiked the cannon, and withdrew.

wider at the southern extremity, where Newport is, which then was a larger and more important town than Providence. The island is about seventeen miles long, but from the ferry, where the American forces crossed, to the British lines about Newport it was only about eleven miles. The British retired from their posts in the northern part of the island to lines drawn closely about Newport. These lines consisted of earth works running from the western end of Easton's beach northerly about three miles, following the height of land to a point east of Tominy Hill, on which there was a strong fortification, and extended westerly along the northerly edge of the hill to Coddington's Cove, about a mile and a half. Something over a mile in the rear of these northern works was a parallel line. The British positions were very strong, and were defended by a force variously estimated as from five to seven thousand men, with ample artillery. The guns were largely manned by sailors from the ships which had been destroyed to save them from the French.

The departure of the French fleet caused great indignation. General Sullivan went so far as to let his own feelings be learned from a paragraph in the Orders of the Day, which later he attempted to cover by another order. Samuel Barrett wrote to General Heath on the afternoon of Sunday, 23d August: "What could the worst enemy have done more to decieve and injure us than by the most specious allurements, and under every assurance of support, to draw us into a most critical and hazzardous enterprize and leave us in the very moment of execution, and by withdrawing that support either expose the flower of the New England States to be cut off or their reputation to unmerited censure." Lafayette the same day wrote to Heath, recounting what had already been accomplished by the French, and explaining the necessity of their refitting the fleet. He was as much chagrinned as any of the American officers, but attempted to make the most of the situation. Writing of the sally of the fleet to meet the British fleet he said, that the Admiral "immediately repass'd under the same batteries, movs against the British fleet, puts them to flight, and pursues them everywhere. In the middle of the victory, when the enemy's fleet was ready to be destroyed or taken, that extraordinary and

unheard of storm divides them all. The Languedoc of 110 guns, the Marseillais of 74 are dismasted and rendered unfit for any service. The Cæsar was lost, and the British fleet makes their escape, with the trifling loss of two ships, among them a frigate. However, the admiral had promised to come back here, and he kept his word: but as he had instructions from the king for going to Boston in case of any misfortune happening to his ships, as he received intelligence from G^{nl} of the Americans that a superior fleet was arrived, as he received also the most pressing representations from his captains, as he was assured by American generals that we did not run any risk ourselves, and that his land troops were not necessary to us, he sailed for Boston."

The result of the departure of the French was the desertion of many of the American volunteers, who at once assumed that the operation was over. Many of the militia also returned to their homes. On the 24th Sullivan's effective force was reduced to 8174 rank and file, exclusive of artillery. Nevertheless it was determined to make at least one attempt to force the British lines, before the arrival of the reënforcements which now it was known had sailed from New York for Newport.

The American army met with no opposition in making its way down the island, and placing their batteries on high land to the east of the height of land east of Newport. The American outposts were well advanced on Easton's beach, and it was from that point that General Greene advised that an attack be made, in the hope of breaking through and cutting off the British, who were to be engaged all along the front lines. It was recognized as a desperate attempt, and abandoned because the force which could be used was insufficient to prevent disaster. It was at Easton's beach that the picket sent out from Angell's regiment was cut off.

On the night of the 28th the American forces silently withdrew from the entrenchments, and the entire army marched rapidly toward positions prepared on the hills at the northern end of the island. The following morning the British obtained possession of Turkey and Quaker Hills, and artillery having been brought up, an attempt was made to force the American lines at Barrington and Butts' Hills. General Greene taking advantage of the fact that the enemy had advanced too quickly, and was not well sup-

ported, and not superior in numbers to his own division, attacked and drove them from the advanced position they had taken. The two main roads from Newport to the Ferry, known as the East and West roads, passed respectively over Quaker and Butts' Hills, and it was along these roads the pursuit had come. The American battle was formed with Livingston and Tyler on the extreme western and eastern flanks respectively, with Varnum's brigade on the right of the line. Here was the regiment commanded by Colonel Angell, although earlier in the day his command had been used to retake the redoubt on the western extension of Butts' Hill and to repel an attack made at that point. That appears to have been the "high water" mark of the British pursuit. Then had followed the counter attack by Greene. Next to Varnum's brigade was Cornell's, and on the extreme left was Glover's brigade, and between Glover and Cornell, a brigade commanded by Lieut.-Colonel Christopher Greene, including the battalion of negroes, Indians, and mulattoes known as the Black Regiment. This battalion was commanded by Major Ward, and numbered perhaps as many as 140 men, who behaved as well as any troops who had never before been under fire. With white troops they repelled an assault by the Hessians made with the bayonet. Their part in the fight has been absurdly praised and exaggerated. The British and Hessians were defeated in their attempt to carry the American position. The hottest part of the day's work was between ten o'clock and noon. The cannonade continued the rest of the day, and the British expected a renewal of the attack. Both armies rested expectantly throughout the night of the 29th and day of the 30th. During the night of the 30th without awakening suspicion General Sullivan withdrew the remainder of his forces from the island. General Lafayette, who had been in Boston, returned in time to take command of the rear guard as it was crossing to the mainland.

After the battle of Rhode Island the brigade was stationed at Bristol and Warren, to guard the approaches to Providence. There was a ferry from Bristol to Rhode Island. Colonel Angell's regiment marched from their camp at Tiverton on the second of September, and took post at Bristol. The regiment remained there until the eighteenth when it moved to a camp a little more

than a mile above Warren, and there, having erected rude barracks, remained until the following June.

General Varnum's quarters were at the Bradford home. On the 6th September the guns of the British ships raiding New Bedford were plainly heard in the Bristol camp, and on various occasions Colonel Angell mentions in his diary distant firing, but no alarms seemed to have disturbed the monotony of the camp.

The officers and men of the 2d Rhode Island were afforded many opportunities to visit their homes. Many overstayed their leave, or were absent without leave, which led to court martials and condign punishment.

Colonel Angell was president of a general court martial early in December, and on the last day of the year sat that and the two following days as president of a brigade court martial, at Warren. The findings of the court were published in General Orders, Jan. 5th, 1779.¹ Several officers were found guilty of the charges presented; the only one of Angell's regiment being Captain David Dexter, charged with leaving his post on Christmas, and being absent without leave until the 29th, and behaving unbecoming of an officer, inasmuch as he associated with the wagon master of the brigade.

Lieut.-Colonel Olney, who had distinguished himself in directing the departure of the rear guard from the island and had received mention in General Orders, had been much exposed and was obliged to seek treatment in Providence, for he "was exceeding much unwell with ague in his face." He returned on the 15th, affording Colonel Angell an opportunity a few days later to take sick leave, as on the 18th he suffered an attack of malaria. The regimental surgeon² accompanied him to his home in Johnston. The diary is missing from 23rd September to 12th December. On the latter date Angell notes he left home for Warren and on arrival found all well. The return for his regiment for the months of August and September was dated at Warren, October 9th, when it was noted that the Colonel was "on command." To

¹ See *Diary of Colonel Israel Angell*, pp. 36, 38, where details may be read. Varnum wrote 4th January to Sullivan, of the bravery of Captain Dexter, but that he had deserved "cashiering" frequently. Every honorable measure had been taken to reclaim him from dissipation. *Sparks MSS.*

² Elias Cornelius. He was a prisoner at Staten Island, 22d August, 1778.

what duty he was detailed is not told. Christmas week was exceedingly cold. From the 7th to the 20th January, 1779, the Colonel was again at his home in Johnston.

On the 28th January, 1779, the first recorded trouble in Varnum's brigade occurred. Colonel Angell notes in his diary under that date:

In the afternoon, Col. Webb's regt. mutinied, and turned out under arms, but was with some difficulty dispersed, but at night they all paraded and marched to the barracks where my men was, and about forty of my regt. joined them. After talking some time with them they all dispersed and remained in peace the night. Jan. 29. At roll call I ordered four of my men whipped for attempting and robbing a corporal for informing the officers that they were turning out with their arms. In the afternoon I and Gen. Varnum went to Providence, from thence I went to my father's and there tarried the night.

From North Providence he went to his own home, and did not return to camp until the first of February, where he "found all well." Evidently the "mutiny" had been a matter of small moment, as it did not prevent the commanding general of the brigade and the colonel of one of the regiments participating, from leaving camp for a few days.

There are several references in Angell's diary to the difficulty in obtaining commissary and quartermaster supplies for his regiment. During the extreme cold weather which prevailed in the latter part of December, 1778, the Colonel, with the good of the men in mind, took advantage of the arrival in Warren of a trader from New Bedford, and bought of him 288 pair of shoes, at an expense of \$1200. He was unflagging in his efforts to relieve the necessities of the men in his regiment. The condition of the com-

¹ The following instruction to Lieutenant Carpenter indicates that the Colonel was equally solicitous with regard to the welfare of his officers:

Warren 28th March, 1779

S^r As there is not a sufficient Quantity of State Stores on hand to bring up ye Soldiers equal to ye Officers, the Soldier having a greater proportion than the Officer, and not making so prudent a use of it. You will therefore deliver to ye Officers as it becomes due to them.

I am S^r y^r humble Serv^t
Israel Angell, Col^l

missary grew worse as the season advanced. The following letter was written by General Gates at this time:

Providence May 1st 1779

Sir:

Whatever be the Cause Which prevents our Magazines from being regularly Supplied the Consequence is the same. Two Mutinies have already happened within these two Days. It is true that they have been quelled though with Difficulty; but the success I have had depending on the Accomplishment of my Promise, "that the Army would be immediately supplied" and the Stores being now empty, I am perplexed how to quiet starved soldiers, who being excited to sedition by British Emisaries, will not bear Want with becoming Patience.

I trust, Sir, that you will distinguish yourself at this juncture, and prove that you are worthy of the important trust reposed in you.

At this and the other Posts in our Neighborhood, the Stores are this day, quite empty! You must feel for me, as a Patriot and an officer

With the Sentiments which the hopes of seeing this Part of the Army preserved by your Activity, inspire me for you I am

Your most Obt Servant

Horatio Gates

Colonel Wadsworth

One of the outbreaks mentioned by General Gates is undoubtedly referred to in the following letter. Unfortunately, the Diary fails us, and very little information is available concerning this "mutiny." It is probable that the Colonel was able to placate the men.

Warren 23rd April 1779

Dear Gen^l

I arriv'd in Garrison this Evening about Nine o Clock and to my Surprise found my Reg. had mutinied and was then all under Arms. The guard had joined them, and was in possession of the Artillery, and Remain in this mutinous position. I beg the Gen^l to Send a brigade to Suppress the riot, they Say they will march to providence and what the event will be God only knows I have not time to write more at present.

I am Sir your Hum^{bl} Serv^t

Israel Angell

In May, 1779, Colonel Angell petitioned the General Assembly of Rhode Island, setting forth that on the 23d August, 1777, an act was passed entitling the officers of the Continental battalions of Rhode Island to receive one quarter of their wages in provisions, at the stipulated prices. As he has never received what was due him, he asks the Assembly to permit him to draw what is now due, or to appoint a committee to settle with him. A favorable answer was made to this prayer, and the Council of War was directed to settle with him on the basis of a quarter part of his pay in provisions, or to make him a reasonable allowance for the same in money.

Following the successful outcome of the petition in his own behalf, Colonel Angell now sought to follow up the advantage by seeking recognition for his men in their demand for the amount due them in rum, sugar, and coffee:

Camp Graves Hill 15th June 1779

Gentlemen

Permit me once more to trouble you, in behalf of the troops under my Command, by an Act of the Honourable General Assembly of this State in October 1778. The officers of the Continental Battallions, were entitled to receive one Sixteenth part of their wages p^r month in Camp in rum Shugar and Coffe at the Stated prices, the Noncommissioned officers and Soldiers one fourth of their wages as aforesaid, from the first of last November to the first of June instant which is Seven months, the Reg^t has not Rec^d one third of the Stores due, as may be Seen by the inclos'd, and have received but only two months Subsistance money allowed by the State. I have Reason to think the Reg^t would not have been So deficient in their pay, had Col. Thomas Greene who was appointed State Commissary, Enjoyed his health, but he was taken Sick immediately after his appointment And Still remains unable to do the duty.

I Pray your Honours would be Pleased to appoint Some other person to act in the Capassity, that the troops might be paid up, which was promist them, and no reason for Complaints given, is the Earnest wish and desire of,

Gentlemen your most Obed. & Hum^bl Serv^t
Hon^b Gen^l Assembly Israel Angell Col. 2nd
State Rhode Island R. I. Regiment

Colonel Angell lost two good officers in April and May, as the appended letters show:

Warren 13th April, 1779

S^r

L^t Abel Carpenter of my Regim^t having applied for a Recommandation for a Discharge from y^e Service (tho a good officer), as y^e Situation of his private Concerns is at present, do, concur with him in praying that your Honour would be pleas'd to grant him that indulgence.

I am, S^r, with sentiments of Esteem

Your Honours

most obedient, Humble Servt

Maj^r Gen^l Gates

I. Angell, Col^o

Warren 14th May 1779.—

Lieut. Benedict Tew of my Regim^t having apply'd for a recommendation for a discharge from y^e Service, altho he is a good Officer, and one who I believe has serv'd his Country from y^e beginning of y^e War to this present time, with as much reputation as any of his Rank in y^e Army. Yet for y^e following Reasons, do hereby recommend him to y^e General for a Discharge: He says he has no Interest to support himself with, in y^e Army, and his pay will not support him to live in Character of an Officer; that he has long waited with expectation that Congress would make some Provision for y^e Army but seeing no prospect of anything being done, and being sure, should he live to see y^e close of y^e War, and y^e Officers received nothing but their bare wages for their Services, as poor as y^e Money now is, that he should then after spending y^e flower of his Days in y^e service of his Country, be left to beg his Bread. I do concur with him &C.

I. Angell Col^o

Maj^r Gen^l Gates

Many changes had taken place in the officer personnel of the regiment since the retreat from Rhode Island. Lieutenant Oliver Dexter upon refusal to do duty had been dismissed the service, 10th September, 1778, and on the 15th General Orders announced the promotion of Oliver Jenks from 2d to 1st lieutenant, his appointment to date from the 11th. In March, Captain David Dexter was restored to rank, "at the request of a number of officers," only to be deranged by the new arrangement of the 1st of April.

On the 21st April, Colonel Angell made the following recommendations to General Gates, who had assumed command on the 2d of the month:

Warren 21st April 1779

Dear General,

Having seven Vacancies in my Regimt, one of a Lieut^t occasioned by y^e Resignation of Lieut^t Abel Carpenter, Beg leave to recommend Ensign Benjⁿ L. Peckham to fill that Vacancy—and as there will then be seven Ensigns wanting, do further recommend Mr Jn^o M. Greene to be promoted to an Ensign and to take Rank from y^e first of last March, and Serjeants Jeremiah Greenman, Joseph Masury, Jn^o Rogers, & W^m Pratt to be promoted to Ensigns. My reasons for desiring that M^r Greene might take Rank from y^e first of March past, is that he's a worthy young Gentleman, who has served as an Assistant to the Adjutant Gen^l, and in my opinion ought to take Rank before some Serjeants who have been promoted since that time in Gen^l Glover's Brigade; and as there were several Vacancies in my Regimt the first of March past, I can see no impropriety in his taking Rank from s^d Time. If these Gentlemen are promoted to Commission'd officers, I shall then have two Commission'd Officers to a Company for duty, which will be sufficient untill I have an opportunity of Recruiting more Men.

I am

S^r & C:Maj^r Gen^l GatesI. Angell Col^l

These recommendations were complied with, the appointments being announced in General Orders of the 29th. On the following day, Lieutenant David Sayles of Angell's was appointed quartermaster of the regiment, and Major Box was appointed Inspector General of Cornell's and Stark's¹ brigades. Sullivan relinquished his command on the 28th March, and in orders of that day, "Returns thanks to every officer in the Department for spirited conduct and regular behaviour on all occasions."

An interesting side light upon desertions² is afforded by Gen-

¹ Stark took command of Varnum's brigade 26th April.

² In the newspapers of the day will be found advertisements of which the following is an example from the Providence *Gazette*:

Four Thousand Dollars Reward.

Deserted from the Rhode-Island Recruits, John Campbell, a Native of Ireland, 43 Years of Age, 5 Feet 7 Inches high, has black Hair, dark Eyes, wore a Wig, which 'tis probable he will leave off, his Face much pitted with the Small-Pox, is very red, and burned by the Sun. James Duncan, a Native of Scotland, 29 years of Age, 5 Feet 8 Inches high, has dark Hair, blue Eyes, and is of

eral Orders of 24th May, 1779. At a Court Martial at Bristol, on the 20th, Nathaniel Gale of Angell's regiment, found guilty of desertion to the enemy in 1777, having plead guilty, was sentenced to 25 lashes, and to be placed on a Continental frigate to serve during the war. It developed by examination of Sergeants Wilbut and Alford, who were prisoners in New York while Gale was with the enemy, that he was anxious to return to his regiment, and endeavored to facilitate their escape. At the same court, James Lobb and George Thighs of Angell's regiment were tried for threatening to desert to the enemy. Thighs was acquitted, but Lobb, found guilty, was sentenced to be whipped. James King of the same regiment, for threatening the life of Lieutenant Peckham and then to desert to the enemy, was sentenced to be picketed fifteen minutes, and to receive 100 lashes at four different times. The General approved, and ordered the sentence to be carried into effect at such time and place as Colonel Angell should direct.

On the 22d June, Colonel Angell was summoned to attend at Headquarters at Providence, and learned that his regiment was to move to Boston Neck. While he was absent the officers of his regiment and those of Colonel Sherburne's joined in a "grand entertainment" at Peck's Rocks at the mouth of Warren River, celebrating the supposed victories in South Carolina and Georgia, news of which had been received on the 18th and 20th. On the 17th Colonel Angell had notified General Gates of the shoeless condition of his regiment, in the following letter¹:

Camp Graves Hill, 17th June, 1779.

Dear Gen^l:

Notwithstanding there is a Number of men in my Regt. barefoot, am under the necessity of Sending back to the Cloathers

a dark Complexion. Asa Scott, about 24 Years of Age, 6 Feet high, has dark Hair, and is light complexioned. Samuel Jones, 28 Years of Age, 5 Feet 4 Inches high, has dark Hair, and is dark complexioned. Any Person who will apprehend either of the above Deserters, and return them to the Rendezvous at Providence, shall receive One Thousand Dollars Reward, and all necessary Charges, paid by

SAMUEL WARD, Lt. Col

Providence, July 12, 1780.

¹ *Sparks MSS.*, 49: iii: 115.

Store, the Shoes my quarter Master Received in Rehoboth yesterday, for the use of sd Regt. as one half of them are So Small they Cannot be worn by the men, and not knowing wheather the Gen^l. would approve of the Shoes being pick't over, thought proper to Send them alltogether. Should be glad they might be pickt, that the men may be supply'd at present as far as Possible

am Dear Gen^l, with Sentiments of Esteem,
your most Obd Hum^{bl} Serv^t

Maj^a Gen^l Gates

Israel Angell

On the 22d June occurred the first loss by death the regiment had sustained since the battle of Rhode Island. Benjamin Bird and James Lobb, who has already received mention, both young men, were drowned in Kickemuit River. On the 24th the regiment moved into Warren, and the following day Colonel Angell noted in his Diary:

This morning I turned out by two o'clock, and before four had all the troops embarked and on their passage. I tarried, myself, until after breakfast then went on by land in company with Lieut. Jeruald and his wife to Providence, as I was a member of a Court Martial to set there by adjournment for the trial of Col. Vose.¹ Arrived in Providence half after nine, but the President was gone into the country, and I went to Johnston to see my family, where I arrived by two o'clock, and found all well, but was much unwell myself.

The regiment encamped at Barber's Heights, a hill in North Kingston, from which a view could be obtained of the whole of lower Narraganset Bay and several miles out to sea. Colonel Angell rejoined his regiment on the 26th, finding Colonel Greene and Major Flagg both there, and the entire regiment more or less sick from the extreme heat, and the next day he found himself "in a shocking situation of health," but this did not prevent him from making an inspection of the shore between the camp and Updike Newtown. On the following day he entertained the officers of the regiment, it being the anniversary of the Battle of Monmouth. From the first to the eighth of July, a convenient Court Martial, held at Providence, of which he was a member, and which was

¹ The proceedings in the Court Martial trying Colonel Vose are learned from an extract from an Orderly Book printed in Field: *Diary of Col. Israel Angell*, p. 54. Vose was acquitted. Several of his officers had brought the charges. General Glover was president of the court.

adjourned from time to time, again gave the Colonel an opportunity of being at home, and overseeing the raising of a barn on his farm.

He was at Providence on the 3d July, and enlisted two men for his regiment, the certificate of which is in the collections of the Rhode Island Historical Society:

Providence July 3, 1779.

Certify that we have enlisted John Radford and Sylvester Davis into the Continental service for the town of Smithfield and paid them \$6 apeice, and desire you to pay remainder part of their bounty.

Israel Angell Col.
Simeon Thayer Major.

To Daniel Mowry, Esq.
Smithfield.

On that day General Orders provided for a *feu de joie* at noon of the fourth, which was to extend from one end of the lines to the other. First the Galley was to fire 13 guns, to be followed by a like salute from General Cornell's post at Tiverton, then by General Sherburne's command, then by the post at Warwick, followed by the fort at Pawtuxet, and closed by 13 guns by the Park of Artillery at Providence.

Desertions from the army continued. John Deruse (or Derruce) of Angell's regiment, for deserting to the enemy and carrying with him a guard boat, was condemned to suffer death, and Joseph Thrasher of the same regiment, for desertion, was sentenced to receive 100 lashes. These sentences were approved by General Gates 14th July, but were not carried into effect, as will be seen later.

Colonel Angell set out for camp on the 8th July, and was the guest of Colonel Greene at Greenwich over night. He was awakened between two and three o'clock, as he tells in his diary, by the firing of small arms, and alarm guns at Newtown and Warwick. Setting forth for camp, he met a party of militia, and learned that a raiding party from Newport had landed above Newtown, and plundered the house of John Dyer.

Colonel Angell was now to undergo the experience of a serious mutiny in his regiment, the result of a misunderstanding among the rank and file, who supposed their grievances as to non-payment of wages due them had not received consideration.

The circumstances are clearly shown by Colonel Angell's Diary, and by contemporaneous letters and orders.

The Diary under July 24th, relates that,

This morning I sent Lt. Thomas Waterman an express to head Qrs. with the returns of my Regt. and a number of letters, and in the afternoon had the mortification to find that two thirds of the Sergts. in the Regt. had conspired together, and ript the bindings off their hats, contrary to orders. I issued an order for them to put them on by next morning, by guard mounting, or they should be reduced to the ranks without the formality of a Court Martial, and tried for a wilful disobedience of orders.

25th July, 1779. This morning by eight o'clock the Sergts had all their bindings on. In the afternoon yesterday I recd a mutinous paper from one of the soldiers, wrote by one Hazzard and brought by one Twitchel, and last evening two deserters, John Deruce and Robert Albro, both made their escape from the Qr Guard. Deruce was in irons, under sentence of death. He is supposed to have been taken out of his irons by one Fowler, who was confined with him. I set out to see the Genl. at Providence, on business, this afternoon half past 4 o'clock. Went to my own house, tarried the night.

Angell returned to camp the following day, and found all quiet. On the 28th he was obliged to go to Warren, and proceeded by boat. By reason of delay and stress of weather he was unable to set out for home until the 30th, and then was driven on to the Barrington shore, where he met with Captain Tew of his regiment. The following day, Tew and the Colonel returned to Warren, to make another attempt to reach camp. There they

Recd the disagreeable news of my Regt mutinying, on which I set off to try to reach the western shore, though the wind was ahead. We beat out of Warren river, stood over to Warwick Neck, and after trying to beat down to Barber's Heights, was obliged to put away for Greenwich harbor. There I left my boat and men, got a horse, and set off for camp. Arrived there by eight o'clock, found all in peace. On my way met Genl. Stark and a number of other gentlemen, who had been down to the Regt. at the request of Gen. Gates, and ordered the Regt to parade and march by the column. They all received the genl pardon except George Millamen, who was ordered to be sent prisoner in irons to Providence, and was immediately sent off.

The Diary makes no further reference to the subject, except that on the 4th and 5th August, mention is made of Major Thayer, Captain Coggeshall Olney, Ensign Wheaton, and other witnesses being called for at the Court Martial to try Millamen.

Millamen, presumably the ringleader in the mutiny, was duly tried by Court Martial.¹ General Gates approved the death sentence. On the 20th, on the prisoner's humble petition, he was respite for one week from the following Monday, and on the 27th September he was again respite until the 11th October, and again until the 25th. It is evident that the authorities were reluctant to enforce the penalty, as he was still a prisoner in January.²

In the mean time, information was received that there was to be an attack by Tories, on the night of the 4th August. This report was based on news brought by the Province Galley, which

¹Camp Barbers Heights, 4th August. 1779
9 o'Clock at Night

Dear Co^l,

Have this moment received your Express, desiring me to send a number of non-commission'd Officers & Soldiers of my Regmt to Providence as Evidences for Milliman, which will be forwarded with all possible speed, & deliver you this, but cannot conceive that they ought to be admitted as Evidences, being parties equally concern'd in their dam-ble Conduct—for my own part, I have no reason to think, but that some of them would be bad eno to swear that they were ye investigators of ye Mutiny, in order to screen Milliman from suffering, as they have received their pardon & have no punishment to fear

Col^o Peck

I am with sentiments of esteem,
Your humble Servt
I. Angell, Col.

Head Quarters Providence 11 Augst 1779

George Milliman soldier in the 2^d Rhode Island Reg^t try'd at a late Gen^l Court Martial whereof Colo Jackson was President for Mutiny is found guilty of the same & sentenced to suffer death—the Gen^l approves the sentence of the Court Martial & will order the same to be executed on Monday sennight. The Adj^t Gen^l will acquaint the prisoner with the sentence of the Court that he may prepare for Death.

Head Quarters 29th Aug. 1779

George Milliman soldier in Colo Angell's Regiment tried at a late General court martial & sentenced to suffer death, is further respite from Execution untill monday the 13th September.

²He died 12th August, 1832. (U. S. Pension Records.) The name is not found in Arnold's Vital Records for either Warwick County or the town of Providence.

had taken three fishermen off Block Island, from whom it was learned that the "Tory fleet" intended to come off a plundering on Point Judith this night or to-morrow night."

Colonel Angell found it more difficult to maintain discipline in his regiment while they were encamped in Rhode Island, near their homes, and occupied with nothing but guard duty and the monotony of drill, than when forming part of the army at a distance. Nor were the men remarkable for their obedience to orders. Much dissatisfaction prevailed, encouraged by busy-bodies, and by the dilatoriness of the State in the matter of pay and supplies. Question arose as to the period of enlistment. This same complaint concerning enlistment came up in other Continental regiments, especially the following year. On the 12th September, 1779, Colonel Angell's Orderly Book contains the following:

Camp Barber's Hill. The Colonel has been informed that some soldiers in the regiment who not having the good of the service in view are frequently complaining in a very unwarrantable manner about their enlistment, and even threatening to leave or desert the service after the expiration of three years, although their enlistments are during the War. The Colonel is surprised to find that any soldier presumes to use such designing and mutinous language, and he now informs them, once for all, that should any non-commissioned officer or soldier in future, be found guilty on parade or elsewhere of threatening, grumbling, or complaining in such unwarrantable manner with respect for the term for which he enlisted, he may be assured that he will immediately be confined and tried for a breach of orders, and likewise for endeavoring to cause and excite mutiny among the well affected troops in the regiment, and must expect to suffer accordingly. All those who are the least dissatisfied or in doubt about the term for which he enlisted are assured there has been a fair and impartial examination of all the enlistments that are collected, and that no non-commissioned officer or soldier is returned for any other term of service than what is expressly mentioned in his enlistment. Yet should any individual still remain in doubt respecting his enlistment after the publication of this order, he is desired to apply to the Colonel, who will at

¹ Stanton Hazzard, called the Tory pirate, sailed from Newport, and committed more or less minor damage. He was taken, and carried into New London, as noted by Colonel Angell under date of 9th August. His captor was Silas Talbot, already mentioned in this sketch.

once remove his doubts by producing his enlistment, and thereby end the unwarrantable complaints which are too frequent in the regiment. Some few enlistments are not yet collected, and when they are the same candid examination will be made as before.

This order to be read four evenings, successively, that the men may be fully acquainted therewith. After which no excuse whatever will be admitted for a breach of this order.

An order dated 16th September, discloses another cause of trouble:

Mrs. Grant's conduct (previous to her being ordered away from Newtown) was attended by such particular marks of insolence and disrespect toward the Colonel, as well as the most dangerous consequences to the good order and obedience of the Guard stationed at New Town that necessity reduced him to remove her such a distance as to put it out of her power to infuse principles of disobedience in the minds of the well affected soldiers, but the Lieut. Colonel is sorry to be informed that she is again returned to the place from whence she was lately removed, and she may now be assured that if she does not set out to-morrow morning by 11 or 12 for Providence, or some other place equally distant from this post, he will be reduced to the necessity of taking such steps as will effect her removal; which perhaps may not be quite so pleasing to her as it will to go by the time here limited.

This order was issued by Colonel Olney during the temporary absence of Colonel Angell.

The routine of the camp is shown by an order of 17th September:

The troops are to parade at the first dawn of the day till further orders. The taptoo be beat at eight o'clock, after which the officer of the day and officer of the Guard in camp, will see that the troops are all still in their tents, and all lights to be put out in camp at nine o'clock. The countersign to be given out in camp immediately after a taptoo beating and the outguards as soon as daylight is gone, and after ten o'clock no person is to be admitted to pass with or without the countersign without the encampment, except the officers of the day and guards.

Whipping as a punishment for various offenses, absent without leave, leaving one's post without orders, thieving, etc., was inflicted at roll call. The "cat" was used. Men receiving punish-

ment had to march slowly down between two lines, while each man in line struck him until the required number of lashes were received. Or sometimes he was whipped by men detailed to the duty, usually the drummers and fifers. This degrading punishment was so frequently administered that it probably lost a part of its significance, and the number of lashes given was large, corresponding to the lightness with which the men laid on their strokes. In the British army, in serious cases, an officer marched slowly in front of the offender, with the naked point of his sword projecting backward under his arm, and another behind with his sword point in position. Behind each rank of the men, keeping pace with the culprit, marched other officers who would strike, even hard enough to knock down, such men who failed to deliver their blows with reasonable force. Death often resulted from heavy sentences. The discipline in the American army was not so severe, but was based on that in the British establishment.

General Steuben visited Rhode Island in September, on official duties. The Orderly Book of Captain Jeremiah Putnam, under date of September 4, 1779, recites the General Orders of that day, giving the itinerary of "Major General Steuben, Inspector General of the Armies of the United States." He was to review Sherburne's and Webb's regiments on the 5th, and would "then proceed by water to Greenwich, and on Monday morning at 10 o'clock will review Col. Greene's Regiment and Col. Angell's at Hunt's Tavern on the road between Greenwich and New-town, at which place the regiments will be paraded."

The Diary is missing for the month of September, and a hiatus also occurs in the Orderly Book from 11th July to 6th September, but the records of the War Department show that on the 6th the Inspector General reported on Angell's regiment, "This regiment is one of the new establishment, the companies nearly equal, and in general in good order, and can form a battalion of the line."

The following letters¹ belong to this period:

¹ Taken from the Letter Book of Colonel Angell, as are all his letters not otherwise credited. The Letter Book commences with a fragment of Letter No. 3, written from Valley Forge, February, 1778, and continues to 1783. It is in possession of Mr. H. I. Angell, and a photostat copy in possession of Mrs. F. H. Lovell.

Military Life

151

Camp Barbers Heights 11th Sept. 1779

Dear General

One of ye Inhabitants of this Neighbourhood, had a Mare shot by one of my Centinels on ye night of ye 8th Instant—the Gentleman apply'd to me ye day following, to know how he should get pay for his Mare, as he suppos'd her to be shot by accident, & not by design. It was a matter I was somewhat at a Loss to know how to proceed in, but by ye inclosed ye Gen^l will see in what manner I have proceeded, and now submit ye matter to ye Generals better Judgment, begging ye Gen^l to send me a Line, how and who shall pay this Gentleman for his Beast.

Am Dear Gen^l y^r most Obed^t
humble Serv^t
I. Angell

Maj^r Gen^l Gates

humble Serv^t

I. Angell

Camp Barbers Heights 11th Sept. 1779

Respected Gen'l

There being two Vacancies for two Lieuts in my Regmt, occasioned by ye resignation of Lieut Benedict Tew, and Lieut Thomas Waterman, beg ye General would be pleas'd to appoint Ensign Jno Hubbard to fill ye Vacancy of Lieut Tew, which took place ye 10th of May 1779—and Ensign Joseph Wheaton to fill ye Vacancy of Lt Waterman which happened ye 30th of August 1779.

Maj^r Gen^l Gates

I am S^r with Esteem
Your most obedient, &
very humble Serv^t
I. Angell, Col.

Camp Barbers Heights 17th Sept. 1779

Gentleman Throne

There being two Vacancies, for two Lieutenants in my Regiment occasioned by ye resignation of Lieut^t Benedict Tew, and Lieut^t Thomas Waterman, beg your Honours would be pleas'd to appoint Ensign John Hubbart¹ to fill ye Vacancy of Lieut^t Tew, which took place ye 10th of May 1779.—And Ensign Joseph Wheaton to fill ye Vacancy of Lieut^t Waterman which happen'd ye 30th of August 1779. Have apply'd to ye Gen^l to have ye aforesaid Vacancies fill'd, who inform'd me, that their appointments must be by ye Honourable Gen^l Assembly.

Am, Gentlemen Your Honours
Obedient & very humble
Serv^t
I. Angell, Col.

Honourable Gen^l
Assembly Rhode Island
State.....

¹ Both Hubbard and Waterman gave cause for letters from Angell to Washington, April, 1780.

The duties of the commanding officer at the Post at Barber's Heights called for vigilance in detecting attempts by small coasting vessels to pass out the Bay without proper permits. On occasion this power required good judgment and diplomacy, as the orders of the Board of War and the permits granted sometimes conflicted.

Camp Barbers Heights 3rd Oct^r 1779

S:

In obedience to a Resolve of ye honourable Council of War pass'd ye 30th Ult. prohibiting ye Exportation of any kind of Provisions, or W. I. Goods from this State to ye State of Connecticut from & after ye 2nd Day of this instant October, under any pretence whatever—I have detained two small Sloops Commanded by Mess^{rs} Elliot & —— for Wood now in ye Harbour of Updykes New-Town, bound to Stonington in ye State of Connecticut, with a quantity of Rum, Sugar & Wine on Board said Vessels, as your Excellency will see by their Papers—The Gentlemen had proper Clearances & passes, yet as they were given previous to ye Act's taking place, & ye Goods still in ye State, thot it my duty, according to ye Tenor of 2^d Act, to detain them untill they had gotten a permit to pass from ye same Authority that pass'd ye non-Exportation Act¹

His Excellency
Governor Greene—

I am with Esteem your Excellency's
most obedient & very humble Serv^t
I. Angell, Col.

But soon the long inactivity, so conducive to infractions of orders and to poor discipline, approached its end. In early October while plans were being made to construct barracks for the regiment, news came that a fleet of 57 sail, of which 34 were ships, had arrived at Newport, and on the 13th Colonel Angell sent out a patrol boat to reconnoitre along the coast of Conanicut Island. The party landed and nearly succeeded in taking off some horses, but being discovered were obliged to flee, after which the scouting party continued on their mission, and were attacked by a party of light horsemen which followed along the shore. On the 14th, orders were received to notify General Gates of any movement of the enemy, and that the regiment was under marching orders, all detachments to be called in.¹ Close watch

¹ See *Diary* under date of 3d October, 1779. The Governor permitted the sloops to pass. The following day another sloop was permitted to pass on showing an order from the Board of War at Boston to purchase cheese for the navy.

was now kept on the enemy, and on the 20th a scouting party sent over to Conanicut by Colonel Angell brought off an inhabitant of the island, who gave information that the enemy were preparing to evacuate, had gotten all their baggage and heavy guns on board ship, and had destroyed the platforms of their North Battery the day before. The following day General Stark came into the camp, and information was received that before the regiment marched westward, to join the "Grand Army," it would be sent over to Rhode Island.

The British fleet finally got away on the 25th, until then detained by adverse winds, and on the next day Colonel Angell's regiment occupied Newport.¹ The crossing was made with difficulty, on account of heavy seas, two of the boats being wrecked. The Colonel sailed around to Newport Harbor, entering the harbor at half after eight in the morning. The troops landed on Conanicut, marched across to the Ferry, and were brought over in boats procured by Colonel Angell. On the next two days Colonel Angell inspected the British works, which he notes as "Some of the Beautifullest works that I ever saw in my life." The regiment remained at Newport, and in the meantime Colonel Greene's regiment moved to Goat Island. Orders were received, 5th November, for all the Continental regiments to move west. Colonel Angell rode by way of Providence, crossing Bristol Ferry, while the regiment proceeded by boat to the west shore, and on the 8th, being a mile and half west of Greenwich, were rejoined by their Colonel. Livingston's and Webb's regiments marched on the 10th November, and Jackson's from Providence, the day before. Angell's, Greene's, and Sherburne's marched on the 11th.

Colonel Angell noted in his Diary his arrival in Danbury under date of 25th November, "where I found the regiment. Colonel Olney and Major Thayer were quartered in a grand house occupied by the widow Wollsey of Long Island." Orders had originally been issued for the brigade to march for their cantonment

¹ When the enemy marched out from Newport "all the houses were closed, by General Prescott's order; not a man or woman was allowed to look out of the windows or to be on the street; the patrols were directed to enforce this, under penalty of firing at those whose curiosity might tempt them." *Diary of Fichtelberger*, quoted by v. Eelking.

near Morristown, on the 29th, but bad weather, followed by word that the bridge over the Croton River had broken down, delayed the departure until the 5th December. Colonel Angell, after inspecting his regiment, had gone directly to West Point, and there received orders for the commanding officer of the brigade, if there was not an English fleet in the Sound, to march at once to join the army in the Jerseys.

The Orderly Book shows that General Stark was at Pompton on the first of December, having preceded his brigade. The heavy snows of the first few days in December are noted by Colonel Angell in his Diary, and it is remarkable that on the fifth, the day the march was resumed, in spite of the snowfall that day, and the "exceeding cold," the regiment marched eighteen or twenty miles. The route was by way of Crompond, Kings Ferry, Sufferns, Pompton, to Morristown. The last day's march, through mud, with water at times to the men's knees, was sixteen miles. Other days the march was twenty and twenty-two miles, and the roads bad and hilly.

On arrival at Morristown, the brigade was encamped about three miles from the town, which during the Revolution had a population of between three and four hundred. Unfortunately Colonel Angell's diary for the months following his arrival at Morristown, is lost. There is a hiatus from 13th December, 1779, to 10th August, 1780, a period of great interest. The Orderly Books cover a portion of this period, but from the 12th February to the 1st May, and after the 6th June, those also fail us. In February, Congress ordered that all Continental battalions should be furnished with State flags, and that the field should be of the color of the facings prescribed for the uniforms. The facing of the regiments from New England was white, the regulation uniform itself being blue.¹ Thus each of the standards of the New

¹ Before leaving Rhode Island, orders had been received to clothe the Rhode Island Continental regiments in blue and white, and Jackson's, Smith's, and Henley's in blue and buff. In December, 1779, the General Assembly of Rhode Island voted that every commissioned officer in the Continental battalions commanded by Colonel Christopher Greene and Colonel Israel Angell be supplied with clothing for the year 1780, as follows: one hat, coat, waistcoat, pair breeches, pair boots, two pair of shoes, three pair of stockings, four shirts, and two pocket handkerchiefs.

England regiments showed a white field,¹ upon which appeared the coat of arms of the State. In Angell's Orderly Books for the spring of 1780 there is frequent mention of the standards or colors of the manoeuvring battalion to be supplied by the Pennsylvania division or by Clinton's brigade, and it may be that as yet Rhode Island and many of the other regiments did not possess a stand of colors.

The following letter written by Colonel Angell, directly to the Commander-in-Chief, shows what minor matters the latter allowed to be brought to his notice, and how accessible he was to his regimental commanders:

Morristown 8th April 1780

Dear Gen!

Am sorry to have occasion to trouble your Excellency upon so disagreeable an Affair. Lieut^t John Hubbart of my Regim^t had a Furlough granted him ye 2nd of Jany. last, for 80 Days, which expir'd ye 21st Day of March past—The 3rd instant ye Regim^t was mustered & inspected—Lieut^t Hubbart had not returned at this Time; but Cap^t Tew who had been at Morris-Town that morning returned while ye Regim^t was on ye Parade & informed me that Lieut^t Hubbart had arrived in Town ye Evening before; & would be in Camp before ye Regim^t. was dismiss'd—upon which I alter'd ye Muster-Rolls & return'd him present. Lieut^t Hubbart not returning this Day, the 4th I sent a Serg^t to him with a Billet in ye following words, or words to ye same purport; Viz.—Sr, I am surprised at your absence from ye Regim^t. You must be sensible that you have already overstaid your Furlough a number of Days; Yesterday ye Regim^t was muster'd & inspected; & upon Capt. Tew's informing me that you was in Morristown, have return'd you present—Upon receipt of this, shall expect you will immediately join y^e Regim^t; otherwise I shall be under ye disagreeable necessity of returning you absent without leave. The Serjt^t returned & bro't me ye inclos'd Billet from Lieut^t Hubbart here ye matter rested this Day. The 5th ye Officers were call'd upon to bring in their Rolls once more, & Return him Absent without leave—Between ye hours of 11 & 12 A. M. Lieut^t Hubbart arriv'd in Camp, and as he had conducted, tho't it my duty to order him

¹ In 1882 Rhode Island changed the white field of her flag to blue, and thus it remained until 1897, when it was changed back to white. It is said that the State troop flag in 1780 showed a white field, charged with the State arms, and a blue canton showing 13 stars, this latter borrowed from the national ensign. Presumably each regiment also carried the national colors, or was supposed to.

in Arrest, which was immediately done. But from Lieut Hubbart's former Conduct & his being sensible of his Error now, am induc'd to believe that ye fault he has now committed, arose from inadvertance, & not from a wilfull Breach of Orders. Therefore, having given a Narrative of ye Affair, & admitted him Bearer of ye Same, if it be your Excellency's Pleasure to overlook ye Arrest—But submit it wholly to your better Judgement.

His Excellency,
Gen^l Washington

I am Your Excellency's Obedient
and very humble Serv^t
I. Angell

Captain Thomas Hughes, in whose behalf the following certificate was prepared, had been wounded at the battle of Long Island, by a musket ball through the hips, and was disabled until November, 1777. Whatever the cause, the trouble was probably adjusted between the parties concerned:

Quarters near Morristown, 20th April 1780.

WHEREAS, Adjutant Thos. Waterman of my Regiment (as I have been informed) has impeached ye Character of Capt. Thomas Hughes, Pay-master of s^d Regiment. In justice to my self and Capt. Hughes, Do, hereby declare and make known to all whom it may concern, That I have been intimately acquainted with Capt. Hughes since ye Army lay before Boston; great part of which Time he has served in ye Regiment I have had ye honour to Command, and in every respect to my knowledge, has behav'd as an honest worthy Gentlemen and a good officer; who has fought bled and suffered in his Countries Cause—and now after a series of sufferings, perhaps unparrallel'd in History, to have his Character impeach'd thro' malignity, must be so cruel as to wreck ye Breast of every compassionate being. The weight of an accusation from abandon'd Robbers, I shall leave to ye impartial World to Judge of.

Whom it may concern.

Israel Angell, Col.

Henry Sherburne, formerly of the Army of Observation, had been commissioned as colonel, and given one of the additional battalions raised by order of Congress, December, 1776, and had participated in the Rhode Island campaign. His regiment was part of Stark's brigade. Its enlisted personnel was from various states, all of the New England States being represented. On the 2d May, the men in his regiment were transferred to the line

N^o. 8.

Quarters near Morristown, 20th April 1780

Whereas, Adjutant Thos: Waterman of my Regiment
(as I have been inform'd) has impeach'd y^e Character
of Capt: Thomas Hughes Pay-master of S^t Regiment.
In justice to my self and Capt: Hughes, Do, hereby
declare and make known to all whom it may concern,
That I have been intimately acquainted with Capt:
Hughes since y^e Spring lay before Boston; great part
of which Time he has serv'd in y^e Regiment I have had
y^e honour to Command, and in every respect to my
knowledge, has behav'd as an honest worthy Gentleman
and a good Officer; who has fought — bled and suffered
in his Countries Cause. And now after a series of
sufferings, perhaps unparallel'd in History, to have his
Character impeach'd thro' malignity, must be so cruel as
to wrench y^e Breast of everij compassionate being.
The weight of an accusation from abandon'd Robbers, I
shall leave to y^e impartial World to Judge of.

Whom it may concern.

Israel Angell Col

regiments from those States in which they claimed residence, the men from Rhode Island being ordered to report to Colonel Angell. On the 4th May a return for the regiment showed present 216 men and officers. The payrolls of Angell's regiment are extant for the months of January to May inclusive.

The regiment was composed of nine companies, including a company of light infantry. The field and staff consisted of Colonel, Israel Angell; Lieutenant Colonel, Jeremiah Olney; Major, Simeon Thayer; Paymaster, Captain Thomas Hughes; Quartermaster, Thomas Sayles; Adjutant, Thomas Waterman; Surgeon, Samuel Tenney; and Surgeon's Mate, Elias Cornelius.

The depreciation in the currency is illustrated in a startling manner. Colonel Angell's pay for the month was \$75, and he was allowed \$500 a month for subsistence. His entire pay had the purchasing value of about \$15. in hard money.

The changes being made in the organization of the army, led Colonel Angell to address the following letter to General Poor:

Quarters Morris-Town May 1st 1780

S^r

The occasion of my troubling you with a line at this time is relative to the present Situation of my Regiment. We are the only one from the State of Rhode Island annexed to the Sixteen additional Regiments, which to me is not an Agreeable Circumstance—and as the Brigade to which we now Stand in Relation is so much reduced and must Soon be more So, by reason of the multiplicity of discharges given the three years men, tis more than probable this will occation its being Brigaded a new—let this be as it may. I Should think my Self happy to have my Regiment join'd to your Brigade, if the Affair Could Consistantly be effected—and as the Committee of Congress is now arrived here to arrange or new moddle the Army (as I imagine) a most favourable opportunity presents for obtaining my Desire in this Respect. If, S^r, it would be agreeable to you to have my Troops (in number nearly 300 for the war) joined to those now under your Command, I Should be greatly gratified, and Should Esteem it as a Special favour if you would trouble your Self so much as Seasonably to write to the Committee on the Subject.

Am S^r with all due respect,
Your Obedient, Humble Servant

Bri: Gen^l Poor

Israel Angell, Col.
2nd Rhode Island Reg^t

The disbandment of Sherburne's regiment led several of the former officers, who for a time served in various capacities, to seek assignment to regiments of the establishment. Their opportunities would have been severely curtailed, had the General Assembly of the State been permitted to appoint others to fill any existing vacancies. Correspondence ensued between Colonels Greene and Angell, concerning this matter, who took the question up with Washington.

Camp, 23rd July 1780

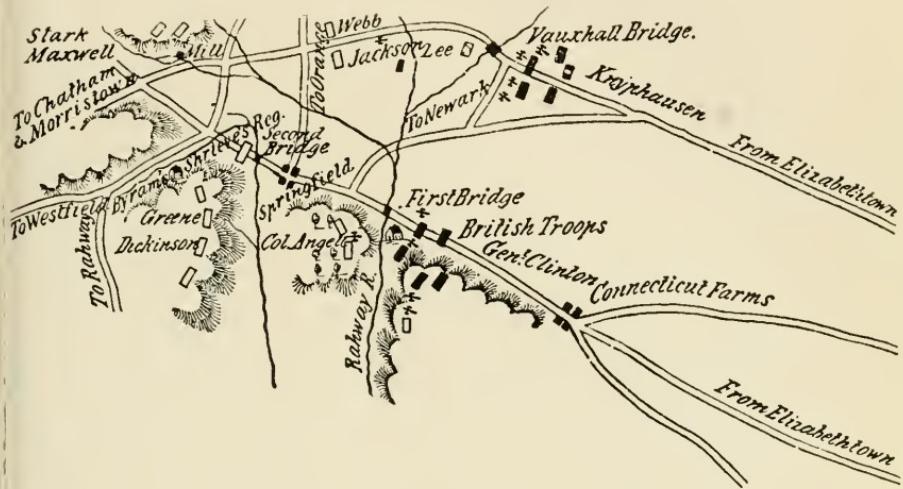
Dr Sir

Yours of the 15th Instant Came Safe to hand, and agreeable to Col. Greene's request apply'd imeadetly to his Excellency on the Subject of the new appointments of Officers, and by the Inclosed you will See how far it meets his Approbation.

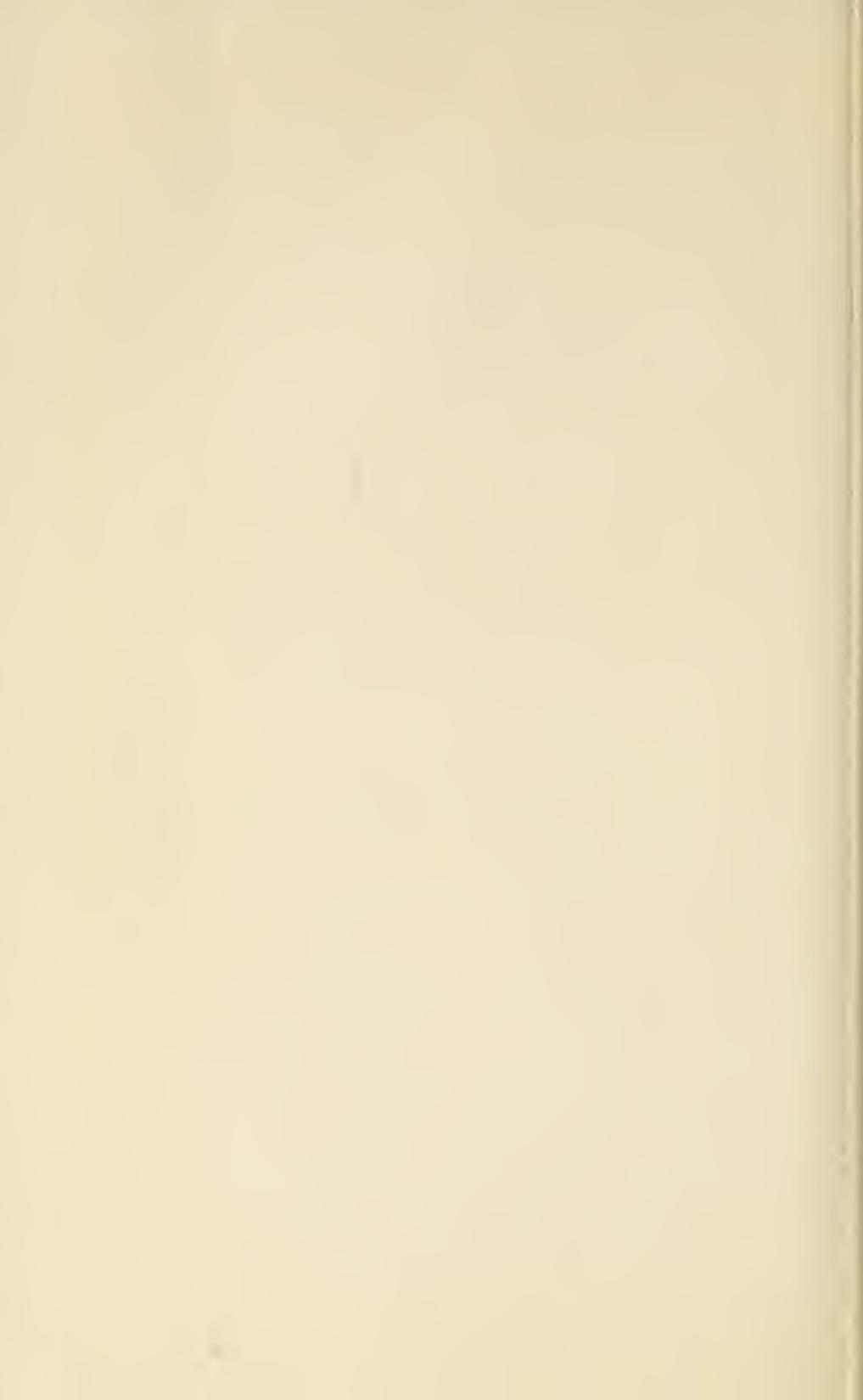
And I can further Assuer you that the appointment of officers into the line of the army beyond the rank of Ensigns is disapproved of here in the highest manner by all ranks of officers, and Cannot think but when the Gentlemen who may have had those appointments, Comes to know what Confusion it will occasion, (which of course will render their Situation in Service Disagreeable) Have the Good of their Country So much at heart as to desist from fishing in such troubled waters.

There is Lieutenant Sherburne and Ensign Sherman both of Col. Sherburne's Reg^t late Reduced, might come into your Regiment without injuring the rank of any officer, as it would be doing justice to the young men, and a Service to their Country in my Opinion. Could wish it might be agreeable to you. Lt Sherburne is here with us, and desires to know if it was agreeable to you for him to come into your Reg^t wheather you would have him Come on to join you, or wait till you join the Army. Ensign Sherman is a prisoner in New York, but it is expected will Soon be Exchanged.

We have been Some time past pleas'd with the Expectation of your Regiment joining us, but our hopes were blasted in this respect on hearing that they had returned to the State, if you Should have orders to join the Army again, would advise you to take some rout whereby you might Shun that enchanted Ground, at or near Hartford which you have twice attempted to get over. An Unlucky affair happen'd here the 25th Instant, the Pennsylvania line marched down to Bergin in order to bring off the Stock there on the neck, had Collected 290 head of Cattle, in Comming off made an Attack upon a block hous that the Enemy had there —but having no Mettle heaver than Six grounders, Could make but Little impression on their works, (though within Sixty rods)



Plan of battle-ground at Springfield, N.J.



them till they entered Elizabeth-Town, which place they reached about sun-set. Stark's brigade was immediately put in motion, on the first appearance of a retreat; which was so precipitate that they were not able to overtake them.

The enemy continued at Elizabeth-Town Point until 12 o'clock at night, and then began to cross their troops to Staten-Island; by 6 this morning they had totally evacuated the Point, and removed their bridge. Major Lee fell in with their rear guard, but they were so covered by their works, that little or no injury could be done them. He made some Refugees prisoners, and took some Tories, which they abandoned to expedite their retreat.

I have the pleasure to inform your Excellency, that the troops who were engaged behaved with great coolness and intrepidity, and the whole of them discovered an impatience to be brought into action. The good order and discipline which they exhibited in all their movements do them the highest honor. The artillery under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Forest was well served. I have only to regret the loss of Captain-Lieutenant Thompson, who fell at the side of his piece by a cannon ball.

It is impossible to fix with certainty the enemy's loss, but as there was much close firing, and our troops advantageously posted, they must have suffered very considerably.

I herewith inclose your Excellency a return of our killed, wounded, and missing, which I am happy to find is much less than I had reason to expect, from the heavy fire they sustained.

I am at a loss to determine what was the object of the enemy's expedition: If it was to injure the troops under my command, or to penetrate further into the country, they were frustrated. If the destruction of this place, it was a disgraceful one. I lament that our force was too small to save the town from ruin. I wish every American could have been a spectator; they would have felt for the sufferers, and joined to revenge the injury.

I cannot close this letter without acknowledging the particular services of Lieutenant-Colonel Barber, who acted as Deputy Adjutant-General, and distinguished himself by his activity in assisting to make the necessary dispositions.

I have the honor to be, &c.

N. GREENE, Major-General.

There were a number of prisoners made, but as they went on to Morris, I had no return of them.

His Excellency General WASHINGTON.

Stephen Olney, who took part in the engagement, until obliged to retire, having been wounded in the arm, mentions his partici-

pation in the battle very briefly. He asserted, alluding only to the post the regiment held in Springfield, that the Rhode Islanders were the only troops engaged, and that the regiment numbered only 160 rank and file, of whom 40 were killed and wounded.

"The gallant behaviour of Colonel Angell's regiment on the 23d instant at Springfield" is referred to by Washington in the following letter¹ to Governor Greene:

Headquarters, Rampaugh, 29th June, 1780

Sir:—I was yesterday honored with Your Excellency's favor of the 25th, enclosing a recommendation of the council of war, to General Heath, to order Colonel Greene's regiment to march immediately to join the army leaving as many officers as possible to bring forward the drafts directed to be raised for completing the battalions of the state. Colonel Greene's regiment being too small to afford any material reinforcement, and being usefully employed where it is at present, I have thought it most advisable for it to remain until the greater part of the drafts are collected; when I have desired General Heath to put them in motion, at the same time detaining a few officers to collect and bring up the remaining levies. Upon their joining the army, I shall dispose of them in such manner as will make the regiments equal in point of numbers.

The gallant behaviour of Colonel Angell's regiment on the 23d inst., at Springfield, reflects the highest honor upon the officers and men. They disputed an important pass with so obstinate a bravery that they lost upwards of forty in killed, wounded and missing, before they gave up their ground to a vast superiority of force.

The ready and ample manner in which your state has complied with the requisitions of the committee of co-operation, both as to men and supplies, entitles her to the thanks of the public, and affords the highest satisfaction to, sir.

Your Excellency's most obedient servant,
To Governor Greene. GEO. WASHINGTON

On receiving this letter the Governor communicated it to the General Assembly, who on the 7th July passed the following Resolve, expressing the highest satisfaction to be informed of the gallant behaviour of Colonel Angell's regiment.

¹ This letter as well as the Resolve given in the text, is from *Records of Rhode Island*, 9:147, 151.

TO THE MEMORY OF
COLONEL ISRAEL ANGELL
WHO COMMANDED THE 2nd RHODE ISLAND INFANTRY
AT THE
BATTLE OF SPRINGFIELD

23rd JUNE, 1780.

HEADQUARTERS, RAWPAUGH 28th JUNE, 1780.

SIR:

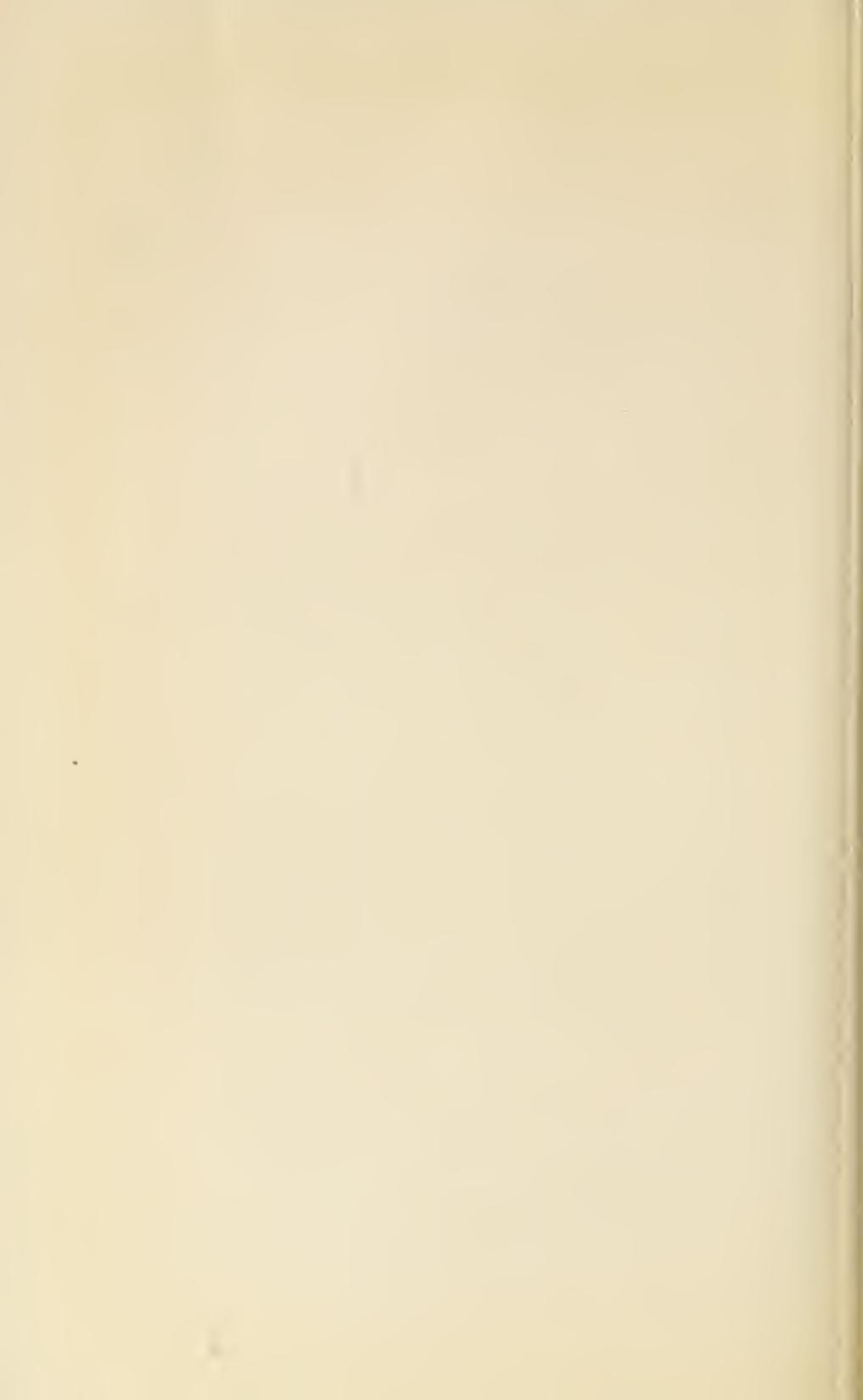
— — — THE GALLANT BEHAVIOUR OF COL. ANGELL'S REGIMENT
ON THE 23rd INST. AT SPRINGFIELD REFLECTS THE HIGHEST HONOUR UPON
THE OFFICERS AND MEN. THEY DISPUTED AN IMPORTANT PASS WITH
SO OBSTINATE A BRAVERY THAT THEY LOST UPWARDS OF FORTY
KILLED WOUNDED AND MISSING, BEFORE THEY GAVE UP THEIR GROUND
TO A VAST SUPERIORITY OF FORCE. — — —

YOUR EXCELLENCY'S MOST OBEYENT & SERVANT.

GEO. WASHINGTON

To
GOVERNOR GREENE,
COL. REGT., VOLUNTEER.

Tablet on Bridge at Springfield, New Jersey



THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF RHODE ISLAND TO COLONEL ISRAEL ANGELL, OFFICERS AND MEN, BELONGING TO THE SECOND RHODE ISLAND REGIMENT:

State of Rhode Island, &c.

In General Assembly.

Providence, July 7th, 1780.

Gentlemen:—It gives the General Assembly the highest satisfaction to be informed, in a letter from His Excellency General Washington, that “The gallant behaviour of Col. Angell’s regiment on the 23d of June, at Springfield, reflects the highest honor on the officers and men; that they disputed an important pass with so obstinate a bravery, that they lost upwards of forty in killed, wounded, and missing, before they gave up the ground to a vast superiority of force.”

This honorable testimony of the good services of a regiment, which has ever done honor to our state, by their bravery on all occasions in the hour of danger, adds to the character they have always sustained in the American army, and the sufferings they have cheerfully undergone in the defence of the rights of their country, excite the warmest gratitude of the General Assembly, who are always disposed to reward merit so distinguished. We condole with those who suffer from the wounds they have received. But as they are the badges of bravery, it might be some consolation to the sufferers that they thereby have a most indisputable claim to the esteem and respect of their country.

We cannot omit this opportunity of returning our most sincere thanks to the officers and soldiers in general, belonging to the regiment, for that bravery, patriotism, and perseverance, and those military virtues manifested on all occasions so similar to those exhibited by the famous legions of ancient Rome, in the shining periods of the history of that republic; and it gives us the most sensible pleasure to reflect that the historic page of America will not pass over in silence the services of a regiment of ours so meritorious.

It gives us great anxiety that, from the unhappy situation of our currency for several years, past, the pay of the regiment has fallen so far short of their services. When we have taken measures for making payment, which we thought would be adequate the depreciation of the money has defeated our intention. The great exertions we have been obliged to make on account of the enemy having had possession of Rhode Island, have prevented our doing for the regiment what we wished. And from causes which we could not prevent, it has so happened that a large balance has now become due to the regiment on account of the depreciation. We feel the obligation, and are anxious to discharge it; but the calls of the present campaign are great and

urgent. We have therefore now been able only to send you the sum of £21,792, as a small part of the balance. But the regiment may be assured that as the General Assembly as well as the people at large, have the highest sense of their merit, and are anxious to make them full and ample compensation. That at the next session of the General Assembly, which will be on the third Monday of July instant, the most certain and effectual measures will be taken for paying a very considerable part of the remaining balance.

We have received Col. Angell's letter of the 30th ult., and have ordered the shirts and overalls which he wrote for to be forwarded, as soon as possible to the regiment, and shall make every exertion in our power that the pay, clothing, and supplies from the state shall in future be made in the most punctual manner. We are, gentlemen, with esteem and gratitude,

Your most obedient, humble servants.

Signed at the request, and in behalf of the
General Assembly,

WILLIAM GREENE.

To Col. Angell and the other officers and men of the Second Rhode Island Battalion, in the army of the United States.

The destruction of Springfield in this abortive attempt to penetrate the passes of the Short Hills, and the earlier burning of the village at Connecticut Farms, led to the execration of the British, and it is good to learn from the testimony of a young English officer, George Mathew, present on the occasion, that there were strict orders against burning the houses, but that the men got out of hand, and could not be controlled by their officers.¹ It is well to know both sides, for there is always two sides to any story.

The excesses of the enemy are always a fruitful theme for orators, for writers upon occasion of the recurring anniversary dates, and of course for either party engaged, at the time. It is not to be doubted that in the many punitive expeditions undertaken by the British, as well as upon the raids, and during their retreat from Philadelphia across New Jersey, unwarrant-

¹ *Historical Magazine*, I: 102. Lieutenant Mathews was aide-de-camp to his uncle, General Mathews. His account differs little from that given in the text, except the burning of Connecticut Farms is mentioned as taking place on the retreat of the morning of 7th June. He gave the British loss as fully five hundred, and the purpose that of bringing on a general engagement.

able damage and personal injuries were inflicted. Washington in his letters, and Greene in his, refer to the looting of friends committed by some of our own soldiery. The Orderly Books abound with mention of court martials for stealing, abuse of individuals, and like misdemeanors. After the battle of Springfield, while Greene was in command in New Jersey, he was obliged to ask permission from Washington to execute men of the Pennsylvania brigade who had been taken red-handed in robbery. Colonel Angell in his diary under date of 26th August, 1780, alludes to this matter, "So we rode out to meet them, which we did in Bergen, seven miles from their camp, they had just hanged a man for plundering the inhabitants. He was a Pennsylvanian, one of Col. Humpton's Regt. He was hanged by orders of the Commanding Officer without a trial." This was on his visit to Major Thayer at the Light Infantry camp, where a company of his regiment was stationed. Active warfare allows scope for the unregenerate to exercise all the miserable traits of his character.

In spite of the efforts to keep the two Continental battalions recruited to full strength there was still lacking in July, 1780, of the required quota, 163 men. In June an attempt had been made by the State authorities to obtain Washington's permission to forward the men in Greene's regiment, the "black regiment" so called, to be incorporated with Angell's, expecting in that way to encourage enlistment in Greene's regiment, which still remained in Rhode Island. This proposition Washington negatived. Nor did he want a distinctively "black corps" maintained in the main army. He said in a letter to General Heath, of date of 29th June:

It would make a very great inequality in the strength of the two regiments, more especially as Col^o Angell's sustained the loss of forty killed, wounded and missing by their gallant behaviour on the 23d Inst. at Springfield. Instead, therefor of the mode proposed by the Assembly, I think it will be best to march Col^o Greene's Regt and the Levies when collected, to the Army, and upon their arrival here, so arrange and model them, as to level the Regiments. The objection to joining Greene's Regiment may be removed by dividing the Blacks in such a manner, between the two as to abolish the name and appearance of a Black Corps. Under these circumstances I would not have Col^o

Greene's Regiment move this way until the greater part of the levies have come in; they may then march together. . . . they may in the meantime be employed in training and cutting fascines.

General Greene wrote to President Joseph Reed of Pennsylvania on 29th June, from Ramapaugh (Ramapo), which had become temporarily his headquarters after Knyphausen had been driven from New Jersey, relative to supplies from that state, "We are now in the greatest distress imaginable. The army without tents, and the officers without baggage for want of teams. When the officers see the country full of horses, and abound with every comfort, and feel themselves oppressed on every side with difficulties and distress, they are almost ready to mutiny; nor do I believe they will bear it much longer."

Throughout the summer the army was largely dependent upon supplies and forage which was obtained by requisition upon the inhabitants, a course of action which was forced upon Washington and his Quartermaster General, Greene, by the neglect of the country to furnish subsistence to the army. Washington addressed the Committee of Co-Operation from his Headquarters at Orangetown, 17th August, 1780, giving an abstract of the returns of men furnished to the 16th of August (but he took pains to add that "the return of the Rhode Island recruits is of the last of July; more may have since joined"), from which it is learned that 6143 men had been received on account of the 16,540 called for. Rhode Island was represented by 502 men, and was deficient but 198, the best showing of all the states; while Pennsylvania and New York lacked the greater part of their quota, the former having supplied less than Rhode Island, out of a quota five times as large, and the latter still less. Fifty-two hundred and thirteen of the 6143 men then with Washington, were from New England. It is true that both Pennsylvania and New York were obliged to protect their frontiers, just as until the departure of the British from Newport in the fall of 1779, Rhode Island had to guard her coast line of more than sixty miles.¹ Nor must it be forgotten that Connecticut was forced to

¹ The population of Rhode Island in 1782, was 51,869. Of these 9023 were white males between the ages of 16 and 50; 11,752 were males under 15

guard her coast towns, which during the entire war were exposed to the menace of the enemy fleet, and raiding parties from Long Island and New York.

Washington in this information for the Committee also stated the number of "militia for three months" who had taken the field under his orders, a total of 3700, comprising 1300 from New York and New Jersey, which included the short campaign around Springfield, and 2400 from Massachusetts and New Hampshire.

It was with this inadequate army that he defended the country about New York, and kept the enemy bottled up, though as he related to Governor Trumbull in October, they had it in their power to ravage the country wherever they pleased, and the preceding spring "threatened the destruction of all our baggage and stores, saved by a good countenance more than by an ability to defend them," referring to the gallant behaviour of Colonel Angell's regiment at Springfield, and the spirited and bold manner in which General Greene's small force had beaten back Knyphausen.

Colonel Angell's correspondence with the Rhode Island authorities concerning the needs of his regiment, both regarding pay and supplies, can be followed by copies of letters taken from his Letter Book:

Camp English Neighbour Hood 31st August 1780.

Sir

Inclos'd have Sent your Excellency a pay Abstract of my Regt for their propotion of the 75.000 pounds, ordered in July Session, to be paid to the line of the State, on the depreciation Acc^t also a list of the officers and men who Rec^d the 21.792 pounds Sent in by the state in august 1780 towards the depreciation account, and by Comparing this list with the abstract, it will appear that the money fell short of paying the Regiment (in the proportion of one hundred dollars for a pound of their monthly pay) one Lt and 16 men Except 30 Dollars.

The Act of the General Assembly passed the 2nd July 1780. Resolving that So much of the Confiscated lands in the State Should be Set off as would discharge the ballances due to the officers and Soldiers of the Continental Battalions for the depre-

and 2563 were males above 50. In addition there 511 negro, 63 mulatto and 67 Indian males between the ages of 16 and 50.

ciation of their wages, I have laid them before the officers, but as the Committee for ascertaining the Ballances due them, and for apprising the lands, were all appointed by the State, they declined excepting the land on those terms; and as they seem'd much divided in opinion about the matter; left them to act their own pleasuer, as for my own part what little may be due to me. Should be willing to receive the land, and have no objection to the Gentlemen who are appointed to Set off and apprise the Same.

I am with all due Respect your
Most obedient Humble Serv^t

Gov^r Greene

Israel Angell

Camp Tunrapee 17th September 1780.

Gentlemen,

The distrest Situation of the troops under My Command for the want of Blankets, makes it Necessary in the Discharge of my duty, to make Application to you for Some Relief, frequent Application has ben made to the Cloathers have and have not ben able to get a Single one, nor See no prospect of getting any, and have but 37 in the Regiment Exclusive of the light Infantry Company which was Detached, and had no Return from them; the Cold Season is advancing which will Soon make it very Disagreeable for the men to live in the field without Blankets, and prejudicial to their health, Could the Blankets possibly be procured, Breeches, Shirts and Stockings or Overalls, the men might make out comfortably till late in the winter, by reason of their Cloathings Coming to hand so late for the last year. The total of the Regiment Commission Non. Commissioned officers & privats is 295.

Governor and Council,
State of Rhode Island

I am Gentlemen with Respect
and Esteem your most Obed. &
very Hbl Serv.

Israel Angell

During August and the following month, Colonel Angell was often ill, suffering from some malady which caused him great suffering, and often incapacitated him from duty. The regiment followed the fortunes of the main army, simply changing their camp from time to time, and participating in the practise manœuvres.

The regiment had rejoined the army 27th June at Ramapo; during July it was at Preakness, and on the 31st crossed the

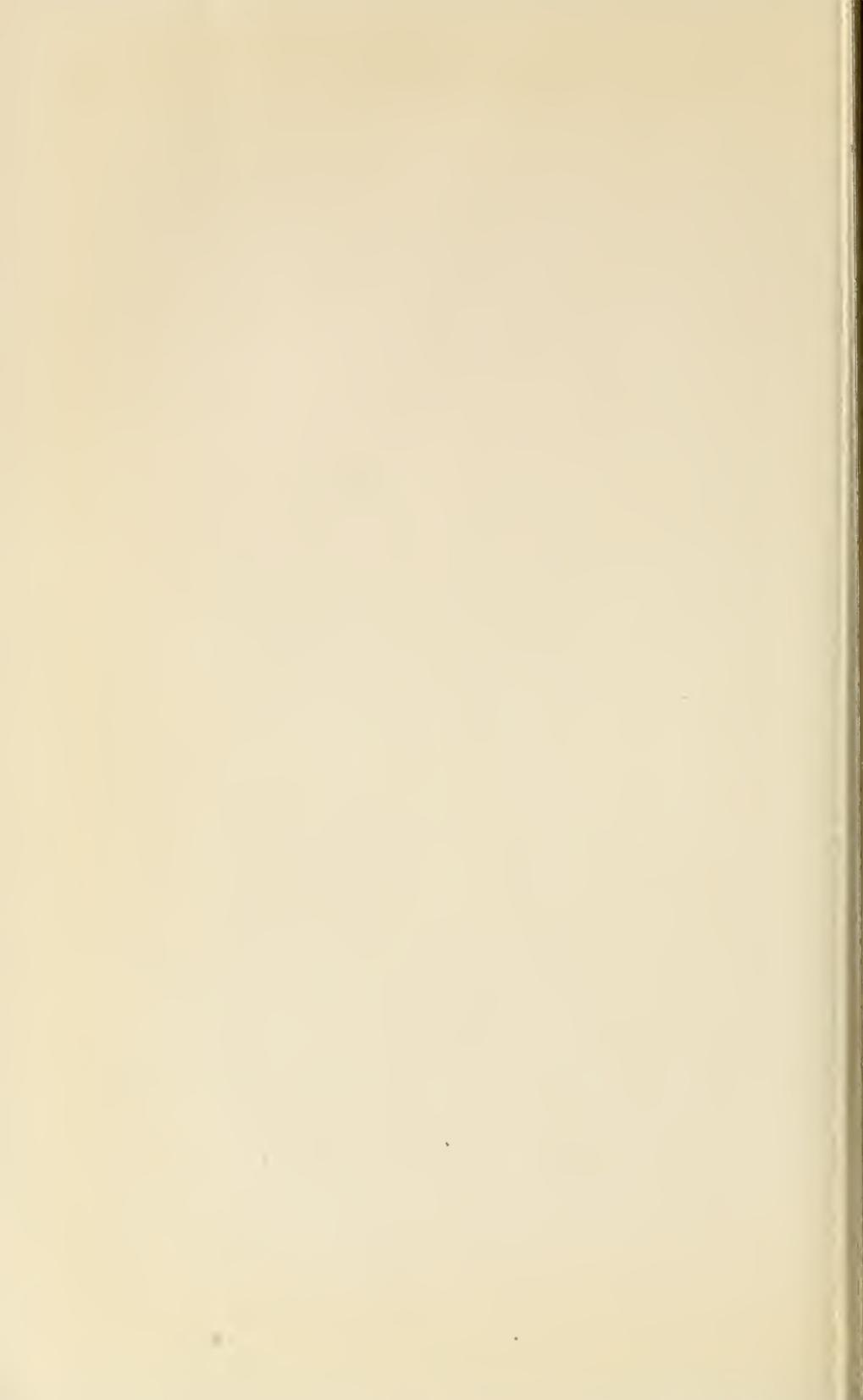
8^o. 24 Camp Teennappie 17th September 1790

Gentlemen,

The distressed situation of the troops under
My Command for the want of Blankets, makes it nec-
essary in the discharge of my duty, to make Application
to you for some Relief: frequent Applications ^{had}
been made to the Cloathery here and have not been able
to get a single one, nor see no prospect of getting any,
and have but 37 in the Regiment Exclusive of the Light
Infantry Company which was Detached, and had no
Return from them; the Cld Season is advancing which
will soon make it very disagreeable for the men to lie
in the field without Blankets, and prejudicial to their
health. Could the Blankets possibly be procured. Broads
Shirts and Stockings, or Overalls, the men might make
out comfortably till late in the winter, by reason
of their Cloathing: Coming to hand so late for the last
year. The total of the Regiment Commissioned Non Commissioned
Officers and privates is 295.

Governor and Council
State of Rhode Island }

I am Gentlemen with Resps
and return your most Respc
very etc: Inv: Col Angell



Hudson at Kings Ferry, on tidings that the English fleet with many transports had sailed east to attack Rochambeau. The feint against New York brought the enemy back, and on the 5th the army recrossed the Hudson, and was encamped near Dobb's Ferry, at Tappan (Orangetown) 8th August, thence moved to Ten Eyck on the 23d. Colonel Angell's diary for this period has been printed. He notes that they encamped on a large plain at a place called Liberty Pole, near English Neighborhood, and that it "was an exceeding hot day." It was during this march, that a regiment under command of Major John Porter, having halted for a rest, was passed by General Poor, who ordered Major Porter to march his men at once. Giving the order, which was not obeyed promptly, while the men still loitered, Poor returned and reprimanded Porter severely for the lack of discipline his men had showed. Resenting this, Poor having told Porter he would waive his rank, the latter challenged the General and a duel was fought, resulting in General Poor being wounded. The matter was hushed up, and on the death of General Poor on the 8th September, as noted by Colonel Angell, the cause of his death was given out as putrid fever. Soon after, Porter was relieved of his command, but later was assigned as aide-de-camp to Lafayette. Porter had been educated for the ministry, but never ordained. He was a good officer, and being offended followed but the custom of the day. General Poor was buried 10th September at Hackensack with much pomp and ceremony, and Colonel Angell with "a numerous concourse of people" was present.

Depreciation of the Continental currency continued. In September, Rhode Island advanced £58,712 to Angell's regiment on account of depreciation, this being their proportion of £75,000 heretofore ordered paid the regiment.

The arrival off Newport of the French fleet under Rochambeau on the 10th July, was known in camp 14th July, and was announced in General Orders on the 20th. Later came the news of the disastrous defeat of General Gates at Camden, which reached camp on the 5th September. During these months the weather had been extremely hot and dry. On the 4th September the regiment was encamped with the rest of the main army at Steenrapie, on the 20th returned to Tappan, and on the 13th was

reviewed by Washington with a number of chiefs of the Oneida Nation in his retinue. On the 17th Washington set off for Hartford to meet Rochambeau, but before he departed he assented to Colonel Angell's request for a Court of Enquiry concerning his behaviour on the 23d June. For some unknown reason there had been spread a "report very prejudicial to my character," writes the Colonel. On the 18th of August the officers of his regiment requested him to ask for a Court of Enquiry. Undecided whether the malignant story circulated about him was worthy his consideration, he consulted Greene about it on the 10th September, who advised him to immediately ask for an investigation. He did this successfully the following day. The Order was issued the 12th,¹ the court sat on the 14th, and on the 18th its finding was announced in orders. It would seem from Colonel Angell's taking pains to have this made known in Providence, that the report had been traced to Rhode Island, very likely originating from some idle gossip, which took more than a month to reach camp.

Following is a copy of Colonel Angell's request for a Court of Enquiry, taken from his Letter-Book:

Camp Tunrappee 11th Sept: 1780.

Sir:

Thro a peculiar Misfortune, which it was not in my power to foresee or prevent, my position during the time my Regiment was Engaged at Springfield on the 23rd of June last, was Such as to give occasion for very Severe remarks on my Conduct, and Reports have since Spread which place my military Character in a very unfavourable light—The Reputation of an Officer and man of Honor ought ever to be esteem'd his most valuable Possession, the wounds therefore inflicted on mine, have given me the most Sensible pain, tho I am conscious it was not in my power to avoid the Circumstances that have occassion'd them, as passing over reports so highly Injurious to my Character

¹ Head Quarters Tunrappee Sept: 12th 1780

A Court of Enquiry is Ordered to Sett tomorrow Morning 9 o'Clock in the Presidents Marquee at the request of Col^r Angell to Examine into his Conduct in the action of Springfield, and Report their Opinion thereon.

Col. Nixon is appointed President, Lt Col^r Dehart and Vose, Majors Reid and Green Members, all witnesses and Persons Concerned are desired to attend.

would be a tacit acknowledgement of the Justice of them, I am under the disagreeable necessity of Applying to your Excellency for a Court of Enquiry, that the true Circumstances of the matter may be publickly Investigated and my Conduct placed in its proper light I flatter my Self your Excellency will enter so far into my feelings on the unhappy Occasion as to give me an Opportunity to vindicate my Character as Speedily as possible.

His Excellency Gen^l
Washington

I have the Honour to be your
Excellency's most Obedient
Humble Serv^t

Israel Angell

Immediately upon learning the report of the court, Colonel Angell addressed the publisher of the Providence *Gazette*, requesting him to make the result known:

Tunrapee, Sept^r 18, 1780.

Mr. Carter please to insert the following lines in your paper, which will oblige your friend and hum^{le} Serv^t

Israel Angell.

FROM THE PROVIDENCE "GAZETTE" TO THE PUBLIC.

Through Misrepresentation or Some means, a report was Spread in the Army which placed my Military Character in a very unfavourable light, as the reputation of an Officer, and man of Honor ought ever to be Esteem'd his most valuable possession, the wounds therefore inflicted on mine, laid me under the necessity of Applying to the Commander in Chief, for a Court of Enquiry that the true Circumstances of the matter might be publickly Investigated, and my Conduct Placed in its proper light. His Excellency was pleased to order a Court, of which the following is their Report,

Tunrapee Sept^r 18, 1780

At a Court of Enquiry Call'd by desire of Col. Angell to Enquire into a report Relative to his being absent from his Regiment in the Action at Springfield the 23rd of June last, Col^o Nixon President. The Court having heard and duly Considered the Evidences, are Unanimously of Opinion that Col^o Angell was in the Action at Springfield on the 23rd of June last with his Regiment, and in the Execution of his duty, and behaved like a Brave and Good Officer.—

Major General Greene Excepts and Approves of the Opinion of the Court.

The Commander in Chief being absent, the Command devolved upon General Greene—was the reason that the report was made to him.

Israel Angell.

Mr. Carter,
Printer in Providence.

While Washington was absent at Hartford occurred the treason of Arnold. Colonel Angell notes the event in his diary under 26th September:

The most extraordinary affair happened yesterday that ever has taken place since the War; General Benedict Arnold, who commanded at West Point, went to the enemy. His Excellency the Commander in Chief having been to Hartford to meet the French General and Admiral, was on his way to join the army, and yesterday the Adjutant General of the British army was taken at Tarrytown as a spy by three militia men. The news soon reached West Point, and on the appearance of his Excellency coming to the post, General Arnold went down to the river side with six men with him, got into a boat, went down the river to the English frigate that lay there, and went on board of her, and she immediately set sail for New York; and by the best information he had been carrying on a treacherous correspondence with the enemy, and had agreed to sell them that post with all the men, but Heaven directed it otherwise. On receiving this intelligence, the whole Army was ordered to be ready to march as soon as possible. We all turned out, went to cooking, and packing up their baggage the Pennsylvania line marched off and left their baggage to follow, it being expected that the Enemy would attempt to take West Point this night. The news come to us a little after midnight, had not this horrid Treason been discovered America would have received a deadly wound if not a fatal stab.

On the 28th with a number of officers, Angell rode to meet Washington, but the latter reached camp by another road. Angell noted that the “two prisoners” (Major André and Joshua Smith), were brought under guard to the Camp on the evening of the 28th. On the 29th Angell was Officer of the Day. This was the date of the Court Martial which condemned André to death as a spy, and on the 2d October he was hung.

Colonel Angell's diary ends with the month of September. On 1st October he wrote from Orangetown, by Captain Tew, to the Governor of Rhode Island, relative to the money due the regiment:

Camp Orange Town 1st Oct^r 1780

Gentlemen

These will be delivered you by Capt^t William Tew, who is sent (by leave obtained from The Commander in Chief and the Consent of the Officers of the Regiment) to receive the proportion of the 75.000 pounds, Ordered in July Sessions to be paid to the line of the State on the depreciation Account, the Abstract Assertaining the Regiments proportion of the money was Sent the 31st of August last, I have allso to inform you that it is the opinion of the Officers in General, that Receiving the Confiscated lands for the ballances due them would be attended with much Difficulty and perhaps Confusion among them in making a division of Said lands. They therefore decline taking the Same, My Sentiments on the matter was fully Exprest in my letter of the 31st of August to the Governor,—Gentlemen if you Recollect I wrote to you Some time last winter, Concerning promotions and new Appointments which had taken place in my Regiment by orders from Gen^l Gates, but was Informed by Lt Col^o Olney that the Assembly would not approve of the appointments except the Commander in Chief would Certify that, That number of Officers was Necessary in the Regiment, upon which I imeadetly applyed to his Excellency and procured Such a Certificate Signed by himself, Sent it on to the State Dereected to the Governor and Council, but have heard nothing of the Matter Since, Though I have wrote once before on the Subject. Therefore have reason to think that the letters have miscarried, or that the approbation of their Appointments was Sent to the board of war and are there mislaid, And as the Gentlemen have Serv'd a long time without their Commissions and are very Anxious to know whether they are to have them or not, often Applying to me on the Subject, beg the Council would be pleas'd to inform me by Capt Tew whether the letters ever come to hand, and if they did what is done on the matter,

I am Gentlemen your most Obd^t

The Governor and

Council State Rhode Island

Humble Serv^t

Israel Angell

General Greene was given the command of West Point and general direction of matters on the east of the Hudson river, and on the 7th October, four brigades, including Stark's,

marched for West Point, encamping the night of the 7th at Haverstraw. The garrison of West Point was about 3000 men. Stark's brigade was assigned to Fort Clinton. Greene received word of his appointment to the command of the Southern Department on the 16th, and the same day General Heath arrived from Rhode Island. On the 19th Colonel Sherburne, whose regiment had been "reduced" some time before, and who had become supernumerary, departed for Rhode Island.¹ Probably in November Colonel Angell obtained leave of absence and proceeded to Rhode Island, where he consulted with Colonel Christopher Greene concerning the reorganization of the Rhode Island regiment. On the 1st of January, 1781, he wrote to Washington, from Johnston:

On the arrival of the New Arrangement of the army sent me by Major Thayer I Applied to Col^o Greene and informed him that I thought it Necessary to send on a list of the Officers who tarried in Service, togeather with the names of those who Retired, to Your Excellency as soon as possible, (as he inclined to take the Regt) but he said he thought there was no necessity of being in a hurry about the matter, and as the time is now Come when by a Resolution of Congress the troops should have been in the field, and knowing that there has been no Arrangement as yet sent to your Excellency, has induced me to write, in order to Exculpate myself from blame, as I think it ought to have bin done a month before this, but being a Supernumery did not conceive it to be my duty to interfear in the matter further than I did.

I Expect to Come to the Army in a few days and bring some money for the Rhode Island Line from the State, Settle my public Acc^{ts} and retire, though I should have ben happy in Serving my Country to the Eand of the war, had I lived to seen that day, if my Services had ben necessary, as I Entered it in the earliest period. However I shall Ever stand ready to assist in the defence of my Country to the best of my Capacity and Risk of my life.

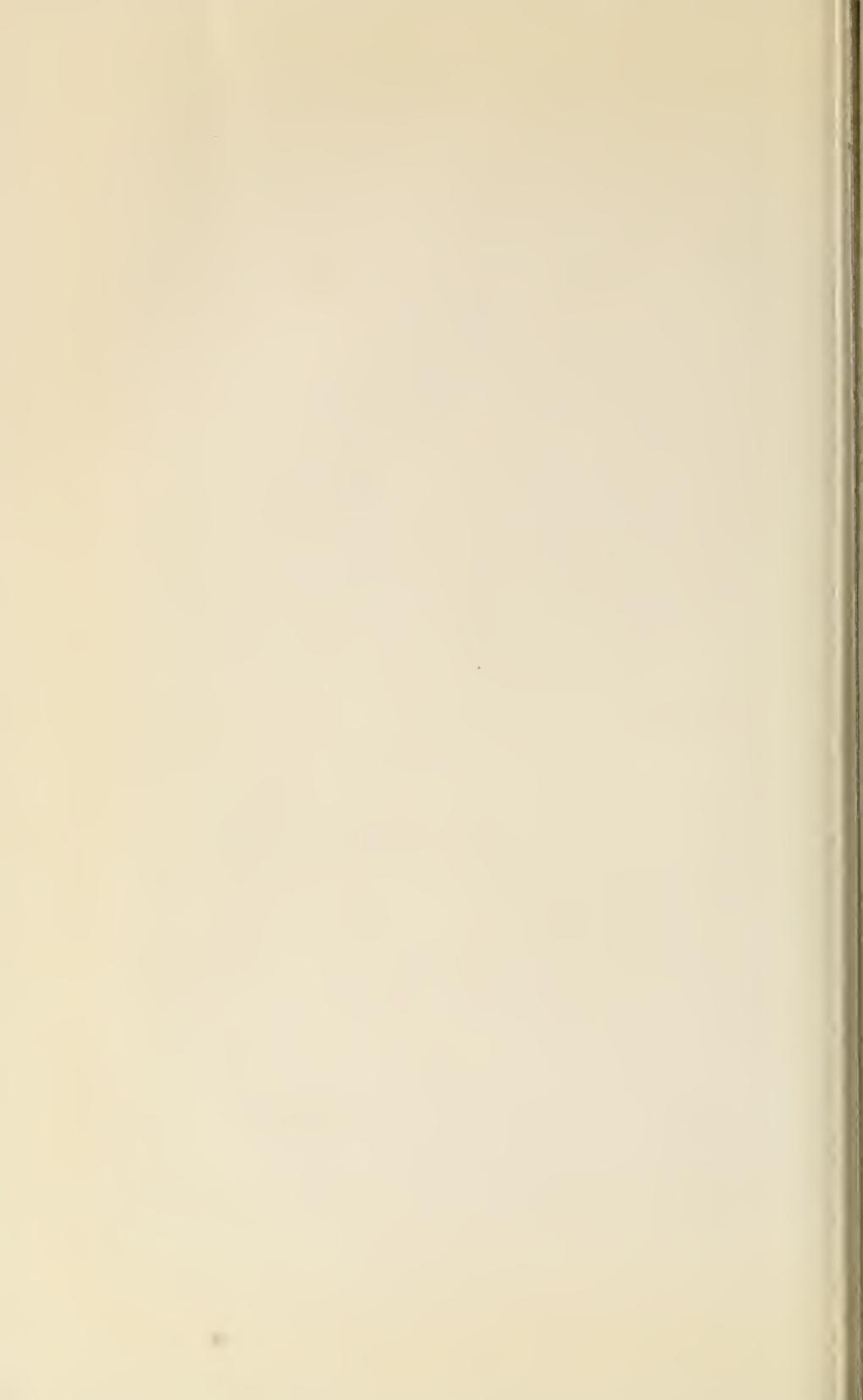
Congress had passed the Act alluded to on the 3d October, by which the two Rhode Island regiments were reduced to one regiment. The allusion to the forwarding of the official promulgation of the order by Major Thayer would seem to prove that Thayer had been left at Camp in command of the

¹ Greene's *Life of Greene*.

Johnston State Rhode Island 1 Janst 1781

On the arrival of the New Arrangement of the army sent me
by Major Thayer I applied to Col^l Greene and informed him that I
thought it necessary to send on a list of the Officers who turned in
Service, together with the names of those who Retired, to your
Excellency as soon as possible, (as he intended to take the Regt) but
he said he thought there was no necessity of being in a hurry
about the matter, and as the time is now come when by a Refor-
mation of Congress the troops should have been in the field, and
knowing that there has been no Arrangement as yet sent to
your Excellency, has induced me to write in order to Encumber
my self from blame, as I think it ought to have been done
a month before this, but being a Supernumerary did not conceive
it to be my duty to interfere in the matter further than I did,

I expect to come to the Army in a few days and
bring some money for the Bearer I have Lived from that Date, little
regard to publick Owe^r and action, though I should have been happy
in serving my Country to the end of the war, had I lived to see
that day, if my Services had been necessary, as I desired it in
the earliest period, However I shall ever stand ready to assist
in the defense of my Country to the best of my Capacity.



And risk of my life.

I am with Sentiments of Esteem

Your Excellency most Obedient
and most Humble Servt

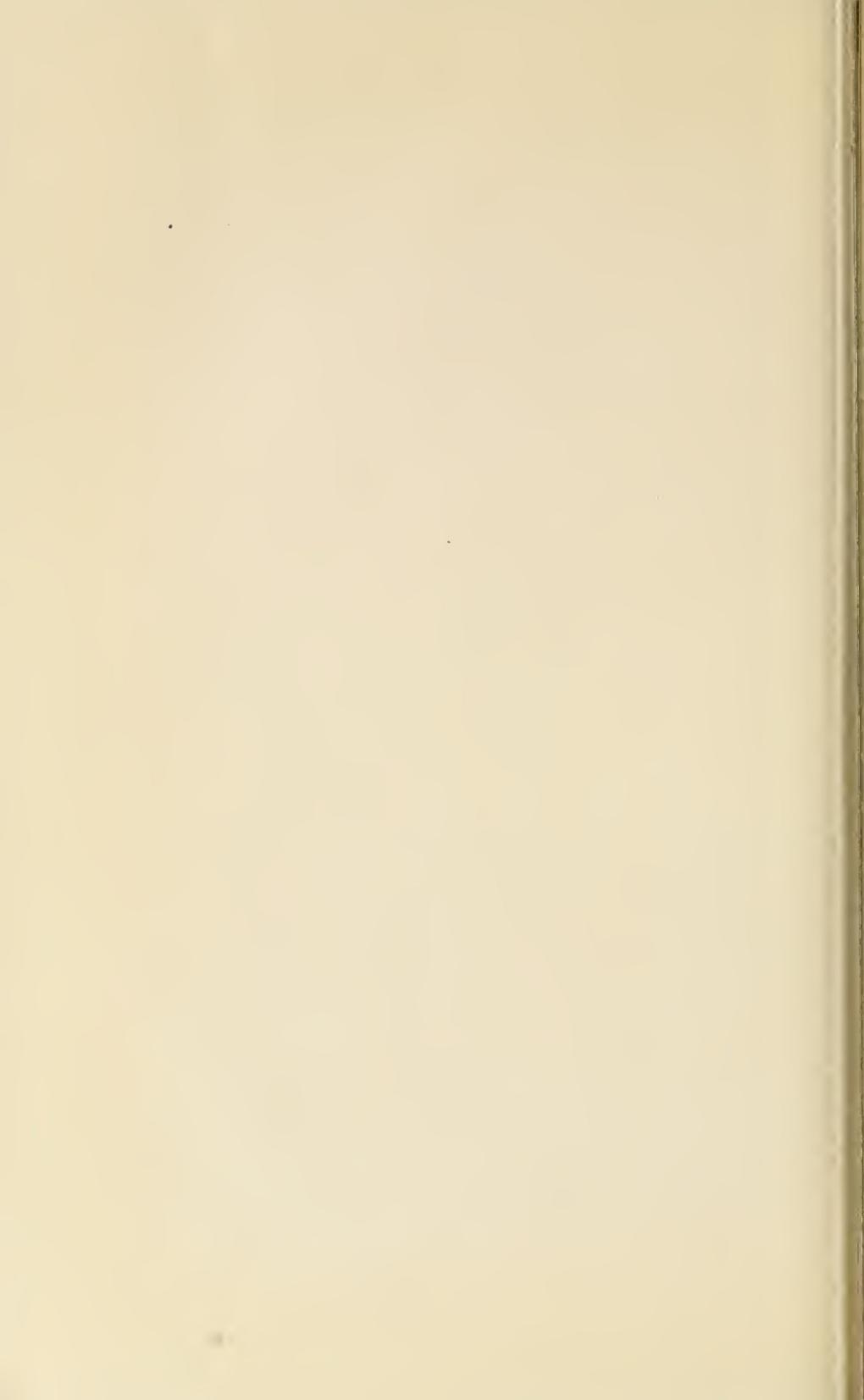
Israel Angel

His Excellency Gen^t Washington

Attestd to by me
Iacob Angel
No 120 Broadway

Aug 22
W^m H^r 1776
Recd by Col^o George Washington

Letter to General Washington



regiment. Washington's order to Colonel Greene to march his regiment from Rhode Island, and join the army at Peekskill, was dated 2d January, 1781. A captain and two subalterns were ordered to be left behind to obtain and forward recruits. (*Sparks MSS.* 59.) The regiment crossed the Hudson, and erected huts, naming their cantonment Rhode Island Village.¹ The actual consolidation of the two regiments took place on the 17th February. The field officers were Greene, Lieut.-Colonel Olney, and Major Ebenezer Flagg. The latter was in command of an outpost on the Croton River and while Colonel Greene was visiting this post, staying over night, it was attacked by Colonel Delancey with his dragoons, part of a refugee corps. Flagg was killed. Greene, fatally wounded, was forced to ride with his captors, succumbing to his wounds,² 13th May, 1781. The sword voted him by Congress was delivered to his family, after his death.

On the death of Colonel Greene, Jeremiah Olney took command of the Rhode Island regiment, as Lieut.-Colonel Commandant, and held the command until the regiment was discharged the service.

Colonel Angell's diary commences again on the 14th February, 1781, the day he left for West Point with money to pay off the men of his old regiment. Greene had preceded him, and taken over the command. On Angell's arrival he was received with cheers by his old command, and immediately took up the matter in hand, of paying off the troops. He had reached camp

¹ In a letter to General Heath, 12th November, Washington presents a tentative plan for the winter quarters of the army, when the levies leave on 1st January. He proposed to place the New Hampshire and Rhode Island troops at the gorge of the mountain, near the Continental village, who were to furnish a detachment more to the left, in the vicinity of Robinson's Mills. The territory south of the American lines was overrun with Cow-boys, marauders of the worst description, recruited from the desperate characters of both armies and the neighborhood. The name Cow-boys was generally given to those bands who adhered to the King, and Skinners to those who professed loyalty to the United States. Both were equally vicious, and attempts to suppress them led to many minor but stirring combats.

² *Narrative of Stephen Olney*, who was in command of the light infantry company of the regiment, and who was soon after detached with his company and ordered to Virginia, where he distinguished himself at the capture of Cornwallis at Yorktown.

on the 18th of February,¹ and just one month later, having settled his accounts, he returned to Rhode Island, reaching home on the 25th, and entering in his diary, "thus ends the service with me."

Washington in a letter to a member of a Committee of Congress, relative to General Greene's resignation as Quartermaster-General, August, 1780, took occasion to call to the attention of Congress a few plain truths. One paragraph is especially applicable to the services of Colonel Angell:

It does not require with you, I am sure, at this time of day, arguments to prove that there is no set of men in the United States, considered as a body, that have made the same sacrifices of their interest in support of the common cause, as the officers of the American army; that nothing but love of their country, of honor, and a desire of seeing their labors crowned with success, could possibly induce them to continue one moment in service; that no officer can live upon his pay; that hundreds having spent their little all in addition to their scanty public allowance, have resigned because they could no longer support themselves as officers; that numbers are at this moment rendered unfit for duty for want of clothing, while the rest are wasting their property, and some of them verging fast to the gulf of poverty and distress.

¹ It was on the 25th, while crossing the Hudson with Colonel Greene on the way to Headquarters, that Colonel Angell rescued Ensign Rogers who had fallen through the ice. Washington was in Rhode Island from 6th to 15th March, 1781, visiting both Newport and Providence.

Part III
Genealogical



THE FAMILY RECORD OF ISRAEL ANGELL

Israel Angell in 1800, or possibly the following year, drew off a record of his family. This is reproduced on opposite page. Some members of the family added the dates of death occurring later than 1800.

In addition to this record there exists in possession of Mr. H. I. Angell, the family Bible of Israel Angell, in which there appear a few additional items concerning the family. The latter record has been accepted where differences in dates are found. Information given by town records is scanty. From the various sources, including Avery F. Angell's "Genealogy of the Descendants of Thomas Angell," published in 1872, the following account of Colonel Angell's immediate family is compiled. No attempt is here made to record all his descendants.

ISRAEL ANGELL was born on Wednesday, 13 August, 1740, "Old Style" (24th August, present reckoning, which agrees with age given at death; but it is probable that in figuring the year of his birth, and having in mind "Old Style," Colonel Angell made an error of one year, which would make him in his ninety-first year at decease, not his ninety-second). He died 4th May, 1832.¹

He married 20 February, 1765, Martha, daughter of Stephen and Martha (Olney) Angell of Johnston, who was born 13 February, 1747, and who died 16 March, 1793, aged "46 years, 20 days."²

Colonel Angell married, second, Susanna Wight, widow, daughter of Consider and Dilly Luther, born 28 February, 1765, who died 17 May, 1824, when it was recorded that she had been a member of the Baptist Church for forty-two years. "Consider Luther, born 5 April, 1726, died 13 May, 1811". (*Family Bible.*)

¹ This date is from the Family Bible. According to the obituary notice printed at time of his death, the date was the 3d of May.

² If her age was reckoned according to birth date "New Style," she would have been thirty or thirty-one days more than forty-six years; but if her birth was 13th February "Old Style" she was born not in 1747 our reckoning, but in 1748, and her age at death would have been forty-five years. She was probably born 13th February, 1746-47 (equivalent to 24th February, 1747, "New Style").

Israel Angell

Colonel Angell married, third, 30 April, 1826, Sarah Angell, widow of Richard Angell of Smithfield, daughter of David and Elizabeth Wood of Rehoboth, Mass., born 16 (or 10) April, 1770; died 10 August, 1830, "aged 60 years, 3 months, 26 days." (*Bible.*) Rehoboth records give her birth as 4 April, 1770, and her first marriage, 13 February, 1791.

The will of Stephen Angell, dated 27 March, 1771, was proved 11 July 1772. To his son William he gave all his real estate in Johnston and Smithfield, and elsewhere, and all his right in the sawmill called Olney's Mills. He had already provided fully for his sons Christopher, Ezekiel, Charles, and James, and for his two daughters Sarah Eddy and Martha Angell, the latter upon their marriage. Sons Gideon and John received small legacies. Daniel is mentioned only in connection with his appointment as joint executor with William, who are to pay bills and divide the residue equally. He died 25 June, 1772, leaving personal property to the value of £113-14-7. (*Johnston Probate Records.*)

Children:

Mary, born 17 June, 1766; died 14 September, 1849, unmarried.

Elizabeth, born 27 April, 1768; died 25 December, 1796; married James Lewis.

Sarah, born 17 October, 1769; died 10 October, 1849.

Asa, born 24 August, 1771; died 22 June, 1842; married Cynthia Hill. They settled in New Berlin, Chenango County, N. Y.

Abner, born 21 February, 1773; died 14 September, 1853; married 27 April, 1797, Barbara Roberts, born 5 April, 1778, died 11 May, 1842. They removed to New Berlin, N. Y.

Israel, born 12 September, 1775; died 7 July, 1821, aged 45 years, 9 months, 25 days; married Honor Brown. They removed to New Berlin, N. Y.

Martha, born 23 August (Bible), 1779; died 26¹ March, 1824; married 11 January, 1798, James Lewis, her brother-in-law.

Naomi, born 1 September, 1781; died 11 February, 1844; married Charles Hinckley, and removed to Unadilla, N. Y.

Ruth, born 10 May, 1785, died during the year preceding September, 1857; married Olney Angell, son of Richard and Sarah (Wood) Angell. She appears to have married, first, Alfred Draper.

Stephen, born 4 July, 1787; died 29 May, 1845; married Huldah Williams. They lived in Providence.

Oliver, born 1 December, 1790; married Deborah Cushing. He was of Smithfield in 1857.

¹ Or the 10th March. James Lewis was born 11 February, 1767; died 23 March, 1850. His son Arnold Angell Lewis, born 11 March, 1814, died 4 April, 1899, was of New York. He married 3 April, 1837, Mary Anna Caldecott, born 12 August, 1810; died 27 May, 1880. Their daughter, Louise married Franklyn Hallett Lovell of New York, son of George and Adeline (Hallett) Lovell of Massachusetts. Their children are: Isabel Lovell married Grafton Duvall Dorsey, son of Grafton Duvall and Martha Matilda Ann (Claggett) Dorsey of Maryland; and F. Hallett Lovell, Jr., married Florence Brown, daughter of J. Henry and Isabella (Hooper) Lane of New York.

Family Record in Handwriting of Israel Angell
Original in Possession of Mr. H. I. Angell

1800 inserted card, 30 April 1826. Sarah Angell, wife of Israel Angell, fifth daughter of David and Elizabeth (Woolley) Angell, born 16 (or 10) April, 1770, died 6 August 1850, aged 60 years, 3 months, 26 days. Her husband died 26 October 1849, aged 79 years, 1 month, 1 day. They give her birth as 4 April, 1770, and death as 6 August 1850.

The will of Israel Angell, dated 27 March, 1797, was proved 11 July, 1800. He gave all his real estate in Boston and Smithfield, and all his right in the town of Quincy Mills. His wife, Elizabeth Angell, left him £1,000, and all his personal effects to his son Christopher Angell. In addition, he left his daughters Sarah Ely and Martha Angell, the latter being then married to John Gidson and then received £1,000. David Angell, his only son in connection with the joint executors, was to pay £1,000 to divide the residue equally. He died 1 January 1797, leaving personal property to the value of £113 14 7. (Johnston, *Probate records*, v. 1, p. 112.)

Children:

Samuel Reccord in Handwriting of Israel Angell
Married 17 Sept., 1819, and 12 September, 1849, unmarried.

Elizabeth, in Possession of Mr. H. F. Angell; married James

Sarah, born 17 October, 1780, died 1 October, 1849.

Asa, born 14 June, 1782, died 12 June, 1850, married Cynthia Hill

Franklin, born 20 November, 1803, died 11 May, 1844, married 21 November, 1825, to Anna Cushing, died 11 May, 1844.

Richard, born 17 December, 1785, died 18 December, 1853, married to Newell, died 1853.

Arnold, born 17 December, 1787, died 17 December, 1853; married 4; married

Charles, died 1853.

Moses, born 10 May, 1788, died 20 January, 1850, married September, 1810, to Anna, daughter of Richard and Sarah (Wood) Angell, died at her husband's, Mrs. Alfred Draper, residence, born 1 July, 1788, died 29 May, 1844, married Huldah Wilson, died 21 December, 1850.

Oliver, born 1 December, 1790, married Deborah Cushing. He was a member of the Legislature in 1857.

On the 20th March, James Lewis was born 17 February, 1767, died 17 March 1820. His son Arnold Angell, Jr., born 11 March, 1800, died 1 April, 1893, was of New York. He married 3 April, 1837, Mary Anne Calvert, born 12 August, 1810, d. 127 May, 1888. Their daughter, Anna, married Franklyn Hallett Lovell of New York, son of George and Anna (Hallett) Lovell of New England. Their children are: Isobel Lovell, married George Dorrill Dorrill, son of Captain Dorrill and Martha Morris; Anna (George) Dorrill of Maryland, and F. Hallett Lovell, Jr., married Elizabeth Brown, daughter of J. Henry and Elizabeth (Hopper) Gaines of New York.

Memorandum of Israel Angell &
Family All of the Age & Death of
His Father & Mother
Oliver

Oliver Angell father of I.A.

Naomi Angell Mother of I.A.

Israel Angell 3 wife of I.A.

Martha Angell 1 wife of I.A.

Eliza Angell 5 daughter of I.A. & M.

Abigail Angell 3 daughter of I.A. & M.

Sarah Angell 3 daughter of I.A. & M.

Afa Angell 1 son -

Hannah Angell 3 son -

Izrahel Angell 3 son -

Miriam Angell 4 daughter of I.A. & M.

Ruth Angell 6 daughter of I.A. & M.

Esther Angell 4 daughter of I.A. & M.

Oliver Angell 3 son -

Leah Angell 2 daughter of I.A. & M.

Abraham Angell 1 son -

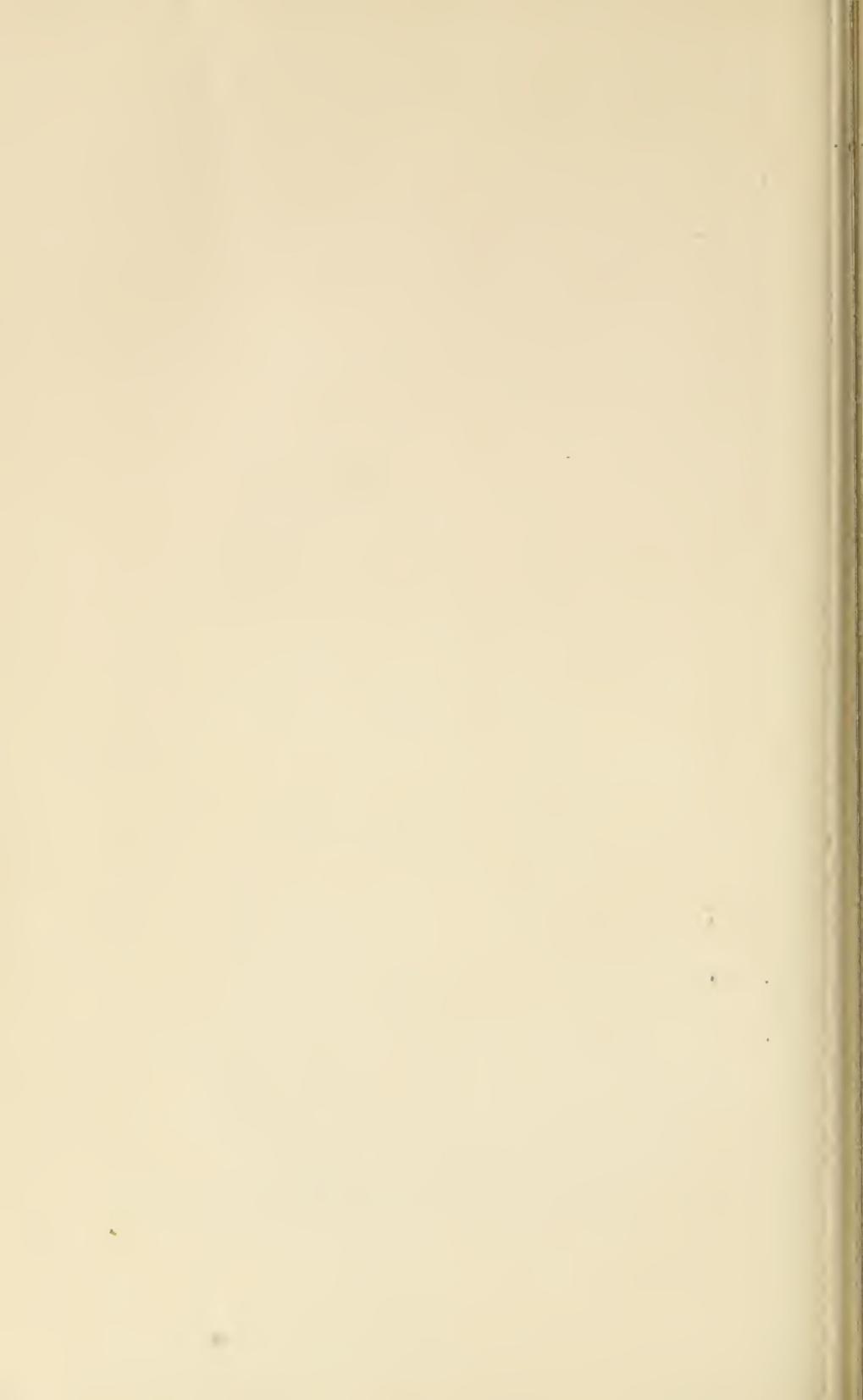
For no name -

Isaaciah Angell 1 son -

Abigail Angell 2 daughter of I.A. & M.

March 3	1717	March 1	1799	April 29
October 28	1719	October 3	1799	May 1
August 19	1740	August 4	1832	June 24
February 13	1747	February 16	1832	July 11
June 17	1766	June 14	1849	September 20
April 27	1766	April 25	1853	October 27
October 27	1769	October 28	1866	December 7
August 24	1774	August 22	1872	January 9
February 21	1775	February 21	1872	July 29
January 12	1779	January 12	1872	September 25
August 24	1779	August 24	1874	April 7
September 6	1781	September 6	1874	March 1
May 10	1785	May 10	1874	February 11
July 1	1787	July 1	1874	January 11
September 1	1790	September 1	1874	January 31
February 28	1765	February 28	1794	May 11
May 11	1794	May 11	1797	June 1
February 25	1797	February 25	1798	January 1
January 31	1798	January 31	1800	January 1

February 11



By second marriage:

Luther, born 11 May, 1794; died 19 December, 1859; married Patience Angell. Lived in Providence.

Son, born and died February, 1797. Lived but two days.

Susannah, born 23 January, 1798; died 3 May, 1877; married Moses Potter of Scituate, R. I.

Mehitabel, born 31 January, 1800; died 1 September, 1877; married 29 December, 1822, at Smithfield, William B. Wilkinson of Cumberland, R. I. (*Providence Gazette*). In 1857 they were living at Independence, Iowa.

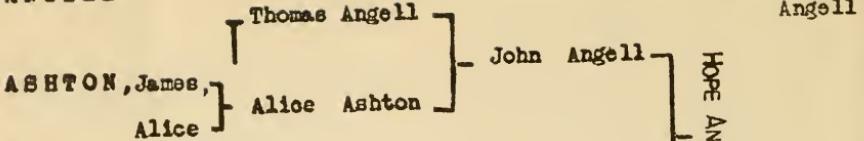
Henry, born 22 May, 1802; died after 1856; married Eliza Wilkinson, a sister of William B. Wilkinson.

Isaac, born 26 January, 1809; died 22 September, 1875; married 9 March, 1837, Hannah Gaskill, daughter of Hosea and Hannah Gaskill. He married, second, Emeline Vosburgh. They lived in Williamsburgh, N. Y.

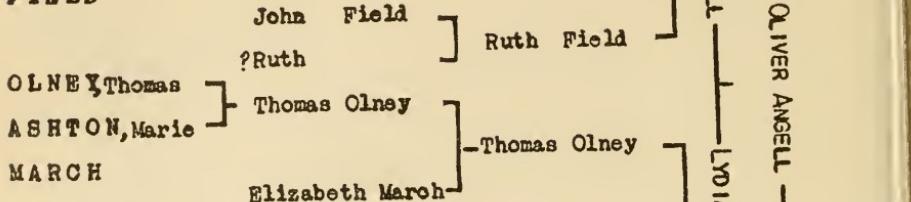
[On the following pages will be found reproductions of Ancestral Charts of Israel and Martha Angell, and brief notices of their ancestors.]

Ancestry of Colonel Israel

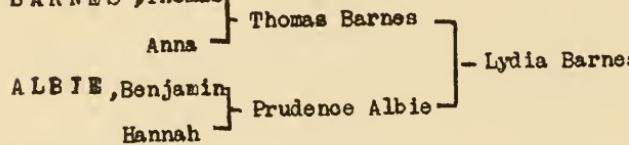
ANGELL



FIELD

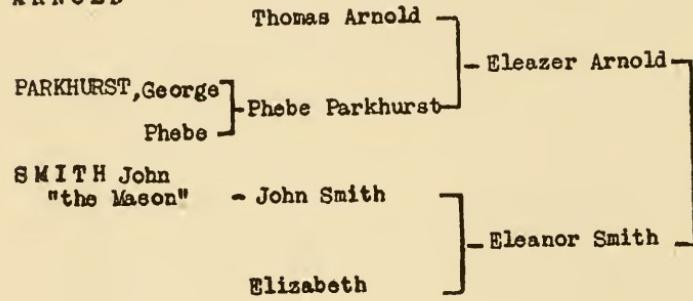


BARNES ,Thomas



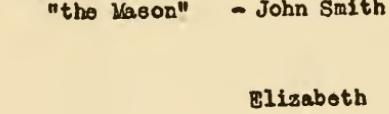
ALBIE ,Benjamin

ARNOLD



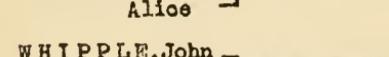
SMITH John

"the Mason"



SMITH, John

"the miller"



Alice

WHIPPLE,John

Sarah

Sarah Whipple

GARDNER

George Gardner

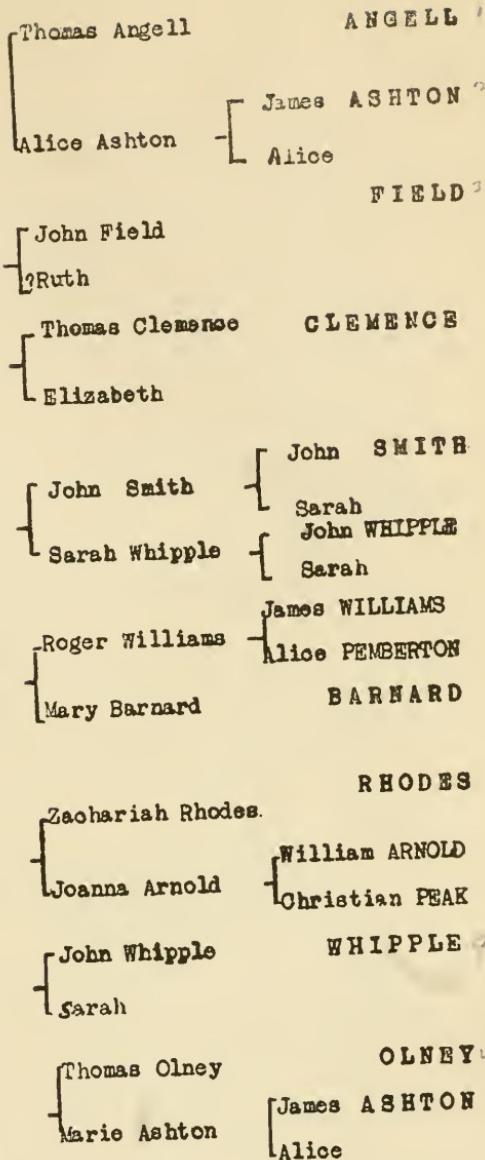
BELLOW,Robert

Susanna

Lydia Bellow

Lydia Gardner

Ancestry of Martha Angell
Wife of Colonel Israel Angell



A N G E L L

THOMAS¹, married ALICE ASHTON,* daughter of James and Alice Ashton of St. Albans, Herts., baptized 1st February, 1617-18, at St. Albans. She died 24th December, 1694, leaving a will dated 21st October, 1694, proved 15th January following, in which she named all her children, and bequeathed "unto my daughter Alice Whipple one trunke & a Deske which my mother gave to me."

JOHN², married RUTH FIELD, daughter of John and (Ruth?) Field, of Providence, 7th January, 1669-70. She was living in 1727.

John Angell testified in December, 1716, that he was aged about 70 years, which indicates the year 1646 as the date of birth. He may not have been the eldest child, although the eldest of the children to reach maturity. He was one of those who "staid and went not away" as part of the garrison in 1676, when the greater part of the town was destroyed by the Indian enemy. He added to the estate inherited from his father, and probably from his uncle James Ashton, and as each of his elder sons became settled, he gave them lands, or house and lands. His estate was administered upon by his widow and son Hope. He died 27th July, 1720.

HOPE³, married LYDIA OLNEY, daughter of Thomas and Lydia (Barnes) Olney, 22d May, 1712. She was born 30th April, 1688, and died 1748, aged 60 years, 9 months, seven days.

Hope Angell, born 22d December, 1685, youngest son of John, was named for an uncle, who died unmarried prior to his birth. He died 11th February, 1759, leaving a will with minute provisions for the disposal of his estate. He was Deputy, and Lieutenant of a militia company. His will, dated 12th April, 1755, was proved 19th May, 1759.

OLIVER⁴, married NAOMI SMITH, daughter of Israel and Elizabeth (Arnold) Smith, 13th June, 1740, at Providence. She was born 28th October, 1720, and died 3d December, 1799, at North Providence.

Oliver Angell was born 20th February, 1717-18. He lived in North Providence, on land inherited from his father, and was well-to-do. He died 1st April, 1799, at North Providence.

ISRAEL ANGELL⁵.

* Neither the date of marriage, nor baptism or birth of any of the children, of Thomas Angell are of record. He received a grant of land in 637. For probable date of the Civil Compact see *Chapin: Documentary History of Rhode Island*, vol. I.

ANGELL

THOMAS¹, married ALICE ASHTON.

Thomas Angell accompanied Roger Williams when he left Salem in January, 1635-36, and by Williams is described as "a lad of Richard Watermans."^{*} He was at this time a minor, but probably attained his majority in 1638, which would bring his birth in 1617. His age is nowhere given, nor has his baptism or the names of his parents been discovered. He was certainly married as early as 1645. Thomas Angell signed the compact of 1638-39, promising obedience to the orders made by masters of families in Providence, and the later Combination of 1640. He was Commissioner, Deputy, Constable, etc., and conducted himself in such a way as to avoid participation in the controversies which at times disturbed the settlement. On 13 March, 1656-7 "a presentment by Mr. Roger Williams against Thomas Harris, William Wigenden and Thomas Aingell for Ringeleaders in new devisions in the Collony" failed, no prosecutor appearing. At his death, he left what was for the time and place a respectable estate. His will, dated May, 1685, was not proved until the 18th September, 1694.

JOHN², married RUTH FIELD.

JOHN³, married SARAH CLEMENCE, daughter of Richard and Sarah (Smith) Clemence, born 11th November, 1688.

John Angell lived in that part of Providence, now Johnston. He died 3d December, 1744.

STEPHEN⁴, married MARTHA OLNEY, daughter of Epenetus and Mary (Williams) Olney, 16th May, 1728.

Stephen Angell lived in Johnston, and possessed an ample estate for his needs, and wherewith to provide for his children. His will is dated 7th March, 1771. He died the following January.

MARTHA⁵, married ISRAEL ANGELL.

Martha Angell was born 13th February, 1747; died 16th March, 1793.

* Richard Waterman came to Salem in 1629. He removed to Providence with Thomas Olney and others in 1638. There is a well established tradition that he was a relative of Thomas Angell. The tradition that Angell came with Williams from England, is undoubtedly based upon the fact that he was Williams's companion on his short voyage down the river in 1636, and had accompanied him from Salem. There is absolutely no evidence that he accompanied Williams across the ocean.

A S H T O N

JAMES¹,* married ALICE.

James and Alice Ashton had ten children baptized at St. Albans, between the years 1604 and 1630 inclusive. There is record of burial of the "wife of James Ashton," 22d May, 1643, and of a James Ashton in May, 1659. As there was a younger James of St. Albans, probably son of Daniel, it is not clear to whom the entries allude.

MARIE², married THOMAS OLNEY.

Marie Ashton was baptized 25th August, 1605, at St. Albans, and married there 16th September, 1629, Thomas Olney. They came to New England in 1635.

THOMAS³ OLNEY, married ELIZABETH MARCH.

THOMAS⁴ OLNEY, married LYDIA BARNES.

LYDIA⁵ OLNEY, married HOPE ANGELL.

OLIVER⁶ ANGELL, married NAOMI SMITH.

ISRAEL⁷ ANGELL.

* James Ashton of St. Albans, Herts., did not come to New England. His son, James, baptized 4th March, 1603-04, was of Providence in 1648, and was taxed there in September, 1687. No later mention of him occurs. Apparently he had no family in America. He was Commissioner, and in 1665, Deputy. In 1682, in a petition for lands, Epenetus Olney, son of Thomas, names his "uncle James Aston" (*Providence Town Records*; 17:8). In 1716, John Angell testified that in 1667 he was desired by his "uncle James Ashton," to care for certain land. As in 1681 James Ashton had a grant of land where his house had stood, it is evident it was burned by the Indians in 1676. Thomas Olney, Jr., was granted the adjoining lot. William "Austin" born about 1680, suggested as a son of James, was no connection, nor is there evidence to prove that James Ashton of Middleton, Monmouth Co., N. J., on whose estate administration was granted to Deliverance and James Ashton, 19 May, 1705, was a relative.

A S H T O N

JAMES¹,* married ALICE. He is found holding a messuage in St. Albans in 1618. The name is found associated with St. Albans and vicinity in the fifteenth century. There appears to be no settlement of the estate of James Ashton of record.

ALICE², married THOMAS ANGELL.

Alice Ashton was baptized at St. Albans, 1st February, 1617-18; died 24th December, 1694, at Providence, R. I. Her sister Mary married Thomas Olney in 1629, at St. Albans.

JOHN³ ANGELL, married RUTH FIELD.

HOPE⁴ ANGELL, married LYDIA OLNEY.

OLIVER⁵ ANGELL, married NAOMI SMITH.

ISRAEL⁶ ANGELL.

*The following children of James Ashton were baptized at St. Albans Abbey: James, 4th March, 1603-04; Marie, 25th August, 1605 (married Thomas Olney); John, 7th June, 1607; Martha, 12th March, 1608-09 (married 16th December, 1635, Thomas Redman of St. Albans); Alice, 10th February, 1610-11 (buried 27th June, 1613); Elizabeth, 7th March, 1611-12 (buried 3d September, 1616); Daniel, 2d April, 1615; Alice, 1st February, 1617-18 (married Thomas Angell); Sara, 23d February, 1619-20; Thomas, 18th February, 1630 (but on the Bishop's Transcript called son of John and Alice, bapt. 1629). In St. Albans, contemporary with James and Alice, were Richard and wife Sarah, Thomas and wife Frances (Hawkins, whom he married 17th July, 1628), and Daniel and wife Susanna. Thomas and Martha Redman remained in St. Albans, and had many children. It is probable that James Ashton, Sr., lived with them in the latter years of his life; certainly there is no trace of his having come to New England. James Ashton of Providence was his son.

ARNOLD

THOMAS¹, married PHEBE PARKHURST, daughter of George and Phebe Parkhurst, of Ipswich, Suffolk, England, baptized 29th November, 1612. She survived her husband.

Thomas Arnold* was of Watertown, Mass., as early as 25th July, 1636, when he was granted land. His age is nowhere stated, but he had a child born prior to 1640, Susanna, who married 7th April, 1654, at Boston, John Farnum. He was admitted Freeman 13th May, 1640. He removed from Watertown in or soon after 1655, having been heavily fined for neglect of the ordinance of baptism and neglect of public worship, and settled in that part of Providence which is now Smithfield, R. I. He was Deputy for Providence and member of the Town Council, and left a good estate, the disposal of which he arranged in his lifetime, and which was confirmed by the Town Council in 1685. He died September, 1674.

ELEAZER², married ELEANOR SMITH, daughter of John and Elizabeth Smith. She died prior to August, 1722.

Eleazer Arnold was born 17th June, 1651, at Watertown; died 29th August, 1722, at Providence, leaving a will dated 25th August, 1722. He was Deputy, member of Town Council, and Justice of the Peace. He built the house which passed to his son Jeremiah. This house built about 1687 in what is now the town of Lincoln, has been presented to the society for the preservation of New England antiquities. The stone chimney formerly extended across the entire west end of the house. It is considered the finest extant example of "stone-end" house.

ELIZABETH³, married ISRAEL SMITH, son of Joseph and Lydia (Gardiner) Smith, 3d June, 1718, at Providence.

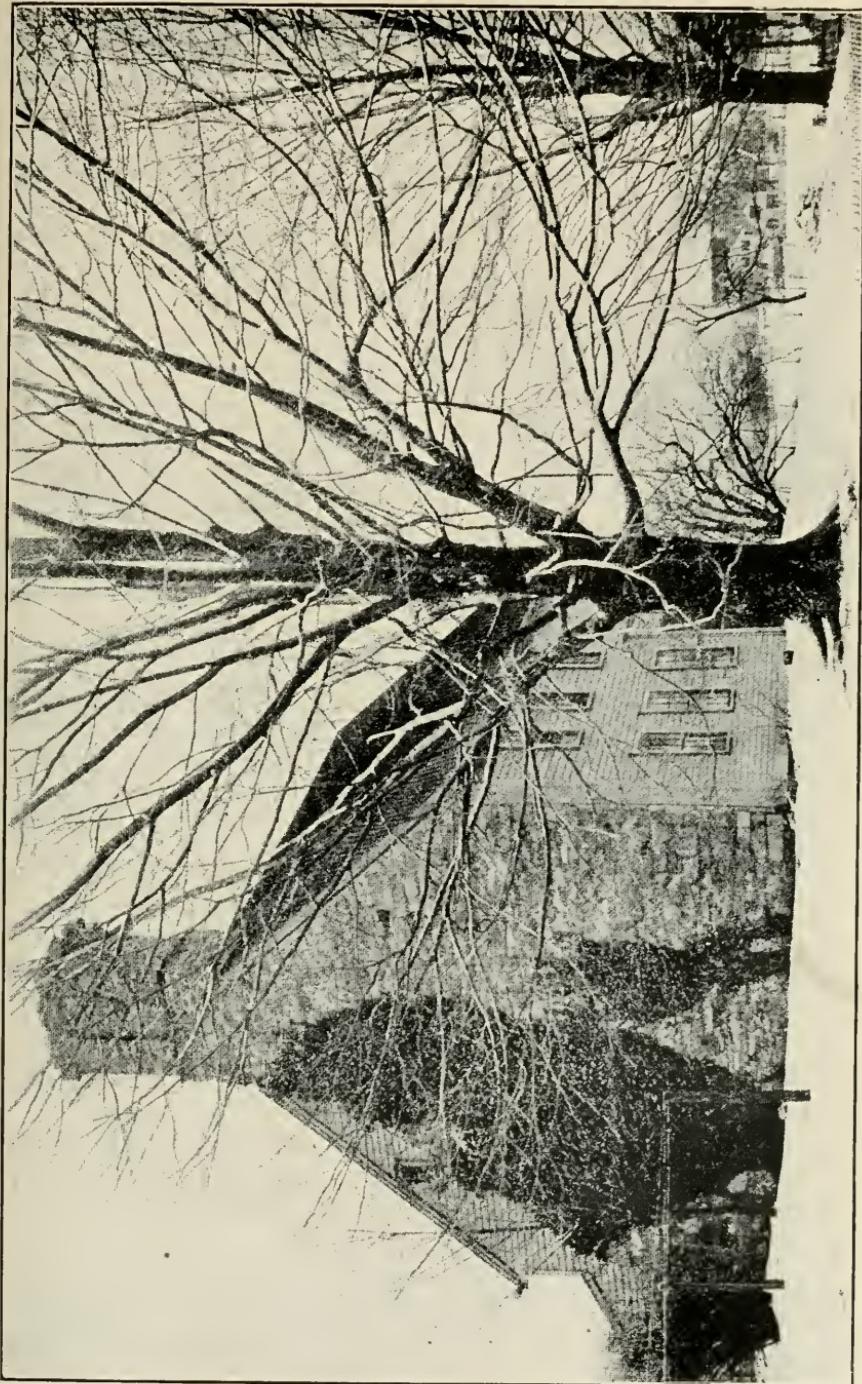
Elizabeth Arnold married 14th December, 1704, William Hawkins, Jr., of Providence, who died 8th October, 1712. Her will, dated 1st July, 1758, proved 17th July following, names her children by both marriages, including daughter Naomi Angell. She died 11th July, 1758.

NAOMI⁴ SMITH, married OLIVER ANGELL.

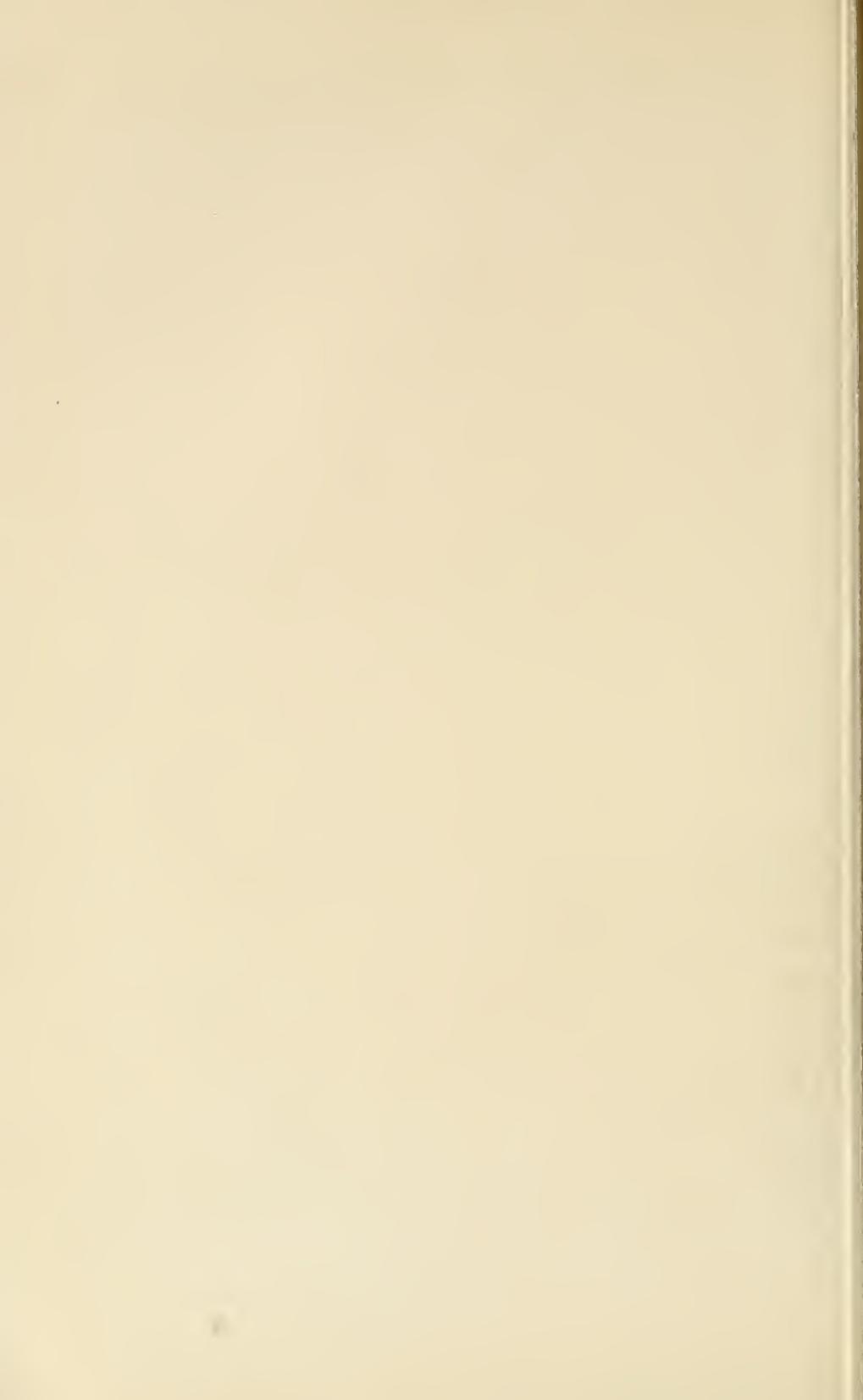
Naomi Smith was born 28th October, 1720; died 3d December, 1799, at North Providence.

ISRAEL⁵ ANGELL.

* Thomas Arnold was a cousin of Richard Arnold of London, goldsmith, who died 1644, leaving a will in which many relatives were named, among them "Thomas Arnold, who is now supposed to be in New England." See *Waters' Gleanings*, p. 882. Thomas was probably son of William Arnold of Hollesley, Suffolk, whose will of 1616-17 names sons Richard and Thomas, minors, and nephew Richard Arnold. He was not half-brother of William Arnold of Rhode Island, who came from Somersetshire and was son of Nicholas Arnold. For proof of these assertions see *New England Historical Genealogical Register*, January, 1915, in which Mr. E. S. Jones has fully established the parentage of William Arnold, and also given the results of his investigations regarding Thomas Arnold, thereby correcting the erroneous pedigree, published many years ago, compiled by Horatio Somerby.



Eleazer Arnold house, Lincoln, Rhode Island
Erected about 1683



ARNOLD

NICHOLAS¹, married ALICE GULLY, daughter of John Gully; baptized at Northover, Somersetshire, 29th September, 1553. She was buried at Ilminster,* 25th April, 1596.

Nicholas Arnold had a daughter Tamzen baptized at Northover, 4th January, 1571. He removed to Ilminster, and married, second, Grace, who survived him, and by whom he had several children, one being named Thomas, who for many years was supposed to be Thomas Arnold of Rhode Island. The will of Nicholas Arnold was dated 18th January, 1622-3, and proved 28th July following, at Wells.

WILLIAM², married CHRISTIAN PEAK, daughter of Thomas Peak of Muchelney, Somersetshire, said to have been born in 1583, died in Rhode Island.

William Arnold* was overseer of his father's will. He sailed for New England, 1st May, 1635, tarried a few months at Hingham, and was of Providence early in 1636, being one of the first to join Roger Williams at his settlement at Seekonk. With him was his family, of whom Benedict became prominent in the Colony, and was several years governor. William Arnold was one of the original members of the Baptist church, 1639, and became one of the chief Pawtuxet settlers, and from 1642 to 1658 joined with them in admitting the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. His son Benedict records his birth as 24th June, 1587, but not his death, which took place in 1676 or 1677.

JOANNA³, married ZACHARIAH RHODES.

Joanna Arnold was born 27th February, 1617-18, and was living in 1693.

REBECCA⁴ RHODES, married DANIEL WILLIAMS.

MARY⁵ WILLIAMS, married EPENETUS OLNEY.

MARTHA⁶ OLNEY, married STEPHEN ANGELL.

MARTHA⁷ ANGELL, married ISRAEL ANGELL.

* Ilminster is a few miles from Yeovil, whence came Stukely Wescott, whose daughter Damaris married 17th December, 1640, Benedict Arnold. "Stucklie Westcott" and Julian Marchante were married 5 October, 1619. Damaris daughter of "Stuckle Westcott" baptized 27 January, 1620-1. Samuel, son of "Stuckley Westcott" baptized 31 March, 1622-3. (*Yeovil register.*)

* William Arnold left a record of immediate family and ancestry, continued by his son Benedict, and printed in vol. 33 of the *N. E. Hist. Gen. Register*. For the story of William Arnold's connection with Roger Williams see *Chapin: Documentary History of Rhode Island*, vol. 1, *Winthrop's Journal*, etc.

A L B I E

BENJAMIN¹, married HANNAH, living 1657.

Benjamin Albie was admitted a Freeman of Massachusetts Bay, being then an inhabitant of Boston, 18th May, 1642. He had previously, 24th February, 1639-40, received a grant from the town, at Mount Wollaston, for three head of cattle, and a year later there is mention of land bought by him of John Button. He removed to Medfield, 1649, and it is said was of the Swansea church in 1663, and of Mendon in 1667. He signed the Swansea town agreement of 1667, with Thomas Barnes. There is no settlement of his estate. He was among those proprietors of Mendon, who, having abandoned the town at the outbreak of King Philip's War, did not return.

PRUDENCE², married THOMAS BARNES, 16th May, 1666, at Medfield, Mass.

There is no record of the births of the children, except Sarah, of Benjamin Albie, nor, indeed, a complete list of them. Thomas Barnes sold to James Albie, son of Benjamin, 4th February, 1674, his twenty-acre house-lot in Mendon, acknowledging the deed, 21st October, 1679, before Thomas Ward, Assistant (of Rhode Island)*.

LYDIA³ BARNES, married THOMAS OLNEY.

LYDIA⁴ OLNEY, married HOPE ANGELL.

OLIVER⁵ ANGELL, married NAOMI SMITH.

ISRAEL⁶ ANGELL.

**Proprietors' Records, Mendon*. For some account of the family of Benjamin Albie and his descendants, see Tilden's *History of Medfield*, *Medfield Vital Records*, and the published records of Mendon. Benjamin Albie received a grant of land from the town in consideration of erecting a grist mill, and his "son-in-law Thomas Barnes" is mentioned. Both shared in the division of meadow, 14th July, 1667. Apparently Albie was not connected with the town until 1664, but was one of the first board of Selectmen chosen 7th June, 1667. The record of this family in Savage's *Genealogical Dictionary*, is both incomplete and incorrect.

B A R N E S

THOMAS¹, married PRUDENCE ALBIE, daughter of Benjamin and Hannah Albie, at Medfield, Mass., 16th May, 1666. She died, and Thomas Barnes married (2) 12th November, 1694, at Providence, Elizabeth, widow of Clement King.

Thomas Barnes was probably born early in 1643. No *proof* of his parentage* has been found. He removed from Medfield to Mendon with his father-in-law Benjamin Albie, and is called the latter's "son in law" on Mendon records. His name is signed to the Swansea Town Agreement of 1667. He was a member of the Baptist Church there; and in 1672 was Constable. In 1689, his name appears among the non-resident proprietors of Rehoboth. In 1693 he was ordained pastor of the Baptist Church in Swansea, and held that position at his death, 8th June, 1706. He left a good estate.

LYDIA², married THOMAS OLNEY.

Lydia Barnes was born 26th August, 1667, at Mendon. She was living in 1722.

LYDIA³ OLNEY, married HOPE ANGELL.

OLIVER⁴ ANGELL, married NAOMI SMITH.

ISRAEL⁵ ANGELL.

* Thomas Barnes of Hingham, Mass., 1637, Freeman 1645, died 29th November, 1672, aged 70 years, had a son Thomas born 21st May, 1643. In his will of 29th April, 1671, proved 29th April, 1673, "all the parties within mentioned, sonnes of the deceased appearing," he names wife Anna, who was to have his whole estate until death or remarriage, son Peter, to whom the house and home lot, and son Thomas, to whom he gave his wearing apparel, and five pounds in current pay, to be paid by Peter within one year, son John, 40 shillings, and daughters Elizabeth Murfett and Anna Breame. (*Suffolk Probate*, 7:297.) The widow Anna died 5th April, 1691. Thus it is clear that Thomas was living in 1673, but no trace of him has been found, unless he was the Thomas Barnes of Mendon and Swansea.

Thomas and Prudence Barnes had the following children: Lydia, born 26th August, 1667; Anna, born 12th February, 1668, at Mendon; and at Swansea, Thomas, born 30th January, 1670; Sarah, born 20th August, 1672; Elizabeth, born 14th February, 1674; John, born 9th April, 1680; Peter, born 17th June, 1682; Samuel, born 17th March, 1685; Hannah, born 21st December, 1687. All of the above named children are mentioned in their father's will of 7th May, 1705, proved 3d July, 1706. The occurrence of the name Peter, among the children, is suggestive, as also that of Anna.

B E L L O W

ROBERT¹, married SUSANNA, living 1668.

Robert Bellow* or Bellew (never Ballou), was granted a lot of land at Portsmouth, R. I., 5th October, 1643, he "using his trade for the benefit of the town." What this trade was is not stated, but in 1654, in selling a house-lot in Boston he styles himself "tobacco-winder." He had in some way become possessed of a house-lot and orchard adjoining, on the east side of the street leading from the Castle Tavern, now Elm Street, which may have been a part of the estate of Nicholas Willis, who died 1650, without heirs in this country. (*Suffolk Deeds*, vol. 1.) This estate he sold 20th May, 1654, (*ibid.*, 8:118) and his wife Susanna released her dower rights. He left a nuncupative will, read to him 2d June, 1668, in the presence of Samuel King, Jacob Browne, and John Cleasby, which he was too weak to sign, by which all his estate was left to his wife, two daughters, and son. The will was admitted to probate in Suffolk County, 10 June, 1668. The name of one daughter only, Lydia, has been recovered.

LYDIA², married GEORGE GARDINER.

She married second William Hawkins, son of William, whose will 17th March, 1722-23, does not mention a wife. Her eldest son by this marriage, William Hawkins, was the first husband of Elizabeth (Arnold) Smith.

LYDIA³ GARDINER, married JOSEPH SMITH.

ISRAEL⁴ SMITH, married ELIZABETH ARNOLD, widow of William Hawkins.

NAOMI⁵ SMITH, married OLIVER ANGELL.

ISRAEL⁶ ANGELL.

* Robert Bellow was on a visit to Boston, at the time he made his will, and the inventory of his effects filed in Suffolk is simply that of what personal property he had with him. He named as executors of his will, Deputy Governor William Brenton, Nicholas Easton, and George Gardiner, and Mr. William Vaughan, overseer. These were prominent men. Boston records are silent regarding his family. Possibly William Bellew of Dover, N. H., 1642-48, who traded with Boston people, may have been a brother, as in his will Robert desires his wife to have a care of "my cousins William and Henry." Maturin Bellou, whose descendants spell the name Ballou, was not connected with either Robert or William.

C L E M E N C E

THOMAS¹, married **ELIZABETH**.

Thomas Clemence* probably accompanied Gregory Dexter and Roger Williams at the time of the latter's return to Rhode Island, with the Charter, in 1644. He was a kinsman, perhaps nephew, of Dexter. His name appears on Providence records in 1648, and thereafter he took an active part in town affairs. He was a man of decided character and good judgment. Deputy, Town Treasurer, and in 1676 was one of the twenty-seven men "who staid and went not away." His son Thomas was buried in August of that year, "in the flower of his youth," and without doubt was the eldest son then living, born, perhaps, 1650-55. It is possible he was twice married. Administration on his estate was granted at the request of his widow Elizabeth, 15th May, 1688, to his son Richard.

RICHARD², married **SARAH SMITH**, daughter of John and Sarah (Whipple) Smith, who died 14th October, 1725, leaving a will dated 11th October that year, in which she nominated her "brother" William Smith, executor.

Richard Clemence was taxed in September, 1687, and was married probably about that time. He died 11th October, 1723, at Providence, leaving a will dated 2d January, 1720-21, proved 9th December, 1723, naming among his children, "daughter Sarah Angell."

SARAH³, married **JOHN ANGELL**.

Sarah Clemence was born 11th November, 1688, and is named in her mother's will, as well as that of her father.

STEPHEN⁴ ANGELL, married **MARTHA OLNEY**.

MARTHA⁵ ANGELL, married **ISRAEL ANGELL**.

* In 1652, Roger Williams, writing from London to Gregory Dexter at Providence, inserted on the margin of the letter, "My Love to your Cozen Clements & all our Lo: especially our godly Friends." (*Providence Town Papers*, 976.) Dexter had been a stationer and printer in London, and was born in Northamptonshire, near Olney, Bucks. His wife's name is given as Sarah Fuller. (*Brown Papers*). Dexter took a prominent part in affairs at Providence. Because of the slight difference in ages it may be considered doubtful if Dexter and Clemence were uncle and nephew, the usual rendering of "cousin" in those days. The birth of but one child, Elizabeth, who married James Mathewson, is of record. She was born in February, 1673. Austin mentions as his children: Richard, Elizabeth, Thomas, and Content, the last two dying unmarried. Sarah, the wife of Richard Clemence, was described as daughter of John Smith, "miller," in 1693, when land was laid out to her in her father's right.

FIELD

JOHN¹, married

John Field was from the neighborhood of St. Albans, Herts., of which place his brother James* was a resident. John was one of those who signed the Civil Compact of 1638-39, at Providence, being at that time an unmarried man. There is no record of his marriage, nor is his wife's name mentioned, but from various circumstances it would appear that her name was Ruth. There is nothing to show that John was a brother or near connection of William or Robert Field, and the evidence of an extensive collection of notes from English records seems to prove the contrary. John Field did not take a prominent part in public affairs, but in 1676 was Deputy. His will was presented for probate by his son Zachariah, 22d March, 1686, but the executrix not appearing, and there being no witnesses, and the legatees having already proceeded to a division, it was not admitted to probate and has been lost to posterity. His children were Hannah, John, Daniel, Zachariah, and Ruth.

RUTH², married JOHN ANGELL.HOPE³ ANGELL, married LYDIA OLNEY.OLIVER⁴ ANGELL, married NAOMI SMITH.ISRAEL⁵ ANGELL.

* James Field of St. Albans, lathvender, made his will 20th September, 1684, proved 4th January, 1685, by the relict Susan Field. Legacies were given to cousin George Wilshire and Rebecca his wife, to cousins John and Daniel Pierce. The testator also gave and bequeathed "unto my brother John Field one hundred pounds to be paid unto him within twelve months after my decease (if he be then living) But if my said brother John Field shall be then dead my mind and will is and I do then will and bequeath the said one hundred pounds to such of the children of my said brother John Field as shall be then living." (*P. C. C. Lloyd*, 3.) Providence Town Paper, 01103, is a fragment, reading "Whereas there was by James Field of St. Albans, Herts., who is some time since deceased, a bequest made of £100 the which by his will he gave to brother John Field dwelling in Providence in New England, or if dead to be divided among his children. The said John Field is deceased and said legacy not paid." James Field married 24th January, 1640-41, at St. Albans, Susan, daughter of Edmund How, and in his will mentions Edmund How, Jr., with whom he had entered into an agreement concerning a messuage in Tewin, Herts. Edmund How and William Field witnessed the will of Walter Blisse of Hemel Hempstead, Herts., in 1598. In 1662 James Field was among those presented at Herts. Sessions as Anabaptists, Independents, and Quakers, who had gathered to bury an old man in an orchard, contrary to law. In 1685, James and Zachery Field were discharged, having given surety, from custody as disaffected persons. Possibly these items may refer to James of St. Albans. In 1657 he took lands in St. Stephen's parish, St. Albans (Manorial Court Records), and at the time of his death held several messuages. Field is an ancient and well-distributed family name in Hertfordshire. The Hemel Hempstead family was connected with St. Albans early in the 17th century. The identification by Pierce in *Genealogy of the Field Family*, of the Rhode Island settlers is worthless.

G A R D I N E R

GEORGE¹, married LYDIA BELLOW, daughter of Robert and Susanna Bellow, who married (2) 14th June, 1678, William Hawkins.

George Gardiner* was of Newport, R. I., April, 1638. The house "formerly George Gardiner's" is mentioned in Portsmouth records, October, 1639, and in December of that year he was admitted a Freeman at Newport. He was associated with William Coddington, and accompanied the latter to Boston and witnessed his agreements at Boston, when the latter transferred his house and lands there in April, 1639. He was Constable, senior Sergeant, and Ensign, and was an active, enterprizing man. His will is mentioned by his daughter Mary in 1688, but has suffered the fate of most of the early records of Newport. His first wife was Herodias (Long) Hicks, who held extreme religious views, and suffered for them. He married Lydia Bellow about 1666, and in Robert Bellow's will of 2d January, 1668, is called "son-in-law." It is probable that George Gardiner was born about 1610, but his age is nowhere mentioned in early records. The identification of George Gardiner with another of the same name, married in London in 1630, and with another of the same name baptized 1599-1600, is absolutely without authority. He was undoubtedly an unmarried man at the time he settled in Rhode Island.

LYDIA², married JOSEPH SMITH.

ISRAEL³ SMITH, married ELIZABETH ARNOLD.

NAOMI⁴ SMITH, married OLIVER ANGELL.

ISRAEL⁵ ANGELL.

* See for details regarding George Gardiner's family, "*The Gardiners of Narragansett*," by Caroline E. Robinson, who was apparently unaware of the will of Samuel Gardiner of Swansea, in which his father and brother, both named Robert, of Newport, are named, thus eliminating Samuel and Robert, given by Austin and others as sons of George. Jeremiah, another assumed son, is more probably a grandson.

O L N E Y

THOMAS¹, married MARIE ASHTON, daughter of James and Alice Ashton, of St. Albans, Herts., 16th September, 1629, at St. Albans.

Thomas Olney¹, aged 35, and wife Marie, aged 30, sons Thomas, aged 3, and "Etenetus," sailed on the ship *Planter* for New England, April, 1635. He settled in Salem, Mass., prior to March, 1636, and in December, 1637,* his family was five in number. He separated from the Salem church, and removed to Providence in the spring of 1638, and there was Town Treasurer, Commissioner, Assistant, member of Town Council, and otherwise prominent in town and colony affairs. Will dated 21st March, 1678-79, proved 17th October, 1682, names all surviving children. His wife was not living at date of will.

THOMAS², married ELIZABETH MARCH of Newport, R. I., 3d July, 1660, at Providence, who died prior to 1722.

Thomas Olney² was baptized 6th January, 1631-32, at St. Albans. His will, dated 20th February, 1721-22, was proved 9th July, 1722. He was Town Clerk of Providence thirty-three years, and for many years one of the most important men in Providence Plantations; Deputy, Assistant, member of Town Council. Ordained pastor of the First Baptist Church in 1668, and in 1669 declined appointment to represent the Colony in England.

THOMAS³, married LYDIA BARNES, daughter of Thomas and Prudence (Albie) Barnes of Swanzey, born 26th August, 1667, living 1722.

Thomas Olney³ was born 4th May, 1661, at Providence; died there 1st March, 1717-18, in the lifetime of his father. He was Captain of the Militia Company, and Deputy.

LYDIA⁴, married HOPE ANGELL, son of John and Ruth (Field) Angell.

Lydia Olney⁴ was born 30th April, 1688, at Providence.

OLIVER⁵ ANGELL, married NAOMI SMITH, daughter of Israel and Elizabeth (Arnold) Smith.

ISRAEL⁶ ANGELL.

* Salem Town Record, division of lands according to number in family.

OLNEY

THOMAS¹*, married MARIE ASHTON.

Thomas Olney was among one of the early adherents of Roger Williams at Salem. His son, Nedabiah, baptized at Salem, 27th August, 1637, died early, and at Providence he had Stephen and James, both of whom died unmarried, Mary, and Lydia. Discovered Olney, who with Thomas Olney, Sr., and James Olney witnessed an agreement to build a bridge, 6th February, 1664-65, and not otherwise mentioned, was probably another child. (*Providence Town Papers*, 0153, vol. 15:110.) Thomas Olney was one of the twelve original members of the First Baptist Church, 1639.

EPENETUS², married MARY WHIPPLE, daughter of John and Sarah Whipple, 9th March, 1665-66, at Providence. She was born at Dorchester, Mass., and baptized there 9th April, 1648. She survived her husband.

Epenetus Olney was baptized at St. Albans, Herts., 14th February, 1633-34; died 3d June, 1698, at Providence, intestate. He was Deputy, and member of the Town Council, but not so active in public affairs as his brother.

EPENETUS³, married MARY WILLIAMS, daughter Daniel and Rebecca (Rhodes) Williams, who survived her husband.

Epenetus³ Olney was born 18th January, 1674-75, at Providence; died 18th September, 1740, leaving a will dated 16th December, 1735, with codicil of 18th January, 1739-40, proved 20th October, 1740.

MARTHA⁴, married STEPHEN ANGELL, son of John and Sarah (Clemence) Angell.

Martha⁴ Olney was born 16th May, 1728, at Providence.

MARTHA⁵ ANGELL, married ISRAEL ANGELL, son of Oliver and Naomi (Smith) Angell.

Martha⁵ Angell was born 13th February, 1747; died 16th March, 1793.

* The parentage of Thomas Olney is not known; it is evident, however, that his ancestors are found among the members of the family of Olney or Oney long resident in the vicinity of St. Albans and elsewhere in Hertfordshire. (See *Herts. Antiquary*, 2:376.)

P A R K H U R S T

JOHN¹, married SARA, living 1611. Probably son of Nicholas and grandson of George Parkhurst, and nephew of John, Bishop of Norwich.

John Parkhurst,* of Ipswich, clothier, made his will 29th March, 1610, proved 7th June, 1611. (*P. C. C., Wood*: 50.) Three of his five children were minors. The eldest, George, was made executor.

GEORGE², married PHEBE, who probably died in Ipswich, England.

George Parkhurst,** according to his own statement of age in 1655, was born in 1588. He was then petitioning for liberty to sell lands belonging to his wife and her children, to raise funds to return to England in order to relieve her and certain of her children who had accompanied her to England. This was his second wife, Susanna, widow of John Simson, of Watertown. Nine of his children, all by his wife Phebe, were baptized in Ipswich, England, and at least six of these came to New England. The eldest, Phebe, baptized 29th November, 1612, became the wife of Thomas Arnold. Another daughter, Mary, married Rev. Thomas Carter of Woburn, and these with other children of Phebe, were beneficiaries of their maternal aunt, Mrs. Ruth Dalton, widow of Rev. Timothy Dalton of Hampton, N. H.

PHEBE³, married THOMAS ARNOLD.

ELEAZER⁴ ARNOLD, married ELEANOR SMITH, daughter of John and Elizabeth Smith.

ELIZABETH⁵ ARNOLD, married ISRAEL SMITH.

NAOMI⁶ SMITH, married OLIVER ANGELL.

ISRAEL⁷ ANGELL.

* John Parkhurst was a "kinsman" of the Bishop of Norwich, of the same name, whose will was proved 1576, and whose nephew John was son of his brother Nicholas, and whose niece Margaret was wife of Richard Crampton. Richard Crampton in his will of 1580 names his brother-in-law Nicholas Babbe. "Cousin Nicholas Babbe of Needham Market" was one of the supervisors of the will of John Parkhurst. The father of the Bishop was George Parkhurst.

** For all that is known concerning the ancestry of George Parkhurst, see *N. E. Hist. Gen. Reg.*, 68:370, for results of investigations by Mr. E. S. Jones. See also *Register*, vol. 27, and *Converse and Allied Families*, 1:10.

R H O D E S

ZACHARIAH¹, married JOANNA ARNOLD, daughter of William and Christian (Peak) Arnold. She married (2) 11th January, 1666-67, Samuel Reape, and was living, a widow, 11th February, 1692-93.

Zachariah Rhodes, or as his name usually appears, Zachary Roads, was according to a deposition made by him 6th March, 1656-57, then aged about fifty-four years, which would place his birth about 1602-03. No connection has been found between him and any other emigrants to New England of this name. He is found as a substantial proprietor at Rehoboth in 1643, and on the 4th June, 1645, was propounded as a Freeman to the General Court of Plymouth Colony, but apparently never qualified, though he remained in Rehoboth until 1649 or 1650, and was a man of some consequence there. In 1650 he was taxed in Providence, and became one of the Pawtuxet proprietors. In 1655 Williams speaks of him as a Baptist, and active in affairs. He became Commissioner, Constable, Deputy, Town Treasurer, and member of Town Council. In 1665, he was present at the Court at Boston which determined the charge against certain Baptists in Charlestown, and within six months, prior to 10th April, 1666, was drowned off the Pawtuxet shore. His will, dated 28th April, 1662, recorded 29th May, 1666, names his children, all of whom were minors. His widow, to better settle his estate, made her will 9th November, 1666, and had it enrolled 28th January, 1667-68, she having married again.

REBECCA², married DANIEL WILLIAMS.

Rebecca Rhodes died in 1727. She married (1) 3d February 1671-72, Nicholas Power; (2) 7th December, 1676, Daniel Williams.

MARY³ WILLIAMS, married EPENETUS OLNEY.

MARTHA⁴ OLNEY, married STEPHEN ANGELL.

MARTHA⁵ ANGELL, married ISRAEL ANGELL.

S M I T H

JOHN¹,* married ALICE, who was living in September, 1652, at Providence.

In 1646 the town granted him "the value, whereon his house stands in case he set up a mill."** He died soon after this, for in 1649 there is an agreement by which his widow Alice and his son John should maintain the mill and grind the corn of the inhabitants, and in consideration of this should have 150 acres formerly granted Smith, and that no other mill should be erected.

JOHN², married SARAH WHIPPLE, daughter of John and Sarah Whipple, baptized 12th August, 1641, at Dorchester, Mass., died prior to 1709, and after 1687.

JOSEPH³, married LYDIA GARDINER daughter of George and Lydia (Bellow) Gardiner, 4th April, 1689. She died 1723.

Joseph Smith in the partition of his father's lands in 1709, is described as son of "John Smith, miller." He made his will 26th October, 1742, and named his daughter-in-law, Elizabeth, "widow of his deceased son Israel." He died 13th January, 1749-50, and his will was proved 17th March following.

ISRAEL⁴, married ELIZABETH ARNOLD, daughter of Eleazer and Eleanor (Smith***) Arnold, widow of William Hawkins, Jr., who had died 8th October, 1712. She married Israel Smith, 3d June, 1718, and died 11th July, 1758. Her will of 1st July, 1758, proved 17th July, names her daughter Naomi Angell.

Israel Smith was born 13th January, 1689-90, at Providence, and died there 20th January, 1726-27.

NAOMI⁵, married OLIVER ANGELL.

ISRAEL⁶ ANGELL.

*There were several of this name in Massachusetts early, and a John Smith in Dorchester at a later period than the arrival of the "miller" at Providence. It is unlikely he was the Freeman of 1632. There is no record of the direction which Williams's dislike to the miller took, unless it was objection to his signing the compact and combination, and perhaps preventing his taking any part in town affairs until after March, 1645, and even then he was not enfranchised, though apparently admitted a proprietor. In February, 1650-1, Williams refers to him as "our dead friend, John Smith."

** This same phrase occurs in the will of his son John, but "value" there is spelled "valley."

*** Granddaughter of John Smith, "the mason," *q. v.*

S M I T H

JOHN¹, married ALICE.

John Smith, "the miller," so called to distinguish him from John Smith, "the mason," and "Jamaica John Smith," was contemporary also with John Smith of Warwick, John Smith of Newport, and John Smith of Prudence Island. In September, 1635, the General Court of Massachusetts ordered that John Smith should be sent out of the jurisdiction within six weeks, "for divers dangerous opinions which he holdeth." He was probably the John Smith, one of the proprietors of the Plough Patent of 1630, who arrived in Boston in July 1631, and whose allotment at Mt. Wollaston passed to Rev. John Wilson prior to September, 1636.* Roger Williams wrote in 1677, concerning his companions in the first settlement at Providence, that he "consented to John Smith, Miller, at Dorchester (banished also) to go with me," and in 1638, wrote to Governor Winthrop that "one of the first grounds of my dislike of John Smith the miller, and especially of his wife," was their blaming the actions of the Massachusetts magistrates.

JOHN², married SARAH WHIPPLE.

John Smith continued the mill until his death in 1682, and it was in turn continued by his son of the same name. At the destruction of the town by the Indians in 1676, John Smith was town clerk, and had in his custody the town records, and it is said secured their safety by throwing them into the mill pond, when the mill, and the miller's house over it, was burned. Williams alludes to the merciful preservation of the records from "fire and water." His will dated, 22d February, 1681-82, proved 2d June, 1682, gave to unmarried daughter Sarah, 40 acres, and in 1709 division of lands was made among the sons. John Smith was Deputy 1666-72.

SARAH³, married RICHARD CLEMENCE.

SARAH⁴ CLEMENCE, married JOHN ANGELL.

STEPHEN⁵ ANGELL, married MARTHA OLNEY.

MARTHA⁶ ANGELL, married ISRAEL ANGELL.

* A letter of March 1631-2, from the members of the Company in London to Smith and others in New England names "Ann" wife of John Smith and his daughter as preparing to sail with Richard Dummer on the *Whale*. They did so, arriving early in 1632. On the same ship came John, minor son of Francis Smith, miller, who was indentured to Rev. John Wilson after his arrival here. Wilson came on the same ship. See *Mass. Hist. Soc. Col.* No. 7:92, and *The Genealogist*, N. S. 19:275.

S M I T H

JOHN¹, married

John Smith, called the "mason," to distinguish him from others of the name, was in Providence as early as 1654, when he sold Samuel Comstock his house and home lot. He was of Warwick in 1657, and was then sued at law by John Smith of Warwick.* He returned to Providence and married Ann, widow of Samuel Comstock, and died prior to the 9th March, 1659-60.

JOHN², married **ELIZABETH**, who was living in 1706, when her sons-in-law Eleazer Arnold and Thomas Hopkins agreed to care for her.

John Smith, born prior to 1645, died prior to 4th April, 1688, when his will was presented. He was also described as "John Smith, mason."

ELEANOR³, married **ELEAZER ARNOLD**.****ELIZABETH⁴ ARNOLD**, married **ISRAEL SMITH**.**NAOMI⁵ SMITH**, married **OLIVER ANGELL**.**ISRAEL⁶ ANGELL**.

* John Smith "of Warwick" was a merchant, and settled there about 1646. He was later Governor. He appears to be identical with John Smith, of Boston, gentleman, 1642, who came from Ireland where he had suffered losses at the hands of the rebels. His wife preceded him, coming in 1640. He has been assumed to be that "Mr. John Smith" one of the seven signers of the "Remonstrance and Humble Petition" addressed to the General Court 6 of May, 1646, which Robert Child planned to send to England, and which resulted in the Colony sending Edward Winslow thither. See *New England Salamander Discovered*. Smith is described as one "who formerly lived two or three years in Boston but before this remonstrance himself and wife were removed to Rhode Island." He resisted the officers sent to seize the papers of one of the conspirators, and with others was placed under bonds, and was fined—but the fine was never collected. The incident seems rather one more likely to have been participated in by John the miller than he of Warwick, unless the reference to Rhode Island is to be taken literally, for the Warwick man probably removed from Boston to the island so named.

** Elizabeth, sister of Eleazer Arnold, married 22d November, 1678, Samuel Comstock, son of Samuel and Ann Comstock.

WILLIAMS

JAMES¹, married ALICE PEMBERTON, daughter of **Robert*** and Katharine Pemberton, of St. Albans, Hertfordshire, baptized 18th February, 1564; will dated 1st August, 1634, proved 26th January following. She was of St. Sepulchres without Newgate, London.

James Williams, ** citizen and merchant tailor of London, made his will 7th September, 1620; proved 19th November, 1621. He was admitted to the Company of Merchant Taylors, 1587, having served his apprenticeship with Nicholas Treswell.

ROGER², married MARY BARNARD

Roger Williams was a minor 16th March, 1622-23., *** and was therefore born later than 1603, and as he was admitted a scholar

*Robert Pemberton was buried at St. Albans, 16th July, 1578. His wife Catherine was sister to Roger Stokes of St. Albans, who died in 1573. His son Roger was godfather to Roger Williams, and named the latter in his will of 13th November, 1624, proved 5th December, 1627. Roger's son, Robert, (cousin of Roger Williams) married Susan, daughter of Roger Glover, and sister to Rev. Jose Glover, one of the most important of the early emigrants to New England. The widow of Jose Glover married Rev. Henry Dunster, President of Harvard College, 1640-1654. The two eldest daughters of Jose Glover married sons, Adam and Deane, of Gov. John Winthrop and the youngest daughter married Capt. John Appleton. John Pemberton, another son of Roger, married Catherine Angell, daughter of William Angell of London, who, however, it has not been found possible to connect with Thomas Angell of Providence, the companion of Roger Williams. Ralph Pemberton, (1625-1697) another son, mayor of St. Albans, died 1644, was father of Sir Francis Pemberton, Lord Chief Justice, 1681-1683. The Pembertons were an armorial family, and a branch of the Pemberton family of Cheshire. For wills of Roger Pemberton, James and Alice Williams, and other details concerning these families, see *Waters' Gleanings*, pp. 327, *et seq.*, and various items printed by G. Andrews Moriarty, Jr.

**James Williams was a well-to-do merchant in London. He was probably born as early as 1560, if not earlier. There was an armorial family of the name of Treswell having its origin in St. Albans, and Robert Treswell *alias* Baker, who died 1586, was father of Nicholas, and of Ralph of London, whose son Robert was Somerset Herald of Arms.

*** Bond of Alice Williams of London, who was bound for certain legacies payable to Roger and Robert Williams, sons of James. (*Orphans' Recognizances*, 1590-1633.)

at Sutton Hospital, now Charter-House, School 1621, which did not admit after the age of fourteen, it would appear he was born in 1606 or 1607. He had passed his twenty-fifth birthday in 1632, as his letter to Winthrop proves. He was admitted a pensioner (one who paid his own commons) at Pembroke College, Cambridge, 1625, and received an "exhibition" from Charter House, which was withdrawn in 1629, he having withdrawn from the University. He was A. B., 1627, and soon was a member of the household of Sir William Masham, as chaplain, at Otes, High Laver, Essex. He married (probably in the summer of 1630) Mary Barnard,* prior to 1st December, 1630 when he sailed for New England. Although he sailed on the Lyon from Bristol, there is no mention of the ship's clearance in the "Port Books." He was at Salem in 1631, of Plymouth the two following years, and again at Salem until he fled, in January, 1635-36, to what became Providence, being accompanied from Salem by Thomas Angell, and adding to his company John Smith, the miller, Francis Wickes, and William Harris, who were soon joined by others. He visited England in 1643, and with his brother Sydrach,** attempted to recover from the creditors of Robert Williams, a younger brother, who had joined Roger in Rhode Island, property which had been charged with certain payments to them by their mother's will. He returned to Rhode Island in 1644, with a charter for the colony. He again visited England in 1651 and remained until 1654. He was living in January, but deceased before the 25th April, 1683, at which time his wife was also deceased.

* This marriage is established by mention in a letter written by Lady Elizabeth Masham prior to the event. See *Collections R. I. Hist. Soc.*, vol. ii., 1898. Mary (Barnard) Williams had a brother living in New England in 1649 who was apparently in England in 1666. It is likely that this was William Barnard of Charlestown, 1639-1651, whose wife was Alice. He drew a bill of exchange at Charlestown, 8th September, 1640, on his "very loving cousin, Mr. Thomas Free, merch't., at his warehouse at the George in Lombard streate, London." *Lechford's Note-Book*, p. 175. James Barnard and Alice Free were married at Great Berkhamstead, 10th November, 1597, and had a daughter baptized there. Thomas Barnard of Bishop's Stortford, is probably identical with the man of the same name who was steward of the estate of Sir Francis Barrington, whose wife was aunt to Oliver Cromwell, and whose daughter was wife of Sir William Masham. That he was father of Mary (Barnard) Williams, perhaps brother or other near relative of James Barnard who married Alice Free, is not proved. Thomas Barnard, the elder, of Stortford, scrivener, was aged 62 years in October, 1631, and had lived in Stortford since his birth. *Depositions, Essex and Herts, 1630-1633*.

** Sydrach Williams was born in 1594; his estate was administered 1647. He married 1621 Anne, widow of Francis Pinner of London and daughter of Thomas Tyler. Her sister Hester married Rice Williams, a London mercer. Roger Williams of Virginia, whose will was proved 6 January, 1677, probably a son of Sydrach, left sons Roger and Shadrach. Robert, youngest son of James, appears to have been born in 1609 or 1610. He was apprenticed to his brother Sydrach in 1626 and admitted to the Company of Merchant Tailors 1634. See Waters' *Extracts from Marriage Licenses granted by Bishop of London*.

DANIEL³, married REBECCA RHODES, daughter of Zachariah and Joan (Arnold) Rhodes, whose will of 12th June, 1725, was proved 1st January, 1727-28. Married 7th December, 1676, as Rebecca Power, widow of Nicholas, whom she married 3d February, 1671-72.*

Daniel Williams was born in February, 1642, at Providence, and died 14th May, 1712.

MARY⁴, married EPENETUS OLNEY.

Mary Williams is called "sister" by Peleg Williams in a deed to Epenetus Olney, 1716. She was living in 1740.

MARTHA⁵ OLNEY, married STEPHEN ANGELL.

MARTHA⁶ ANGELL, married ISRAEL ANGELL.

* Nicholas Power was killed 19th December, 1675, at the Swamp Fight. He left two sons, Hope, died young, and Nicholas.

W H I P P L E

JOHN¹, married SARAH.

John Whipple was born about 1616. In October, 1632, he was a member of the family of Israel Stoughton of Dorchester, to whom he was apprenticed. The town granted him land in 1638, and soon after this he married, his eldest child being baptized 9th January, 1641, at Dorchester, where he remained until his removal to Providence, 1659. His wife was admitted to Dorchester church 29th October, 1641, but he does not appear to have been a church member. He was seven times Deputy, 1666-77, and was one of those "who staid and went not away" during the Indian War. His will, dated 8th May, 1682, proved 27th May, 1685, names his surviving children. He died 16th May, 1685.

SARAH², married JOHN SMITH.

Sarah Whipple was baptized at Dorchester, 12th August, 1641. Mary Whipple, sister of Sarah, married Epenetus Olney.

SARAH³ SMITH, married RICHARD CLEMENCE.

SARAH⁴ CLEMENCE, married JOHN ANGELL.

STEPHEN⁵ ANGELL, married MARTHA OLNEY.

MARTHA⁶ ANGELL, married ISRAEL ANGELL.

W H I P P L E

JOHN¹, married SARAH.

No connection has been found between John Whipple of Dorchester and Providence and Mathew and John Whipple of Ipswich, Mass. Dorchester church records note that Sarah, daughter of John Whipple, married "Mr. Smith, Providence."

MARY², married EPENETUS OLNEY

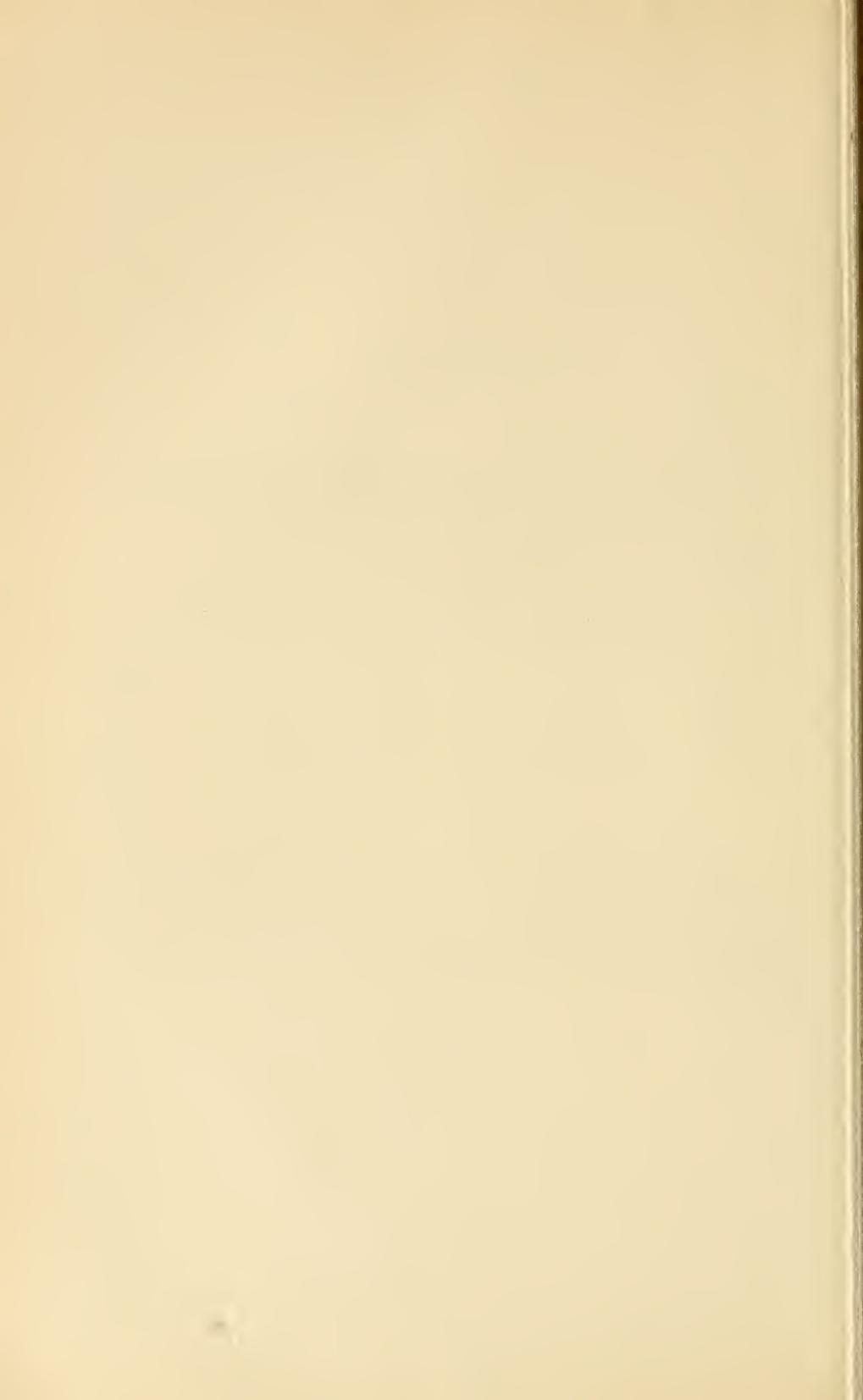
Mary Whipple was baptized at Dorchester, 9th April, 1648; married 9th March, 1665-66, at Providence.

EPENETUS³ OLNEY, married MARY WILLIAMS.

MARTHA⁴ OLNEY, married STEPHEN ANGELL

MARTHA⁵ ANGELL, married ISRAEL ANGELL.

[NOTE: The information here presented pertaining to the ancestry of Colonel Israel and Martha Angell, when not credited to other sources, or found in Austin's *Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, is the result of investigation carried on in both old and New England for the purposes of this book by Mr. Eben Putnam.]



Appendix



APPENDIX I

LETTERS OF COLONEL ANGELL

Concerning the lands set off for the Regiment.

Johnston 9th. April 1781

My dear friend:

This will be handed you by Cap^t C. Olney or Cap^t Allen who will Show you a Copy of the report given in by the Committee for apprizing the Confiscated lands Set off to the Officers and Soldiers for their Services and will also Acquaint you how far it has mett the Approbation of those present. Shall Set off to-morrow to meet Cap^t Tew in order to rent out the two farms Sett off to my Regt as it is no way likely they Can be Sold and Enter'd upon this Spring. Could wish that Cap^t Olney and your Self might Call all the Officers present with you together, and Consult them upon the matter, as it is thought that the lands are prized higher than they Can Possibly be Sold for at present, which may make it Necessary for you to give me Some further Instructions relative to the matter, which advice we Shall be govern'd by, and take Every Step to give Satisfaction to our Constitution Shall Refer you to Cap^{ts} Olney and Allen. for what news there is here. Please to give my Compliments to all the Officers, and believe me to be

Your friend and Humble Serv^t
Israel Angell

Johnston 18th April 1781

To Cap^t Thomas Hughes

My Dear friend:

Since my last of the Ninth instant to Cap^t Hughes, have ben to Connanicutt with Cap^t Tew to lett the farms Set off to my Regiment, as there was not the least probability of Selling them this Spring, the North farm we have lett, the other was not let when I left Newport, the man who it is Expected will hire it was Gone to Providence, and did not Return before I Came away. Cap^t Tew remained behinde to See him, and I am to meet him in Providence tomorrow, the land is good, and

Letters

I am of your Opinion that part of the Hutchinson farm is as good land as the North farm, or any on the Island. We made the Strictest Enquiry of the Inhabitants on the Island what Such lands formerly Sold for p^r Acre, and find that the Common price before the war was from 20 to 25 Dollars p^r Acre— Have Seen none that is of Opinion we ought to have given more than 35 Dollars p^r Acre for the best of it and what Reason those Gentlemen Can give for prizing it as they have is best known to themselves. I was inform'd on the Island that the Hutchinson farm had been Offer'd to M^r John Jencks for twenty Dollars p^r Acre before the war, but he refused to Give that for it & Now every Building fence & Stick of wood is burnt off, it Seems he values it at Near Double that Sum Could wish to know the Opinion of the Gentlemen Officers Respecting the matter as Soon as Convenient, Should think it Advisable at this time, not to let the Soldiers know that the lands was prized higher than they Could be Sold for, that is if the Officers intend to make Application for Redress.

I am Sir Yours,
I. Angell

Cap^t C. Olney

— to give my Compliments to Col. Greene and Officers

Johnston 5th. Sept. 1782

Gentlemen¹:

We are inform'd by maj^t Olney, and a letter Rec^d yesterday from Col^o Olney Dated 15th July. that you Disapprove of our setting off aney more land to aney person who may have purchased Certificates. had we received the letter, Should have Strictly Comply'd with the Contents therein till further orders, but having wrote two or three letters on the Subject and Receiving no answer; and being daily Call'd upon was induced to take the matter up and do what we thought was the best for both Officers and Soldiers, however we may have mised the marke but the matter is justly Stated to you hope you will think more favourable of our proceedings. being Sure you Cannot have reason to think but that we Should Endeavour to act for the best, as we are Equaly Concern'd with you in Service. (or those who Still holde their rights.) and mean to Sink or Swim with you, You was of opinion that making more Divisions would Operate Greatly against us. but upon duly Considering every Circumstance we are of a different Opinion for the following reasons, 1st because

¹ This letter was addressed to "Jeremiah Olney, Esqr., at Head Quarters," and is endorsed "Favoured by Maj^t Olney, I. A."

it is certain there will be a large Ballance in favour of the Deserters, and old Countrymen who have decesed without Heir, and when every man is paid his demands the Remaining part will of Cours fall among us. but Should it all be held in Common Stock till it was all Sold together. those Monopolizers would Come in for an equal Shair of the [Surplusage.?] Secondly. the land we have Set off to Martin he is not to take posession of untill the whole is Sold or Set off to the Officers. but to remain in common Stock and rented together. now in Case the Officers Chuse to have the land Sold. it will oblige Martin to help us to a market for it. for his own Advantage. the land Set of to [Perce?] he is not to have his deed untill he pay, the whole of the money. or the amount in Certificates, which will give both Officers and Soldiers that has a mind to Sell an Opportunity of getting nearer the value of their Money. as his money Advanced will lie dead untill he is able to get his Deed. Thirdly. Should there be no more Divisions or Sails of the land it would finily Stop the Sail of the Certificates. which might be Attended with bad Consequences, now they have Got in Such a way of Selling, for the Soldier would Imedately Say that the Officers were agoing to keep the lands themselves and Cheat them out of their Rights. I Maj^t Olney & Capt Tew are all of Opinion that Could the Officers all Agree it would be best to Reserve Some part to our Selvess. and Divide the Remaining part into Divisions and pay of the Reg^t as Soon as possible, and as we have got no Deed of the point farm. Shall push the matter at the next Session of Assembly with all our force, and insist upon a Deed. money or other lands in lieu thereof, and it is our Opinnion that it will be very nesesarry for Maj^t Olney to be present, if he Can possebly be Spaird, if not, to Send on a Petition which we will push forward to the utmost of our power, and make no Scruple of Carrying our point, I have laid in with several of the hous, who all agree with me that it is a Matter which ought to be done, as Maj^t Olney is waeting Shall Conclude with refering you and the Gentlemen to him for every Minute Scircumstance respecting matters here. and beg Leave to Subscribe my Self your

Sincear Friend and Humble Serv^t,
Israel Angell

In Behalf of my }
Self and Capt Tew }
The Gentlemen officers of the }
R. I. Regiment

Letters

Papers respecting the Pension granted to Colonel Angell.

Providence June 16th 1828

Sir,

Inclosed is my application for the benefit of the Act entitled "An Act for the relief of certain surviving Officers and 'Soldiers of the Army of the Revolution,'" unaccompanied however by any military Commission:—This deficiency has been occasioned by the following circumstance: When application was made by me to the Department of War for the benefit of the Act of 3rd March 1818, in compliance with the requisition of that Department, I forwarded thereto all my Commissions to the number of three or four, none of which have since been returned to me, and are now probably remaining with my application and the Evidence of my claim in that office—

I am, Sir, respectfully,
your obedient Servant
Israel Angell

Honourable Richard Rush

P. S. I beg that it may not be considered either intrusive or impertinent in me to state that I am now in the eighty eight year of my age.—

Israel Angell

For the purpose of obtaining the benefits of an Act entitled "An Act for the relief of certain surviving officers, and Soldiers of the Army of the Revolution," approved on the 15th of May 1828,—I Israel Angell of Smithfield in the County of Providence in the State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, do hereby declare, that I was an Officer in the Continental Line of the Army of the Revolution and served as such to the time when the arrangement of the Army provided by the resolves of Congress of the 3rd and 21st of October, 1780 was carried into effect and that I was reduced under that arrangement, at which period I was Colonel in the second Regiment of the Rhode Island Line.—And I also declare that I afterwards received Certificate (commonly called Commutation Certificates,) for a sum equal to the amount of five years full pay: which sum was offered by the resolve of Congress of the 22nd of March 1783,—instead of the half pay for life to which I was entitled under the resolve of the 21st of October 1780—

And I do further declare that I have received of the United States, as a Pensioner since the 3rd day of March 1826, the sum

of Four hundred & eighty dollars, paid to me by the Agent for paying Pensions in the State of Rhode Island—

Witness my hand this Sixteenth—day of June in the year one thousand eight hundred and twenty eight.—

Israel Angell

No of orig Pay 145

Treasury Department
9 July 1828.

Israel Angell—of Smithfield in the County of Providence in the State of Rhode Island has applied to the Secretary of the Treasury for the benefits of the act, entitled “An Act for the relief of certain surviving officers and soldiers of the army of the Revolution,” approved on the 15th of May, 1828. He states that he was an officer on the Continental line, and served as such to the time when the arrangement of the Army provided by the resolves of Congress of the 3rd and 21st of October 1780, was carried into effect under which he was reduced, at which period he as a Colonel in the Second regiment of the Rhode Island line; and that he received commutation certificates for the five years full pay granted by the resolve of 22 March, 1783; and, further, that he has received as a pensioner since the 3d of March, 1826, Sum of four hundred and eighty—dollars, paid to him by the agent in the State of Rhode Island.

The Third Auditor is requested to report how far these several statements are corroborated by the records in his office.

By order of the Secretary,

A. Dickins

Treasury Department,
Third Auditor's Office,
10th July 1828

It appears by the records in this office, that final settlement certificates have been issued for the commutation of five years full pay to Israel Angell — Colonel in the Rhode Island line, amounting to Four Thousand, five Hundred dollars.

It further appears that Israel Angell—is now on the pension list of the Rhode Island agency, and has been since the 3rd March 1826 at the rate of Twenty Dollars per month.—

Peter Hagner Aud.

Letters

CAMP VALLEY FORGE Febry 19th 1778.

SIR

These may certify that Lt. Samuel Hicks of Colo Greenes Regt is not indebted to the Regt nor Continent—

I am Sir your most obedient,
and most Humble Serv^t

To His Excellency }
General Washington }

ISRAEL ANGELL Colo.

CAMP VALLEY FORGE March 8th 1778

SIR

Whereas Lt Joseph Whitmarsh of Colo Greens Regt. has apply'd to me for a Recommendation for a discharge from the Service, for the following reasons, 1st as the Settlement of the Rank in the Regt. now stands, seems agreeable to the Field officers, and he would by no means wish to create any uneasiness in the Regt as it would Destroy the end and design of his Entering the Service. 2^d under his present Situation he cannot be easy, and the Removal of the cause would be very Disagreeable to many of the Officers in the Regt by which means it would make his case unhappy, for these Reasons he choses to retire from the Servis [although Lt. Whitmarsh is a good officer] Considering the above Circumstances Shall Recommend him to your Honour for a discharge, and give it as my opinion he ought to have an Honourable one.

I am Sir your most ob^t Humble Serv^t

ISRAEL ANGELL Col.

To Genl. Varnum

CAMP (Paramies) July 13th 1778—

Ensign Hawkins of my Regiment being dissatisfied in remaining in the Service; as his Wages are not sufficient to maintain him in the Character he at present sustains, and he not being in Debt to the Publick I do recommend him to Your Excellency for a Discharge.

ISRAEL ANGELL Col.

His Excellency Genl. Washington

APPENDIX II

EXTRACTS FROM THE ORDERLY BOOK KEPT IN COLONEL ANGELL'S REGIMENT

The book from which have been taken the entries dated 1777 and 1778 was kept by Captain William Allen.

The entries of later date are from three books in possession of Mr. H. I. Angell of Chester, N. J., a descendant of Colonel Angell. These books were kept by the regimental adjutant for the time being, who rarely, in making his entries, took pains to reproduce the construction and spelling of the original order. Many errors occur in the spelling of names, and the writing in many cases is almost illegible. As the orders were frequently copied into the books from the reading of the original by another, the phonetic spelling is a guide to the pronunciation of names and words at that time, and also illustrates the limited vocabulary of the younger officers who had not enjoyed much schooling—shown by attempts to reproduce unfamiliar words.

Of the three books in possession of Mr. H. I. Angell one has been presented in two sections, viz., II and IV. The first part of this book was devoted to the orders of General Gates, of Washington, and Resolves of Congress; the latter part to a continuation of the orders given in the book, from which extracts are printed in section III.

I

The regimental orders of Colonel Angell are contained in the Orderly book of Captain William Allen, from the time he joined his regiment in August, to September 25th, 1777. The Orderly book commences with the orders for April 25, 1777, at the time Lieutenant Colonel Olney was in command of the detachment, constantly being augmented by recruits sent on from Rhode Island, where Colonel Angell then was. The regiment joined General Putnam's command in the Highlands in July, and marched to join the main army under Washington in late September.

As there are many items of interest in this Orderly book for the period prior to Colonel Angell's resuming command, a daily

abstract is here presented, in which every name is mentioned which is found in the Orders, and some of the Orders are printed in full.

From the time when the regiment came under the command of General Putnam, the General Orders with few exceptions correspond with those printed by Mr. Worthington C. Ford in 1893, under the title, "General Orders issued by Major-General Israel Putnam, when in command of the Highlands, in the summer and fall of 1777." Mr. Ford used the orderly books of Major Richard Platt, of McDougall's brigade, and Sergeant Daniel Ware of a Connecticut regiment. Platt's book began with June 1, 1777, and Ware's on July 19th. Some slight differences between the two books were noted by Mr. Ford. Similar differences are found in Allen's book, usually where he differs from Ware, he agrees with Platt.

Both Platt and Ware omit the orders of General Putnam on a few days in which they appear in Allen's copy, hence these orders are given for those days, and a few omissions which appear to be of consequence are also given.

Otherwise the extracts from Allen's book, are confined to Colonel Angell's orders, and Brigade orders of General Varnum, when of interest. Details for guard and fatigue duty are omitted.

The Orderly book of Captain Allen is in the possession of Colonel George L. Shepley of Providence, who courteously permitted a copy to be made.

Head Quarters Morristown April 25th 1777

Colo^s & commanding officers of corps must Cause their Regiments paymasters to make up their pay Abstracts to the first of this month and order them to attend at the pay master Gene^{ls} for the Money.

proper attention to the Gen^l Orders of this Neature on the 21st of last month would not only Have Removed the Complaint of the Soldiers for want of their money so frequently made to the Commander in Chife but would have Saved them much Truble in Setling their Accounts

the most puctual Obediance must be paid to their Orders no Excuse for Delay Can or will be admitted.

They are also Directed to Desire the Surgeons to make a return of the Medicines & Instruments in their posession to the Director General.

At Hed Quarters on Monday Next the adjutent Gen. will Transmit Copies of those Orders Immediately to All those Gentlemen Concerned.

The officer of the Day in Visiting the guards is to be particularly attentive to See that the guard houses Are Cleaned & in Good Order particularly the provist guard which is to be Cleaned Every Day the Rooms where the prisoners are Confined as well as the Guard Rooms the officers' Releiving.

Hed Quarter Morristown 28th April 1777

Every corps must Immediately put their arms in the best firing Order & be Compleated with ammunition The Commanding officers of corps will see this order complied with as they will be answerable for any neglect thereof

The Quarter Master Gen^l to Furnish each corps with Tents & proper [conveniences?] to carry them that they may be ready upon the Shortest Notis for Removing.

The Gen^l laments the necessity he is Laid under Respecting his orders by wchc the officers was forbid riding about Country thereby absenting themselves from their Duty if any sudden call for officers or defensive — Should be maid during their absent. they will asuridly be Brought to Severe account for their Conduct.

[Abstract]

[Morristown, May 1, 1777. Regimental Court Martial. Captain Flagg, president, Captain Olney, Lieutenants Arnold and Sayles, Ensign Dexter, to try Robert Piper, William Thomas, Oliver Washburn, John (Scharrnes), Anthony Foss, Joseph White, James Hobb, Frederick Kerker. All but the last two for either being drunk and leaving their posts, or for sleeping when on sentry duty, were found guilty. Hobb and Kerker acquitted. John Gibson of the light horse, witness against Thomas, who had also stabbed a horse in the public stable. Punishment was whipping to be administered on the regimental parade.]

G. O. Morristown, May 3. Major Painter appointed Superintendent of Artificers and works, in and about Morristown. Mr. Machies' stable mentioned. Regimental C.M., Captain Olney, president, Captain Allen, Lieutenants Arnol, Brown, Ensign Dexter, to try David Hartly, James King, Pat Durphe, who pled guilty of absence from roll call and quarters. To ride the wooden horse twenty minutes, with hands tied behind them, and two fire-locks tied to each man's feet. Edward Everson, late corporal in Captain C. Olney's company, restored to his grade.]

Orderly Book

Morristown 4th May 1777
Regm¹ Orders

Tis with great Concern the Lt Colo is informed that many of the Soldiers in the Detachment are not only Dirty but Lowzy Which he is Fully Sencible arrises from No other Cause than that of Laziness & want of Frequently Shifting their Linen & as the Soldiers are at present well Clad the Lieut Colo most Earnestly Desires the Captains to Cause their orderly Sarj^{ts} to Examom their Respective Com[mands?] carefully & them that are found Dirty & Lowzey to be Immediately ordered to Clean & Clense them Selvs from their Shamefull Situation upon penality of being Severily punished for Disobedince of orders, While the Lieut Colo. Justly Complains of those who through Neglect make Such a Shameful appearance he Cannot but Return his thanks to those who In obedience to orders keep them Selvs Clean and neat and he assures them So long as Obedience to orders marks their Conduct they shall ever merit his attention: on the other hand he is Determined to punish with Severity all those who willfully offend against Reason order & Discipline.

Three orderly Serjt are to attend for all orders: the adjutant will Furnish them with the orderly book or Copyes thereof from this order to be Closly attended too as Each Company ought to have the Orders Completed

A Regim¹ Court Martial held at Morristown this 4th Day of may 1777 by Order of Lt Colo Olney. Capt W^m Allin President

Lieut Arnold	}	Lieut Brown
Lt Sayles	}	Ens ⁿ Dexter

The Court being Duly Sworn proceeded to the trial of Moses Stevens Serjt in Capt. Flaggs Comp. Charged of getting Drunk & Disobeying of orders the Serjant he pleaded Guilty of Getting Drunk But Denies being Guilty of Disobeying of orders Serjt Dexter on Oath Saith that Sarjt Stevens said in his hearing that he had Recivd orders from Lieut Arnold to Carry his chest to his Quaters The Chest then Laid in the highway in the beat of the Waggons Serjt Dexter further Saith that Serjt Stevens went of & left the Chest & Did not Return untill brought by a file of men.

Lt. Stevens is found guilty of a Breach of the latter part of the 5th Artical of the 2^d Section of the article of War the Court in [Coole?] Delibration Decree that Sarjt Stevens be Reduced to a private Continue to Do Duty as Such.

Mather Bryant of Capt Allens Company charged with Absenting himself from the fatigue party half a day & getting Drunk Pleads Guilty: the Court therefore Ordred him to Ride the Woden horse twenty minutes with six firelocks Lashed to his feet

The Court perceded to the Tryal of Noyls¹ Confind for Using Bad & very Disrespectfull Language Against his officers & wished one half of them in hell Said Noils plead guilty & Beggs the mercy of the Court: the Court finding the prisoner Punishable agreeable to the 5th artical & the 18 Section of the Artical of War; the Court Considering the Neature of the offence Do order him to Recive Fifty Stripes on his Naked back.

The Court preceeded to the tryal of Wm Thomas a Soldier in Capt [Cog^{el}] Olneys Comp Confined for Getting Drunk and absenting himself all night from his Quaters The prisoner W^m Thomas plead Guilty Begs the mercy of the Court.

The Court finding him guilty of A Breach of the 1, 2, 3 & 4th Artical of War in the 13th Section.

The Court Do therefore order him to recive Ninety Nine Stripes on his Naked back.

Signed By orders of the Court Martial Capt. W^m Allin president.

Ye 4 of May 1777 the Lieut Colo approves the above the sentence of the Court Martial & orders them put in execution Tomorrow at Six oclock.

[Abstract]

[G.O. Morristown, May 5. Act of Congress published, establishing one Surgeon General for each army, to superintend the regimental surgeons and mates, and report to the Director General, or Deputy Director General; providing supplies for a general hospital; and authority to remove regimental surgeons and appoint others. Doctor William Shippen, Jr., appointed Director General of the military hospital(s) erected and to be erected by the United States, Doctor Walter Jones and Doctor Benjamin Rust, physicians and Surgeons General of the army in the Middle Department.

May 6. Regimental Orders. John Patterson, Captain Flagg's company, appointed sergeant in room of Moses Stevens reduced to ranks.

May 6. Regimental C.M. Captain Ebenezer Flagg, president, Captain Allen, Lieutenants Grant, Sayles, Brown, to try corporal Meragan, Captain Allen's company, lodging out of quarters (reduced to private centinel); Richard Sefton of Allen's company, ditto and lying (59 stripes); Oliver Washbon, Allen's company, for drunk and drawing his bayonet on another soldier (evidence of Corporal Meragler; 69 stripes).

¹ Qy. Niles.

Orderly Book

May 7. Regimental Orders. Frederick Keraker, Captain Allen's company, appointed corporal vice Micagah Mulligan, reduced for sleeping out of quarters.

Regimental C.M. Captain William Allen, president, Lieutenants Grant, Sayles, Brown, Ensign Dexter, to try Marke Barnes (drunk and abusing the good people of the house; 29 stripes).

G.O. May 9. Concerning the awful vice of gaming; all games except those of exercise forbidden. "Officers attentive to their duty will find abundant employment in training, disciplining their men, providing for them, and seeing that they appear neat and clean and soldierlike, nor will anything render more to their honor, afford them more solid amusement, or better answer the end of their appointment than to devote the vacant moments they have to study of military (affairs).

Head Quarters at Morristown 10 of May 1777

James Davis in the 11 Virginia Reg^t Tryed at General Court Martial held at Bond Brook Whereof Col^o M^cClainhan was President Charged With Having Persuaded A Soldier to Disert to the Enemy is a Quitter By the Court he is therefore to be Discharged forth With from his Confinement.

It having bin observed Notwithstanding former Orders to the Contrary that Some officers Make A Practis of Riding the Continental Horses as Well as those Belonging to the Inhabitance In the Neighbourhood of the Army—the Commander In Chief Perticular Desires that if any officer In future will Dare to Presume to Ride Any Horse Either Public or Private property With Out Leve first Obtained from the officer Whose Care it is to Dispose of When if Public Property: Or from the Owner if Private Property: Shall immediately be Brought to Tryal By a Gen^l Court Martial.

Head Quarters 11 of May 1777

The 3.. 7.. 11 & 15th Virginia Regiments Are to Compose A Brigade und^r the Command of Brigadier Gen^l Woodford. And the 4th 8.. 12 & 16 Virginia Regts Are to Compose another Brigade und^r the Command of Brigadier Gen^l Scott.

Benjamin Day Esq^r is appointed Brigadier Major to Gen^l Woodford & Sam^l Shaw Esq^r is appointed Brigade Major—to Brigadier Gen^l Knox—Both Are to be Respected And OBey^d As Such.

Regimental Orders:

The Lieut Col^o Orders that in All Regimental Court Martials for the future When Evidences Are Produced to Support the

Appendix II

229

Charge Against any Prisoner, that Such Evidence as far as it Relates to the Charge he annexed to the Proceedings of the Court Martial.

Morristown 13 May 1777

Regimental Court Martial held this Day By ord^{er} of Lieut Col^o Olney.

To try all Such Prisoners as Shall be Brought before them.

Capt W^m Allin President

Lieut Arnold } members { Lieut Brown
Lieut Sayles } Ensign Dexter

The Court Being Duly Sworn Proceeded to the Tryal of Hugh McDugall. But as no Crime Appears against him the Court ord^s him to be Immediately Discharged from his Confinement The Court Proceeded to the Tryal of Mark Barns Charged With Absenting him Self from Roll Call The Prisoner plead Guilty the Court find the Prisoner Guilty of a Breach of the 4 Article 13 Section of the Article of War—And do ord^{er} him to Recive Thirty One Stripes On his Naked Back.

The Court Proceeded to the Tryal of Joseph Hall Charged with Disobedience of Ord^s When on Guard; the Prisoner plead Not Guilty. The Charge being fully Proved a Gainst him By the Evidences of Sargents Regan and Sam^l Gardner Dyer. Sarg^t Regan On Oath Saith that he was Exersising the Guard under his Command and ordered them to fire As front Rank, the Prisoner Joseph Hall Refused Kneeling and told me twas too Dirty—I again ordered him But to no Effect I then struck Him With the Britch of my Gunn But he not Withstanding fully Refused to Obey My order. I then Struck him with my Fist the Sarg^t further Saith Not.

Sam^l Gardner Dyer On Oath Saith that His Evidence is agreeable to Sargant Regans. The Court find the Prisoner Guilty of a breach of the 5 Article 2nd Section of the Article of War—and Do Thairefore order him to Ride the Wooden Horse Seventy Minutes with four fire Locks Lash^d to his feet.

The Court Proceeded to the Tryal of Peter Binns Charged With Disobediance of Orders When on Guard the Prisoner plead Guilty—The Court find the Prisoner Guilty of A Breach of the 5 Article 2 Section of the Article of War and Do thairefore order him to Receive Fifty Stripes on his Naked Back. The Col^o Approves the Pending Sentences of the Court Martial & orders him to—take place at 6-OClock this Evening. The a Bove Court Martial is Disolv^d By order of Lieut Col^o J. Olney.

[Abstract]

G.O. May 14. Quartermaster General to repair the road; also to build a guard house in the upper redoubt on the hill, to con-

Orderly Book

tain 30 men, to be slight and attended with little expense. The Commander in Chief approves sentences of General Court Martial at Colonel Shrieve's quarters, 5th inst., Colonel Ogden president; Elin Jones, for deserting from his post to the enemy, to suffer death; the execution to be postponed until further orders. John Whitebred, Richard Shaw, John Wood, of the 11th Pennsylvania Battalion, accused of desertion, acquitted, to duty. Lieutenant Ross, 2d Jersey Battalion, charged with assaulting and using "ungenteel" language to Captain Anderson, acquitted. Ensign Patterson of 1st Virginia Battalion, leaving camp without orders, cashiered and ordered to depart. Thomas Evens, 11th Pennsylvania, deserting his post with intent to go to the enemy, to receive 100 lashes. Benjamin Moore, 2d New Jersey, for deserting and reenlisting, 75 lashes. Sergeant Hammond, 12th Pennsylvania, mutinying and striking Captain Patterson, to be reduced and to ask pardon. Sergeants Myhard and Hallbrook, Corporal Smith, Philip Hendrick, Stephen Lee, all of the 1st Jersey, suspected of robbing house of Elias Bland. Myhard, Smith, and Lee guilty, 100 lashes, but if they confess before punishment to be released. Others acquitted. Sentences of G.C.M. held 12th inst., Lieutenant Colonel Barber president, approved. William Murphy, of Colonel Angell's regiment, tried for desertion, acquitted. Samuel Greatwood, for striking a sergeant, 50 lashes. Joseph Borden of Colonel Patton's regiment, acquitted. Patt Dunfee, of Colonel Olney's detachment, stabbing the Adjutant General's horse, 50 lashes. Joseph Thornbury, Esquire, appointed wagon master. Detail from Colonel Dayton's regiment, with arms, etc., three days provisions; the officer will receive his orders from Colonel Biddle, D.Q.M.G.

Morristown 16 of May 1777

Regimental orders

The Lieut. Col^o is Surprised to hear that sum of the Soldiers in his Detachment (Not Consulting thir own Ease and Comfort) have had their Blanketts Cut up to Make Great Coats and (Surtoats?)—Which he forBid in the Most Posative terms—Any Soldier offending in future—hercين May Depend on Being Severely Punishd for Disobediance of Orders.

Head Quarters 16th of May 1777

Francis Lewis Esq^r is appointed Brigader Major to B. Gen^l MurchlenBurg and is to be respected a Cordingly.

[Abstract]

May 16. Regimental C.M. Captain Flagg, president, Captain Olney, Lieutenants Grant, Arnold, Ensign Dexter, to try John

Lewis, going to Bottle Hill without leave, and absence from quarters all night, to ride wooden horse with four firelocks tied to his feet.

May 17. Regimental C.M. Captain Coggeshall Olney, president, Captain William Allen, Lieutenants Arnold, Grant, Ensign Dexter. John Martin, 2d, drawing his hanger and striking at Corporal Johnson, when in the execution of his office. Martin plead not guilty. Sergeant Greenman testified that Martin caught a hanger out of his hand and made three rapid passes with his hanger. Sergeant Hopkins gave like testimony. Martin to receive 100 stripes. John Martin, 2d, for striking Sergeant Greenman three times with a club. 100 stripes on his naked back. John Bently absent from duty and being at a grog-shop (Corporal Brown, Sergeant Stewart) witnesses. William Thomas, absent from quarters all night (30 stripes). Colonel Olney remits the second punishment decreed Martin.

May 21. Regimental C.M. Captain Flagg, president, Captains Olney, Allen, Lieutenants Arnold, Grant, to try Matthew Barr of Allen's company, for selling a quarter of mutton to John Lewis Garrew, then stealing the mutton from Garrew and converting it to his own use. Barr claimed he returned the money. Daniel (Beaton?) witness, Edward Murphy, witness, Henry Dove, witness. 75 lashes.

Head Quarters Morristown 17 May 1777

All the Troops In and about Morristown to attend Divine Service to Morrow Morning No Excuse will be admitted.

Head Quarters Morristown 19th May 1777

The Commander in Chief positively Directs that all officers Stationed at out posts Do not Come to Morristown But when their Business Absolutely Requires them & in that Case that they Return to theyer posts With all possible Expedition.

Thom^s Muller Esq^r, is Appointed Brigade Major to Brigadier Gen^l De Boiro and is to be Respected and Obeyed as Such.

A Number of horses having Been Drawn from the Q. M: Gen^l for particular Uses And Not Returned When the Business Was Proformed. All officers of Regim^t And Others in Possession of Horses Belonging to or hired by the State are Immediately to Return to the Q. M. Gen^l or His Deputy or his Assistants in the Districts they may be at. The General officers are to order Return to be Made of Any Publick Horses Employed in theyre families that the State of the Horses Belonging to the Army May be known.

Orderly Book

Head Quarters May 20th 1777

Valentine Peers Esq^r is Appointed Brigade Major to Brigadier Gen^l Weedon and is to be Respected and Obeyed as Such.

Lewis Woodruff Esq^r is appointed Deputy Muster Master.

Col^s and Commanding officers of Battallion And Corps Must Cause their Regim^l pay Masters to make up their pay Abstracts to the 30th Day of April Inclusive. And Order them to Attend at The pay Master Generals office for the Money. They must be Examined and Signed by their Respective Commanding officers and Brigadiers who will Diligently Compare them with the Daily & Weekly Return & Certify them. the Company Abstracts must be Delivered to the pay Master Gen^l with the Regimen^l Abstracts.

That the Great and Necessary Purpose of Adjusting the Rank of all the officers In the American Army May be Effectued With Expedition. His Excellency the Commander In Chief is pleased to Order that the Field officers of Each Continental Battⁿ Do Immediately Examine into the prest Rank and hear the pretensions thereto of all their Capt^t and Subaltern Settle them when they Can to the Satisfaction of all the Gentlemen Concerned & make a full and fair Report of all their proceedings to the Brigadiers Commanding their Brigade and that the Brigadiers with The Assistance of the Field officers in their Brigade do upon the Receipts of Such Reports proceed to adjust the Ranks of All the officers in their Respective Brigades And a full and Just Report of their proceedings to the Major Gen^l Commanding their Divisions that Should there be Any Instance of Dissatisfaction in the officers with the Determination of their Field officers They be Candidly Enumirated by Such field officers and party Complaining with All theyr Attendant Circumstances and Reported to their Respective Brigadiers Who Shall Call Before them all the parties Intrested and Inquire into their Claimes And if they Cannot be Settled to General Satisfaction Make a Special and particular Report to their Major Generals.

upon Receipts of Such Several Reports A Board of Officers Will take a Dispassionate comparitive View of the Whole and Determin the Rank in the Army.

Untill which time it is Expected the Service Will not be [injured] A Bout Disputes a Bout Ranks. But that Every Officer will by An Emulous Discharge of his Duty Recommend himself to his County and to the promotion he thinks Himself Intitled to.

Head Quarters Morristown the 22^d May 1777

the Following Rangment is to take Place for the Present Subject to Such alterations as Circumstances May Hereafter

Require Viz the 1th, 5th, 9th, & 13th Regiments from Virginia With Hazens Regiments to Compose the First Brigade From that State under the Command of Brigadier Muchlenburg.

the 2^d—6th—10th & 14th Rigement to Compose the 2^d Under the Command of Brigadier [Madon?] these two Brigades to form a Division to Bee Commanded By Major General Greene.

the third Seventeenth Eleventh & fifteenth Virginna Rige-
ment to Compose the third Brigade from that State under the Command of Brigadier Woodford and the 4th 8 —& 12 Together With Graysons & Pattons to Compose the Fourth Under the Command of Brigadier Scott.—those two Brigades to Form Another Division to Bee Commanded by General Stephens.

the first third and Sixth Mereyland Regements and that from the Lower County on Dilaway (Delaware) to Compose the First Maryland Brigade under the Command of Brigadier General Smallwood: and the 2^d—4th & 7 from the Same State and the German Battalion to Compose the Second under the Command of Brigadier [De Borre?], two Brigades to form another Division under the Command of Mayjor General Sullivan.

the 1^t 2^d 7th & 10th Pencylvena Rigements and Hartleys to Compose the First Brigade from that State under the Comand of Brigadier [Wayne]: and the 4th—5—8 & 11th the Second under the Command of Brigadier Dehaas these Two Brigad to Compose aNother Division to Bee Commanded By Lincoln.

the 6th—9 & 12th Pencylvenia Rigements and Spencers to form the third Brigade from that State: and the 1, 2—3 & 4th Gersey Rigements to Compose the Gersey Brigad these two Brigades to Compose another Division under the Command of Maygor General Lord Starling.

Arangments General Knox is to Make aNother of the field artillery Allowing a Perportionable Number of Peaces to Each Brigade a Soficcient Quantity of Spair Amonition for Both artillery and Musquets to Bee Conveyed in Secure Carrages he is also to Give Nesesary orders for—

[Abstract]

G.O. May 23. Colonel Olney, Lieutenant Colonels Barber and Dehart to sit as a Court of Enquiry, at Captain Dickerson's, relative to dispute between Mr. Robert Williams, commissary, and the state of New Jersey.

G.O. May 24. Commander in Chief approves sentences of G.C.M. held at Ash Swamp, 14th inst., Colonel Matthewson, president. Ensign Gill, 4th Virginia (absent without leave, but because of good character, reprimanded at head of regiment),

Orderly Book

Captain Russell, 5th Virginia, not guilty, Lieutenant Bradford of Colonel Rawling's regiment, absent without leave, to a future Court Martial, Thomas Smith, of Colonel Steven's regiment, to suffer death for desertion, sentence suspended.

Reginald Giles, Esquire, appointed Aide de camp to Major General St. Clair. All troops about Morristown to attend divine service tomorrow morning.

[Abstract]

Regimental C.M. May 26. Captain E. Flagg, president, Captain C. Olney, Lieutenants Arnold, Peirce, Ensign Dexter, to try James Phillips, Moses Stephens (for striping to fight, Stephens the aggressor, Phillips reprimanded, Stephens, 29 stripes) William Foster (stealing bread from main guard, Corporal Thomas, witness; 15 stripes). Captain Olney to officiate in Flagg's place, at the punishment, as Flagg goes out to meet Major Ward. (Major Ward probably from Rhode Island with recruits.)

Head Quarters Morristown 26 of May 1777

it Being omitted this Mistake in the ord^r of the 22 Inst^t to Mention the Brigadier Gen^l that Command Major Gen^l Lord Sterling's Division—Brigadier Gen^l Conway Command the 3.. 6.. 9 & 12th Pennsylvania Rigements Which Compose His Brigades. Gen^l Maxwell Command the 1—2—3 & 4 Jersey Rigements Which Form his Brigades.

Fowling Esq^r is appointed Brigade Major to Brigadier Gen^l Conway & is to be Respected & obeyd as Such.

Head Quarters Morristown 27th May 1777

One Sub^l Sargent & Twenty Privates of Lt Col^o Olneys Detachment to Do Duty as Artillery Man Under the Lieut In Morristown till Further orders.

Head Q^{rs} Morristown 28 May 1777.

Parole, Washington Counter Sⁿ Olney
Officer of the Day to Morrow Capt Allen

Head Quarters Morristown 29th May 1777

The officers of the Day Are to relive Each other upon the Grand Parade every Morning When the Guard Mounts at Eight oClock Give the officers of the Different Guards their Necessary orders. & Visit the Guard Night & Day And Report

Appendix II

235

their States as Soon as Reliv^d. Delivering at the Same time a Copy of the Report to the Reliving Officer.

S S C P^r

I 2-5 & 4 to Parade Immediately for Guard. the ordily Sarg^t Constantly to attend at the adj^t Quarters for orders at 12 oClock Untill further Orders.

Officer of the Day to Morrow Cap^t Hall.

A Trusty Sarjeant & 6 Privates to Parade at Sun Sitt for a Guard in the Upper Redoubt to preseve This Order on the Parades.

Head Quarters Morristown May 31^t 1777

P: Rhode Island.

C. S. Providence.

The officers of the main Guard not to Suffer Any of the Inhabitents what ever to Converse With the State prisoners Except they first Get my Leave in Wrighting for that purpose & then the officer of the Guard is to pay particular Attention to what pases Between them.

Guard for toMorrow as Usial

officer of the Day Tomorrow Cap^t Olney.

The Commanding officer of the Main Guard are Once in three Days to Draw provissions for the Number of prisoners under Confinement—Belonging to the State or prisoners of war those of my Detachment to Draw provissions In their Respective Companies and See that the Guards Supply the prisoners With wood And Water Necessary for Cooking &.

Head Quarters 1^t June 1777

P: Green:

C: S Varnum

Guards as Usial officer of the Day tomorrow Cap^t Allen.

Head Quarters 2^d June 1777

P: French

C: S. War.

officer of the Day Tomorrow Cap^t Hall

Guard as Usial. A fitague party Consisting of 1 Sub 1 Seg^t 2 Corp^{ls} and 24 Privates to parade at 8. oClock to Morrow Morning to apply to adjutent for tools they will Receive their orders from the Col^o. The officers Commanding the Main Guard are to pay particular Attention that the Guard Rooms Are Swept Clean Every Morning the Relief officer is not to Reliev the Main Guard Except he finds the Guard house in Good Order

The officers are also to make the prisoners Sweep out their Rooms otherwise the Disagreeable Stink will Effect the whole Guard house as this order is Calculated to Render the Guard

Orderly Book

as A Greeable as possible to Both officers and Soldiers the Col^o. Doubts not But proper Notice will Be Given thereto.

A Court Martial to Sett to Morrow Morning at 9: o-Clock Consisting of 1 Capt & 4 Subs for the Tryal of Such prisoners as may be Brought Before them.

A Trusty Serg^t & Corporal & 6 privates to parade at 5: o'Clock to morrow Morning to Conduct A party of prisoners to Sussex Court House And Deliver them to the Court Now Setting there.

Head Quarters 3^d June 1777

P—philedelphy
officer of the Day Tomorrow Cap^t Flagg
Guard and fatague As Usial.

C: S: Virgina

Head Quarters Morristown 4th June 1777

P:
officer of the Day tomorrow Cap^t Olney
1 Sub. 1 Lt. 1 Cl. 16 Pr. for fatague to Morrow
Guard as Usial

C:S

the Men off Duty are to parade at 3: o-Clock this afternoon Inorder to pitch their Tents upon the Ground Marked out for that purpose Major Quin will Provide Straw for the Tents the Qr Master to See the wagons are Drove up to the Incampment & a Return from Each Com^y of the number of new tents will be wanted for and Serve them Accordingly to One tent to 6 Men.

Regimental C.M. June 3. Captain C. Olney, president, Lieutenants Arnold, Pierce, Kitchal, Ensign Dexter, to try Joseph White, and Thomas Brinley (drunk, 39 lashes), William Thomas (drunk, sleeping on post; witnesses Davis, Corporal Vanluden; 39 lashes), Tobias Briggs (selling his blanket; pay stopped, 15 lashes), Charles McDole (drowsy on post and sitting down; 24 hours in confinement, on bread and water).

Camp at Morristown June 7th 1777

Cap^t of y^e Day tomorrow, Cap^t Flagg.
S S C P

The Main Guard to consist of 2.. 2.. 3 50 till further Orders. All y^e Troops off duty are to attend divine Service regularly at y^e Church on Sunday, to appear in Uniform Neat & clean without Arms

[Abstract]

Morristown, June 8. Captain David Dexter, officer of the day, tomorrow. Captains and commanding officers in Major Ward's

detachment to make returns of arms and blankets, and clothing of any kind, supplied by the states that have been lost, etc.; delinquents to have pay stopped.

After Orders, June 9. Articles of War to be read this evening at roll call. The Lieutenant Colonel was somewhat surprised this morning to see the arms in general so rusty and unclean.

Camp at Morristown, June 10. Captain Olney officer of the day tomorrow. June 11. Captain Allen, ditto. Orders regarding exercising the Guard.

Camp at Morris Town June 12th 1777

Cap^t Hall, Officer for y^e Day.
Guard & Fatigue as usual.

The Lieut^t Co^{ll} Orders a return to be made from each Company of All y^e damaged Cartridges, & y^e number wanting to compleat each man with a full Box of Cartridges. this Return may be made today & tomorrow.

the Cap^t & commanding Officers of Companies are to deliver y^e Adj^t a Weekly return on Fridays at 12 oClock, Shewing y^e exact State of their respective Companies, in Order that y^e State of y^e Detachment may be certainly known. The arms are never to be neglected, especially after Rain.

Orders of March for y^e Grand Army

The whole Army to be under Arms at — oClock, y^e tents to be immediately Struck & y^e Waggons loaded — The Regiments to be told off in Grand and Sub Divisions & to March at half Sub-Divisions — the Officers to be posted at their proper places — y^e Brigadiers at y^e Head of their Divisions — the whole Army to be in readiness to March at y^e time appointed: in this Position to wait y^e Orders of y^e Brigadier of y^e Day for moving. that y^e whole may March together.

the Main-Guard to Consist of 40 light Dragoons, & one Brigade of Foot under y^e command of Brigadiers Gen^r Mucklingburgh, to advance about 2½ Miles in y^e Front of y^e Army, to March about an Hour before the Troops are ordered to be in readiness.

Reconnoitering parties to be sent some distance in y^e Front & on y^e Flanks to examine places where Ambuscades may be concealed.

The Pioneers to March between y^e light Troops, & y^e Main-

Orderly Book

Guard, & to repair y^e Bridges & Roads where necessary to effect a Safe & easy Passage to y^e Army

the Van-Guard to take their Artillery with them, & y^e Column to advance from y^e Right

the Army to March in y^e following Order, Advancing from y^e Right by Sub-Divisions Gen^rl Weeden's Brigade first, then Woodford's, Scott's, Wayne's, [Dehaas], Conway, Maxwell's, ye Artillery annexed to each Brigade to March in, now posted in y^e lines, Maxwell's Brigade to form y^e rere-Guard—one Quarter of y^e Strength are to march in y^e rere of y^e rest about $\frac{1}{2}$ a mile to pick up Straglers—A Detachment of 30 light Dragoons to form a part of y^e rere-Guard.

Co^{ll} Morgan's light Infantry to cover y^e left Flank of y^e Army exclusive of which each Brigade is to furnish a party of 50 Men to Reconnoitre y^e Enemies Flanks properly officerd, & to be commanded by a Field Officer of y^e Day.

the Park of Artillery to march in y^e Centre of y^e reserve Party in y^e second line.

No Soldier during ye March to leave his Division to fetch Water, but if necessity should oblige any to quit their Ranks they are to leave their Arms with y^e Battallion, & a Non-Commissioned Officer to go with them & see that they return to there proper places.

Great Attention must be Paid in passing Defiles, that men may pass them Briskly if necessary in Files & form in Sub-Divisions as soon as y^e Road will permit of it—the Head of y^e Column to move slow after passing a Defile, until y^e Rere has gain'd it also.

Camp Morris-Town June 13th 1777.

Officer of y^e Day tomorrow Cap^t Flagg.

Guard as usual. No Fatigue party to be furnished to Day.

By express from General Varnum.

I am directed to hold my self in readiness to march at y^e shortest notice with Provisions cooked therefore order y^e Q^r Master to furnich y^e Men with 3 Days Provisions immediately y^e Captains will see that tis cook'd as soon as possible & direct their Men to keep their cloathing &c: constantly pack'd up, that we may have nothing but y^e Tents to strike & load up when order'd to march—y^e Q^r Master must see that y^e Waggen Horses are all Shod & every thing respecting y^e Waggans made compleat as soon as possible.

A General Court Martial to set immediately consisting of Major Ward as President, 5 Cap^ts & 7 Subs as Members for y^e trial of such persons as may be brôt before y^e Court.

Lincoln's Gapp 29th June 1777.

Brigade Orders

The Cap^{ts} or commanding Officers of Companies are required immediately to make returns of ye respective Articles of Cloathing belonging to each Man under their Command. Also returns of their Arms Ammunition, Bayonets, Flints, Cross & Shoulder Straps to ye commanding Officer of their Cores when these returns are made, examinations must be had Weekly respecting ye Cloathing—Examinations daily respecting ye Arms, Accoutrements &c: Should any deficiencies happen, ye deliquents will not only be responsible in Damages from their monthly pay but will be punish'd Corporally according to ye nature of their Offence. The Drummers of ye whole Brigade are to attend ye Orders of ye Drum-Major Wise who is appointed Drum-Major for ye Brigade. The Fifers must practice without intermission. The greatest attention must be paid to keeping ye Arms in good Order, as great neglect has been practiced in that particular—Prophane Swearing is absolutely forbid Officers and men are directed to pay due regard to this Order. J.M.V:B:Gen^{ll}

Camp at Peeks Kill July 8th 1777.

Regimental Orders

A Court Martial to set immediately, consisting of 1 Cap^{ll} & 4 Subs to try such prisoners as shall be brôt before them.

The Cap^{ts} or Commanding Officers of Cores are to order their Men to go immediately to washing their Cloaths & cleaning their Arms — those Arms that are Loaded will be drawn by applying to ye person appointed for that purpose, who will attend at ye Waggon Guard.

The Officers & Men are to be under Arms at 8 oClocktomorrow Morning, tis expected that they appear neat & clean as possible.

[The following General Orders for July 10, 1777, do not appear in Allen's Orderly-book:

Head Quarters, Peeks Kill, 10 July, 1777.

C. Sign, Webb.

Parole, Leonard
Lt. Col. Russel
B. Major Fosdick } Officers of the day for tomorrow.
Adjutant Smith

The Gen^l orders the Disposition of the several Brigades to be as follows. vitz.:

Brigadier Gen^l McDougall's Brigade to be on the Right near the old Orchard.

B. Gen^l Parsons on the Left between H^d Quarters and Col^o Sam^l Drake's.
B. Gen^l Varnum's on the Right of the Centre next to Gen^l McDougall's.

Orderly Book

B. Gen^t Glover's on the left of the Centre next to Gen^t Parsons.

B. Gen^t Huntington's in the Centre upon the Fish Kill road leading from Peeks Kill

The Brigades to be as follows:
 Col^o S. Green's }
 Col^o S. Webb's }
 Col^o Sherburne's }
 Col^o Angel's } Gen^t Varnum's.]

Camp July 15th 1777.

Regimental Orders

As ye General has order'd prayers to be attended at 5. oClock in ye Morning, the Companies are to exercise from Revellee beating until 5. oClock (only) instead of Six as order'd yesterday.

The Capt^s or Commanding Officers of Companies are to make return immediately of ye Number of Canteen's wanting to compleat their respective Cores with one to each Man. Care must be taken to charge every Canteen that has been drawn & cannot at present be produc'd.

Cap^t Talbot is requested to make out a pay abstract for 2 Months for ye Officers & Soldiers of ye Detachment that came up with him. He will take care to distinguish those of one Regim^t from those of the other, as ye Money must be drawn on account of the Regiments by seperate Warrants.

Camp at Peeks-Kill July 15th 1777.

Regimental Orders

The Lieu^t Col^o frequently observes ye Men appear on parade for Guard &c: with their Arms in bad Order, their cloathing extreamly Dirty, & Slovenly in their Dress: for preventing these Evils, & this unsoldier like practice, tis most earnestly recommended to ye Cap^t & Commanding Officers to have their respective Companies divided into Messes of six Men each, & appoint a Serg^t & Corp^l to each Mess or more Messes as ye Case may require who are to be responsible to their Cap^t or other Officers for neglect in their respective Messes touching this Order or any other neglect of Duty. Care must be taken that ye Serg^t and Corporal of any particular Mess are not both order'd on duty at ye same time, neither are all ye Men of a Mess to be on duty at one time as some should be left to Cook &c; for those on Guard. . . . By adopting a Plan of this kind, I am Confident (with the assistance ye Officers have shewn on all occasions) that our men will Grace ye parade with a more cleanly & Soldier-like appearance than at present, which will do Honour to them & the Officers who command them.

Appendix II

241

Head Quarters July 15th 1777.

Brigad ^r Gen ^{ll} McDougal	Officers of y ^e Day
Lieu ^t Co ^{ll} Sherman	
B. Major Fosdick	
Adj ^t Learnard	

As nothing in an Army is so formidable to y^e Enemy, so respectable and usefull to its friends, & so internally secure in it self, as being expert in War at this time when we expect daily to be engag'd, & y^e ordinary Camp duty but small, y^e General expects y^e Troops (those that are off duty will be employ'd in military exercise, & directs that every Company shall be exercised from Revellee-beating to six oClock in y^e Morning y^e time for relieving y^e Guard, & from 8. o'Clock to 10. in y^e forenoon & from 4 oclock in y^e Afternoon till 7 & that each Regimt. Shall have two Field Days in a Week for regimental exercise. Them of Brigadier M^c Dougal's, & Parson's on Mondays & Thursdays—Those of Brigadier Gen^{ll}. Varnums, Glover's & Huntington's on Tuesday, & Fridays.—The season of y^e Year being not unhealthy, and the Time drawing nigh in which we may expect y^e Enemy will begin their Capital Operations, when our whole strength may be wanted, y^e Gen^{ll} strictly prohibits all Persons taking or communicating y^e Small Pox by innoculation or in any voluntary manner under y^e several penalties.

The General Orders that y^e Q. M. provide & deliver y^e Troops Slings for their Canteens & Bayonets Belts.

At a General Court Martial held at Phillipsborough, Tho^s Persil [Powel] was tried for deserting to y^e Enemy, returning & deserting again, & perswading others to desert with him. found guilty & Sentenc'd to be shot to Death. The General approves ye Sentence, & orders it to be executed on Monday y^e 21st Instant between the Hours of ten and Eleven in y^e Morning.

Brigadier Gen^{ll} Parson's Brigade has liberty to discharge their pieces at Retreat beating under y^e directions of their Officers.

The Brigade Guard to be augmented to 30 Privates.

Peeks Kill July 18th 1777.

C. Sign

Parole.	Officers of y ^e Day
B: G: Glover	
Lieut. Col ^o Wigglesworth	
B: Major Alden	

Adj ^t Marvin	Officers of y ^e Day
-------------------------	--------------------------------

Maj^t Johnston Officer of y^e Picket

The General Orders, that y^e Provision be drawn early in y^e Morning, & y^e Commissary to issue them accordingly that they

Orderly Book

may be convey'd accordingly to their Quarters in y^e cool of the Morning.

Two fatigue parties to parade tomorrow Morning with their
 C. S. S. C. D.F. P.
 Arms. One to consist of 1.. 3.. 4.. 4.. 2.. 50 with Provisions.
 S. S. C. DF. P.
 y^e other of 1.. 2.. 2.. 0.. 20

. . . Edward Palmer that infamous Tory and Robber was taken prisoner & confin'd to y^e Provo. Guard this Day, for robbing y^e Inhabitants, being in Arms against y^e States of America, & for being a Spy, & is to have his trial on Tuesday next at 9 o'Clock in the Morning by a General Court Martial. All Persons that can give any evidence against S^d Palmer are requested and requir'd to attend S^d Trial.

Details 1.. 1.. 2.. 1.. 30 } for main Guard
 0.. 1.. 4.. 0.. 8 }
 3 Days Provisions

Head Quarters July 19th 1777.

Brig ^{dr} G. Huntington	Officers of y ^e Day
Col ^o Chandler	
B: J: M: Flagg	
Adj ^t Tannick	

Maj^r Parks Officer of y^e Piquet.

Cap^t Flagg is appointed to act as Brigade Major to General Varnums Brigade, & is to be obey'd & respected accordingly.

Brigade Orders

Co^{!!} Green's & Co^{!!} Angel's Battallions to be immediately divided into two Cores . . . the commanding Officers are required to give each Compy an equal number of Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, & Privates.

In y^e Brigade Co^{!!} Green's Battallion to take y^e right, Co^{!!} Webb's y^e Left. Co^{!!} Sherburns in y^e Right of Centre, Co^{!!} Angel's on the Left of Centre when y^e Brigade is call'd into a Line either for exercise or Action. the Artillery must be equally divided on the Right & Left Flanks. y^e Distance of ten Feet to be allow'd between each Battalions

Head Quarters July 21st 1777.

B. G. Varnum	Officer of y ^e Day
Lieu ^t Col ^o Russel	
B: G: M: Platt	
Adj ^t Rice	

C. S. S. C. DF

The Piquet at ye Church Redoubt to consist of 1.. 2.. 4.. 4.. 2..
 p
 50.. Lieu^t Co^{!!} Olney & Maj^r Ward are appointed Members of a

Court Martial of which Col^l Shepherd is to preside, C — S from

C S

Gen^l McDougal's Brigade . . . 1.. 2 from Gen^l Glover's Brigade to supply y^e vacancies occasion'd by y^e marching of General Parson's, & Gen^l Huntintons Brigades.

A Serjt & 15 Privates that are Reapers to parade tomorrow morning at Head Quarters with their Sickles from Gen^l Glover's Brigade.

A dark Roan Horse taken up by Maj^t Parks in Camp as a stray, the owner may have him by applying to Head Quarters.

Brigade Orders

The Brigade must be ready tomorrow Morning at 4. oclock. y^e General will Beat instead of y^e Revellee, y^e Troops at 4. o'Clock & march immediately.

Head Quarters July 23rd 1777.

Brig ^{dr} McDougal Lieut Livingston B: G: M. Platt* Adj ^t Learnard	} Officers of the Day
---	-----------------------

The General strictly forbids all Persons robbing Gardens, or taking any thing from y^e Inhabitants without leave from y^e Owners, or wasting or destroying private property of any kind whereby y^e inhabitants may be injured or distress'd on y^e pains of severe Punishmt. And all Officers are strictly required to see this Order strictly complied with.

Sub for Court Martial from General Varnum's tomorrow at 9 oClock.

Brigade Orders

It is expected for y^e future that y^e serjts deliver their Men on y^e Regimental Parade neat and clean to y^e Adj^t & present their Arms in good Order. that they must at all events have their Men well Supplied, with their Cartouch-Boxes full of Cartridges: the Adjts upon y^e Men's being brôt on parade are requir'd to examine them individually, before they deliver them to the Brigade Major, who is again to enquire of y^e Adjts y^e State of their Men. If y^e adjuts find any of their Detachments deficient they are immediately to call for others to confine y^e Serjt, & report to y^e Brigade Major, who will report to y^e Brigadier General; if y^e Major of Brigade shall find any deficiency upon y^e Brigade Parade—he will arrest y^e Adj^t of y^e Core, & report accordingly.

* Thos. Fosdick in Ford.

Orderly Book

One Sub tomorrow Morning at 9. oClock, from Col^o Green's Regimt for Gen^rl Court Martial

Details for Guard tomorrow from Col^o Angel's Regimt—

C	S	S	C	D	F	P
0..	2..	2..	2..	0..	1..	50

Head Quarters July 24th 1777

Counter Sign [Durkee]

Parole

Brigadier Gen^rl Varnum

Co^l Durkee

B: M. Flagg

Adj^t Remington

Officers of ye Day

Gen^{ll} Glovers Brigade is order'd to march to ye Northward to join our Army there with all expedition—A Fatigue party of Reapers from General McDougal's Brigade—
 S S C P
 I.. I.. I.. 20 to parade tomorrow at Head Quarters—

C S S C P

Majr Huntington I.. 4.. 4.. 4.. 100. to relieve ye Garrison at Fort Constitution tomorrow Morning.

Co^l S: B: Webb's Regmt have liberty to discharge their pieces this Evening at retreat beating under ye direction of their Officers.

At a General Court Martial held at Peeks Kill by order of ye Honourable M G: Putnam July 2nd 1777: Serjt Jn^o Smith & W^m White [Capt D. Dexter's company] of Col^o Angel's Regimt were tried for Desertion and attempting to go to ye Enemy, for stealing & embezling Cartridges, carrying off their Arms & accoutrements belonging to ye Continent. ye Court find ye Prisoners Guilty and give sentence that ye Serjt be reduced to ye Ranks, & that they each receive 100 Lashes on their Naked Backs. The Gen^{ll} approves ye Sentence & orders it to be executed tomorrow Morning at parading ye Guards.

Edward Palmer was arraing'd & tried upon a charge of plundering, Robbing & carrying off Cattle Goods &c: from ye well affected inhabitants & for being a Spy from ye Enemy—the Court find him Guilty of ye whole of ye charge alleg'd against him & give Sentence that he suffer ye pains of Death. The General approves ye Sentence and orders it to be put in execution on Friday ye First Day of August next between ye Hours of nine and Eleven in ye Morning by hanging him by ye Neck, till he is Dead, Dead, Dead. . . .

Jn^o Smith, W^m White, & Doc^t Taylors Negro are order'd to be put on Board ye Men of War immediately after receiving their Punishm^t at Fort Montgomery.

Appendix II

245

Head Quarters July 25th 1777

B. G. M ^c Dougal	Officers of y ^e Day
Col ^o S. Webb	
B: G: M: Platt	

Adj^t Hopkins

Twelve Oars-Men to parade at Head Quarters tomorrow Morning, to go on Board y^e Boats under y^e command of Cap^t Buckingham [Buchanan?].

Details for Gen^rl M^cDougal's Brigade C. S. S. C. D.F. P.
I.. 2.. 4.. 4.. 3.. 79.

Details for Gen^rl Varnum's Brigade C. S. S. C. P.— for
Fatigue 10. Privates—6. Oars-Men.

Brigade Orders.

The Generals Guard to be furnish'd as order'd by Rotation. Col^o Green's furnish it for tomorrow.

Details for Co^{ll} Angel's Regim^t S. S. C. D. F. P.
I.. I.. I.. O.. I.. 28.

Camp Contenental Village July 28 1777

Regimental Orders

A Court Martial to be consisting of 1. Capt^t & 4 Subs. to set immediately for y^e trial of such persons as shall be arraingn'd before y^e Court, Capt^t Stephen Olney is appointed President.

Edward Murphey was charg'd with absence at Roll call & lying out of Camp all Night, & of being found Drunk. y^e Prisoner was found Guilty. y^e Court adjudged him to receive fifty lashes on his naked Back. y^e Co^{ll} approve y^e Sentence & orders it to be executed this afternoon at 6 oClock.

Head Quarters July 28th 1777
C. Sign [Canaan]

Parole [Albany]	Officers of y ^e Day
B. G. Parsons	
Maj ^r Grosvenor	
B. M. Alden	
Adj ^t Convers	

Head Quarters July 31st 1777

B. G. Parsons	Officers of the Day
Lieut Co ^{ll} Prentice	
B: M: Humphreys	
Adj ^t Hart	

Brigade Orders [July 31]

Cap^t Flagg is to relieve y^e Garrison at Fort Constitution tomorrow Morning with his own Officers his company & a

Orderly Book

sufficient Number taken from ye other Companies taken from
Co^{ll} Green's Regim^t to make up fifty Rank & File.

Details for Guard C. S. S. C. P P
Co^{ll} Angel's Regim^t I.. O.. I.. I.. 22 fatigue 3

Head Quarters August 1st 1777

Gen ^{ll} Varnum	Officers of ye Day
Co ^{ll} Willis	
B. Mr ^r Flagg	
Adj ^t Hopkins	

Gener^l McDougal's & Gen^{ll} Huntington's Brigades are order'd to march with all possible Dispatch to join Gen^{ll} Washington at Philadelphia pursuant to Orders receiv'd from his Excellency.

C. S. S. C. DF. P.	Fatigue
Details—Co ^{ll} Green—O.. I.. I.. 2.. 18—2	
Col ^r Angel—O. I.. I.. O.. 22—3	

Head Quarters August 3rd 1777

Parole.	Officers of ye Day.
Gen ^{ll} Varnum	
Maj ^t Huntington	
B. Maj ^r Box	
Adj ^t Selden	

A General Court Martial to set tomorrow Morning at 9.
°Clock at ye House of ye Widow Warren. Col^o S: B: Webb is appointed President of ye Court. Maj^t Sitt, 4. Cap^{ts}, & 4. Subs from Gen^{ll} Varnums Brigade.

Head Quarters August 4th 1777
C. Sign—

Parole—	Officers of ye Day
Brigadier Gen ^l Parsons	
Lieut Col ^r Olney	
B: G: Maj ^r Humphrey	
Adj ^t Remington	

General Putnam's Guard to consist of 24. Privates. The General has reason to think that ye attention of ye Enemy is turn'd towards ye North River—and ye passes in ye Highlands, daily, and hourly expect an Attack, reminds and enjoins it upon every Officer in this department immediately to examine ye State of ye Arms & Ammunition of their men, & see that they are put in ye best condition possible for an attack. ye Surgeons of ye several Regim^{ts} are desir'd to make daily returns of ye

Appendix II

247

Sick under their care belonging to their respective Regim^{ts} to Doct^r Burnet Surgeon & Physician General.

Details — S. S. C. D.F. P
2.. 2.. 2.. 2.. 41.

Brigade Orders for Guard

	S.	S.	C.	D.F.	P.
Col ^l Angel's Regim ^t	—	I..	I..	I..	2.. 23
Fatigue	—	O..	O..	O..	5

Col^o Angels Regim^t furnishes y^e Generals Guard tomorrow

Regimental Orders

At a court Martial held y^e 2nd Instant whereof Cap^t Coggeshall Olney was President—Jn^o Taber of Cap^t Shaw's Compy. was tried for selling his shirt contrary to Orders, found Guilty & Sentenc'd to be whipt twenty five Lashes on his Naked Back. Edward Murphy of Cap^t Allen's Compy. try'd for getting Drunk found Guilty & order'd to ride a Wooden Horse sixteen Minutes with two fire-locks lash'd to his Feet.

The Lieut^t Col^o approves y^e Sentences, and orders them to take place in presence of y^e Regim^t at 6. oClock this Afternoon.

Head Quarter Augus^t 6th 1777

B. G. Huntington
Co^l Bradley
B. Maj^t Alden
Adj^t Arwen [Marvin]

Officers of y^e Day.

Col^o Charles Webb's Regm^t in General Parsons Brigade is to be muster'd tomorrow Morning @ 5. oClock—the light Dragoons are to be mustred at 6. oClock tomorrow Morning—the Orders of y^e workmen in y^e Armouring business to be subject to Col^o Allen y^e Superintendant—the commanding officers of y^e respective Regim^{ts} are to give orders for repairing y^e Arms in their Regim^{ts} that are deficient with a certificate how their Arms became defective—those that are certifi'd to want repair by inevitable Accident y^e Armourer is to repair without respect—those that are certified to be so thro default of y^e Soldier or Soldiers is to be charg'd to y^e Regim^t: an acc^o of y^e Cost, to the Names of such Soldiers are to be monthly transmitted by y^e commanding Officer of y^e Regim^t to which he belongs to y^e Pay-Master, who is to stop such cost out of y^e defaulting Soldiers Wages—the Signal to be given by y^e Sub and his party of 30. Men gone to Haverstraw on their discovering y^e Enemies Fleet coming up y^e North River, is to be a large Fire & a Smoke on y^e Hill—Col^o Angels Regim^t to furnish y^e Generals.

Orderly Book

Guard tomorrow.

	C. S. S.	C. DF. P.	F
Details for Gen! Varnums Brigade—	I.. I.. I.. I..	18.—	2
Col ^o Angels Reg ^t —	O.. I.. O.. I..	10.—	1

Camp N^o 2. August 8th 1777

Regimental Orders

Whereas complaint has been made against Payne Hinds Corp^l in Cap^t Shaws C^o for being Dirty & Lousy, a crime that would effectually disgrace ye Caracter of a private Soldier, much more that of an Officer, of any rank, whose business it ought invariably to be to appear Neat &, Clean, whereby he would not only establish his Character in a favourable point of view, but would be instrumental of producing ye happy effect of a Laudable Ambition in ye Soldiery—tis much to be hop'd that no other Non-Commission'd Officer in ye Regim^t is so lost to every sense of honour as hereafter to make such a contemptible appearance as ye afores'd Corp^l Hinds, who disgraces ye Office he sustain'd & is therefore Order'd to be reduc'd to a Private sentinel [in] ye Ranks & do duty in future as a private —For preventing in future complaints of this kind ye Lt^c Col^o Orders ye Cap^ts to cause frequent examinations to be made in their respective Co^s—should any of ye Soldiers hereafter be found in this disagreeable condition they are immediately to be paraded, & ye Camp-Cully Men turn'd out under ye care of a Serj^t who is to see that ye delinquents are thoroughly wash'd and Scrubb'd—this mode of punishm^t to be inflicted on all offenders herein, till they are convinc'd that ye remedy is worse than ye disorder to deal with.

Head Quarters August 9th 1777

Brigadier Gen ^l Huntington	}
Maj ^r Hart	
B. Maj ^r Platt	
Adj ^r Pearl	

Officers of ye Day.

Col^o Swifts & Col^o Livingston's Regim^ts to be muster'd next Monday Morning at 5. o'clock—The Gen^l is Surpriz'd to see ye avarice of the Country, & ye unreasonable prices extorted from ye Soldiers by ye Market People, for want of a Rule or Standard to regulate ye price of articles by—Order'd and directed in future thro this Season that ye price of Articles sold in Camp Shall be as follows—Butter 21 pr lb.—Mutton & Lamb 18—Veal, 16—Milk, 16 pr Q^rt—Potatoes 61 p^r Bush!—Squashes 11 p^r Peck—Cucumbers 11 p^r Dozⁿ—Roasting piggs 11 p^r lb.—Turnips, Carrots, & Beets 61 p^r Bush!—ye above prices in York

Money—and no person or persons in Camp may give or take for ye above Articles more than is herein Stated for ye above mention'd Articles, & in proportion for greater or smaller quantities on pain of forfeiting ye Articles, or ye value thereof—ye provo Guard, is reduc'd 1 Cap^t 1 Sub.—1 Serjt.—1 Corp^l & 34 Privates.

Gen^l Varnum's Orders [Aug. 11]

Co^l Webb's Regim^t to furnish ye Generals Guard tomorrow—Lt Thos Waterman is appointed to act as Adj^t in Col^o Angel's Regim^t until further Orders, & is to be obey'd as such.

Camp at N^o 2. August 12th 1777

Regimental Orders

A Court Martial consisting of 1 Cap^t & 4. Subs. to set at 9. oClock this Morning for ye trial of such prisoners as shall be arraign'd before them.

All ye Waiters in future (except one in each Marquee) are to parade with ye Regim^t at 5. oClock in ye Afternoon for exercise, when tis expected ye Officers and all ye Men off duty will attend—one commission'd Officer from each C^o is to see their Rolls carefully call'd & the men accounted for—All absentees to be confin'd in ye Q^r Guard. . . . the L^t Col^o proposes in future to exercise ye Officers from 8. to 9. oClock in ye Morning, & requests they will Parade accordingly—the Serj^{ts} & Corp^{ls} off duty, are to exercise in future under Care of ye adju^t from 2. to 3. oClock in ye afternoon.

Regemental Orders [Aug 12.]

At a Regimental Court Martial Cap^t S. Shaw President—Jn^o Schyrmes of Cap^t Allen's C^o try'd for stealing Rum out of the Store when posted as a Sentinel, & being found in Liquor therewith—found Guilty, & order'd to receive 39. Lashes on his naked Back. the Lt Col^o approves ye Sentence, & orders it to be put in execution in presence of ye Regim^t at 6 oClock this afternoon—Notwithstanding ye approbation of ye Sentence, ye Lt Col^o (upon consideration of ye prisoners good Behaviour heretofore, & ye request made by his Cap^t for forgiveness) thinks proper to pardon ye Prisoner, & orders him releas'd.

Camp N^o 2. 13th August 1777

At a regimental Court Martial held by order of Lt Col^o Olney for ye trial of such prisoners as shall be brôt before them—Cap^t S. Shaw President—Edward Murphey of Cap^t Allen's C^o confin'd for being absent at Roll call twice, & James King for being absent from Roll-Call 3. times Successfully—try'd & both

Orderly Book

found Guilty, & order'd to ride ye wooden Horse 15 Minutes each, with 4. Fire locks ty'd to each prisoners feet.—The Lt Col^o approves ye Sentences of ye Court & orders them to take place between 6. & 7. oClock this Evening in presence of ye Regimt.

Camp N^o 2. August 19th 1777

Regimental Orders.

The Co^l directs ye Orderly Serjt^t of each Company in ye 2nd Battalion from ye State of Rhode-Island; daily for ye future, when they hear ye Serjts^s call beat immediately to repair to Serjt^t Jeremiah Greenman's Tent to receive ye Orders of ye Day.— Daniel Hudson of Cap^t Tew's Company in ye 2nd Battalion from ye State of Rhode Island, is appointed Fife Maj^r, & to be obey'd as such.

Israel Angel Co^l.

Camp N^o 2. August 28th 1777

Regimental Orders

The Cap^{ts} or commanding Officers of each Company in ye 2nd Battalion from ye State of Rhode Island, are immediately to see that their Men's Arms are well clean'd & put in ye Best order also to examine all their Cartridge Boxes, see that they be full, & ye Cartridges good—& ye Boxes carried out of ye Tents and well dried in ye Sun.

Israel Angel Co^l.

Head Quarters August 29th 1777

C. Sign, Eno.

Parole Davenport
Co^l Durkee }
B. Maj^r Platt } Officers of ye Day.
Adj^t Converse }

A General Court Martial is appointed to set on Monday next at 9 oClock in ye Morning at ye House of ye Widow Warren, whereof C^ol Angel is appointed President. 1. Cap^t & 2. Sub from G. Varnum's Brigade. Gen^r Varnum's Brigade is excus'd from duty tomorrow, for Brigade exercise, & Skirmishing, by firing Field Pieces & Platoons. Each of ye other Brigades will have ye Same indulgence in their Turn.

Camp N^o 2. Sept^r 3rd 1777

Regimental Orders

The Captains or Commanding Officers of each Company in ye Regimt, are required immediately to make a return of ye Taylors

in their respective Companies with their Names in Writing, all of whom are hereby order'd to join in one Mess, & work at their Trade for y^e Officers and Soldiers of S^d Regim^t, under y^e direction of M^r Jn^o Usher, who is required to keep an exact acc^o of all y^e Labour they do, for which they are to receive one half of y^e Customary price, allowing to M^r Usher one Shilling out of y^e price for one Uniform Coat, for his trouble in keeping y^e Accompts, & overseeing y^e Business, and so in proportion for all other work that they do—their observance of y^e above Order will excuse them from all other Duty, except in Case of an Alarm.

Israel Angel Col^l

[From General Orders, Sept 5. 1777.]

At a Gen^l Court Martial, held at Peeks Kill Sept^r 2nd 1777 C^o^l
Angel President,

Serjt^t Jn^o Dunbar, Serg^t W^m Park, Serjt^t Aaron Buck, Serjt^t
Jn^o Patterson, Serjt^t Noel Tabor,¹ Serjt^t Jos: Brown—Francis
Baptist—W^m Hardy,² Asa Lewis, Corp^t Jn^o Gould, W^m Lane,
W^m Davis, Drum^r of Co^t Green's Regim^t were try'd for rais-
ing a mutiny—On trial y^e Court are of Opinion that the Prisoners
are not Guilty of raising a Mutiny, but that they are guilty of be-
having in a disorderly manner—The Court do therefore order that
y^e six Serjts^s be suspended during y^e pleasure of y^e Commanding Of-
ficer of y^e Regim^t to which they belong—The Court further order
the others of y^e above prisoners be reprimanded by y^e Command-
ing officer of y^e Regim^t excepting Corp^t Gould, who is hereby
acquitted—Henry Troy [Forsy, or Forsythe?] late of Co^t Green's
Regim^t try'd for desertion, & enlisting into Co^t Webb's Regim^t
the Court sentence him to receive 100 Lashes on his naked Back,
& sent on Board one of y^e Continental Ships of War, to be kept
during y^e War—Jn^o Fly³ of Co^t Willis's Regim^t try'd for desertion,
found Guilty and order'd to receive 100. Lashes on his Naked
Back—the Gen^l approves y^e proceedings & Judgm^ts of y^e Court
Martial as above S^d, and orders them executed tomorrow morn-
ing @ 9 oClock—W^m Taylor Provost Martial, try'd for disobedience
to Gen^l Orders, in riding the Waggon Horses, but not
knowingly, or wilfully—do therefore acquit him from further
punishment—y^e Gen^l approves y^e Sentence of y^e Court Martial,
& orders S^d Taylor to be releas'd from his Confinement.

At a Gen^l Court Martial held at Peeks Kill y^e 5th of Sept^r
Co^t Angel President—Sam^{!!} Stadwork⁴ try'd for enlisting into

¹ Newel Sabin, in Ford.

² Hardin, in Ford. The name of Gideon Cary, corporal, is here omitted.

³ Fletcher, of Captain Barnard's company, in Ford.

⁴ Sturdavent, tried for enlisting into Captain Granger's company, in Ford.

Orderly Book

Co^l. C. Webbs Regim^t after he had enlisted into Co^l. Swifts Regim^t, received y^e Bounty—the Court Sentence him to receive 100. Lashes on his naked Back, to be inflicted at 3. different times, & then to be sent on Board one of y^e Continental Ships of War there to be kept to hard Labour during y^e War—The Gen^l approves y^e Sentence and orders it executed by whipping 34. Lashes tomorrow morning at 9 oClock—33. next Morning & 33. on Monday morning—the Court Martial whereof Co^l. Angel was President is dissolv'd.

Camp N^o 2. Sep^r 6th 1777
Regimental Orders

The Cap^{ts} or Commanding Officers of each Comp^y in y^e 2nd Battalion from y^e State of Rhode Island are immediately to make a return to y^e Co^l of all y^e Serj^{ts} & Corporals in their respective Companies, with their Rank & Names in Writing, & by whom enlisted,—also of all y^e Fifers and Drummers—y^e Co^l further orders, that when y^e Regm^t turns out at 2. oClock this afternoon, agreeable to General Orders, that every non-commission'd Officer & Soldier, that is well turns out, except one Waiter to each Marquee—no excuse will be admitted from any one, who shall be absent, except he has leave of Absence in Writing from some Officer in y^e Battalion—those who disobey this Order may expect to meet with Punishm^t—and all who neglect turning out in y^e Morning for prayers (those that are going on Guard not excepted) will likewise be punished—Jn^o Smith of Capt Dexters Company who Enlisted a Serjt, but for some misdemeanour, was reduc'd to y^e Ranks, is now for his extraordinary good behaviour since, promoted to a Corporal in S^d Company, & to be obey'd as such.

Israel Angell Co^l

Parole [Christeen]
Co^l. Angel }
B. M. Platt } Officers of y^e Day.

Head Quarters [Sep^r 6, 1777]
C. Sign [Elk]

The General observing some indiscretion in granting of Furloes to y^e detrim^t of the Service, Orders in future that no furloes shall be granted to any of y^e Troops in this Departm^t except by a Generaly in their Regim^{ts}—and Officers of y^e, respective Regim^{ts} are directed to make a return of all deserters from y^e Brittish Army in their Regim^{ts}—and cause them to appear tomorrow Morning on y^e Grand parade.

Regimental Orders

Commanding Officers of Companies will forthwith make out and deliver in to y^e Adj^t a true return of all Deserters from y^e

British army in their respective Companies—they will be paraded with y^e Guard to-morrow morning, to be march'd down to y^e Grand parade, as by requisition of General Orders.

Israel Angell Co^l

[Sept. 7.] The Orders of Yesterday respecting those who came from y^e Brittish Army were not fully understood—The General Orders y^e commanding Officers of y^e respective Regim^ts to cause their Captains to examine their Companies, & to report y^e Number of British Soldiers in their respective Companies, & cause them to appear on y^e Grand parade tomorrow Morning at 8 oClock in order to their being enlisted & embodied into one Regim^t, agreeable to orders from his Excellency Gen^l Washington, that they may have opportunity to distinguish themselves pursuant to y^e noble Spirit they have discover'd by coming over to us.

Camp N^o 2. Sept^r 9th 1777
Regimental Orders

The Capt^o or commanding Officers of each Company in y^e Regim^t are directed to see that their Orderly Serj^{ts} do make an exact return of those sick in Camp belonging to their respective Companies with their Names in writing to be brôt to y^e Co^{ls} Quarters by 8. oClock every Morning and every Friday Morning, a General Return of all y^e Sick in each Company with y^e place of their confinem^t—. Doct^r Tenny Surgeon to y^e Regim^t has taken his Quarters with y^e pay Master near y^e Continental Village but is requir'd to attend at y^e Co^{ls} Quarters every Morning to receive y^e above s^d Returns which are to be directed to him, & he is to inspect each ones case & make reports to y^e Co^l of each ones disorder.

Israel Angell Co^l

Head Quarters. Sep^r 9th 1777

Parole [McDougall]	C. Sign [Greene]
Maj ^r Ward	
B. Maj ^r Humphrey	{ Officers of y ^e Day.
Adj ^t Boyce	

A party for fatigue—1. Sub—1. Serj^t 1. Corp^l & 30 Men to parade tomorrow Morning to mend y^e Road up y^e Hill towards y^e Village, to receive y^e Tools, at y^e Quarter Master General's Store.

Orderly Book

Head Quarters Sept^r 10th 1777

Parole [Bradley]

C. Sign. [Chandler]

Co^l Bradley }
 B. Maj^r Platt } Officers of ye Day.
 Adj^t Marvin }

The Commanding Officers of Regim^{ts} are requested to cause a Return to be immediately made to ye General of all those who have deserted from ye British Army or Navy since ye Battle of Lexington, & had never been in ye Service of ye United States before they deserted from ye British Army who have enlisted with Cap^t Felton from their respective Regim^{ts} in order that ye Continental Bounty which they have receiv'd may be return'd & paid into ye Hands of W^m Budlow Esqr D. Pay Master Gen^l in this departmt, who is to lodge his Receipts there for ye General—Those Soldiers who have enlisted with Cap^t Felton who have Clothes sufficient to serve them to Philadelphia without their Regimental Coats, are to leave their coats, those that have not are to take them—The severe Season of ye Year is now coming on us, & many of ye Troops are destitute of Shoes, Stockings & other necessary Cloathing—to supply which one Commission'd Officer from each Company in ye several Regim^{ts}, is order'd to go home immediately to recruit and procure Shoes, Stockings & other Cloathing for their Companions, & return into Camp again by ye first of Oct^r next—The pay Master of ye several Regim^{ts}—are to pay those Deserters who have enlisted with Cap^t Falton from their respective Regim^{ts} their Wages due to ye time of their Inlistm^{ts} with S^d Cap^t Falton or to give proper certificates of their Wages due, & that ye same hath not been paid them before they march from hence.

Continental Village Sept^r 11th 1777

Gentlemen

You will immediately Cause returns to be made of ye Names of ye Men in your Battalions whose Inlistm^{ts} are not here, to ye purpose that an Express may proceed immediately to Rhode Island for them—No pay can be obtain'd till a regular abstract is made.

I am &c:

James Varnum B. G.

Co^l Green, & Angell present

Appendix II

255

Head Quarters. Sept^r 12th 1777

C. Sign

Parole—

L^t Co^l Starr
B. Maj^r Box
Adj^t Waterman } Officers of ye Day.

By reason of Some Regim^{ts} being order'd to ye Northward from ye Brigades here, & for some other considerations, a new arrangem^t of ye Regim^{ts} into Brigades has become necessary. The General therefore directs and orders that the Regim^{ts} of Co^{ls} Durkee, Chandler, and Bradley, form one Brigade, & be commanded by B. G. McDougal—That ye Regim^{ts} of Co^{ls} C. Webb, Willis, S. Webb, & Dimon form one Brigade, & to be commanded by B. G. Parsons—That ye Regim^{ts} of Co^{ls} [Green?] Angell, & Sherburn form one Brigade, to be commanded by Gen^l Varnum—that ye Regem^{ts} of L^t Co^l Prentice & Co^l Swift form one Brigade to be commanded by B. Gen^l Huntington.

Head Quarters Sept^r 13th 1777

C. Sign Lee.

Parole Adams

Maj^r Sedgwick
B. Maj^r Platt
Adj^t Holden } Officers of ye Day.

Head Quarters Sept^r 14th 1777

C. Sign

Parole

Co^l Green
B. Maj^r Alden
Adj^t Holden } Officers of ye Day.

The Field Officers of ye Day are again invited to Dine at Head Quarters the Day they are on Duty—the reason of Repeating this in Orders, is that many of those Gentlemen have arriv'd in Camp since ye former publishm^t of it.

Brigade Orders.

Details for Co^l Angel's Regim^t

C. S. S. C. D.F. P.

Guard—o.. i.. 2.. 2.. 2.. ..28

Co^l Green's Regim^t furnishes ye Generals Guard tomorrow.

The following was omitted in its place—

Camp N^o 2. Sept^r 11th 1777

Regimental Orders

A Court Martial is order'd to set @ 9 oClock this Morning, consisting of 1. Cap^t & 3. Subs for ye trial of Serjt Booth.

Israel Angell. Co^l

Orderly Book

Sept^r 11th 1777

At a Regimental Court Martial held this Day, whereof Cap^t D. Dexter was President, was try'd Serjt Daniel Booth for absence from Roll call & getting Drunk—found Guilty & sentenc'd to be reduc'd.

The Co^l approves y^e Sentence, & Orders Said Booth to do Duty for y^e future as a private Sentinel.

Israel Angell Co^lCamp No. 2. Sept^r 15th 1777

Regimental Orders

Doct^r Jn^o Parrish is appointed Surgeons Mate to my Regim^t & to be obey'd as such, untill Doct^r Cornelius is Exchang'd.

The Co^l is sorry to observe that many Soldiers in his Regim^t are found Strolling about several Miles from Camp without leave, altho Orders have been repeatedly Issued to y^e Contrary—the Co^l assures that every one for y^e future that shall be found one Mile from y^e encampm^t—without leave in writing from his Officer he shall be immediately confind and try'd by a Regimental Court Martial for disobedience of Orders—All y^e Officers in y^e Regim^t are required to pay y^e Strictest attention to this Order; and one Commission'd Officer in each Company is to be present when y^e Rolls are call'd & if any one Soldier is absent without Leave they are to take his name & immediately confine him on his return. The above orders to be read this Evening when paraded for Prayers—and tomorrow Morning.

Israel Angell Co^l.Head Quarters Sept^r 15th 1777

L ^t Col ^l Meggs	}	Officers of y ^e Day.
B. Maj ^r Box		
Adj ^t Johnston		

Details for Co^l Angel's Regim^t

S. S. C. P.	—for Guard.
I.. I.. I.. 28	

Head Quarters Sep^t 16th 1777

Parole—Schuyl.

C. Sign,—Kill

Maj ^r Thayer	}	Officers of y ^e Day.
B. Maj ^r Alden		
Adj ^t Waterman		

The Officers of y^e Several Regm^{ts} & Companies—are directed to examine y^e Arms & Ammunition of their Men, and see that

Appendix II

257

their Arms are in good repair & that they have a supply of Ammunition.

Camp N^o 2. 16th Sept^r
Regimental Orders

Agreeable to y^e above General Orders The Capt^s and commanding Officers of each company in y^e Regim^t are required immediately to Examine y^e Mens Arms and Ammunition, & see that they are in y^e best order, they possibly can be put in, fit for Action—they are also to make return to y^e Co^l of y^e N^o of Bayonet Scabbards wanting in each Company—The Non-Commissioned Officers & Soldiers who are off Duty tomorrow are desir'd to apply to pay-Master Holden for their Weekly allowance of Sugar, as M^r Holden will give his attendance on Wednesday & thursday in each Week for that purpose.

A Regimental Court Martial to set Tomorrow Morning for y^e tryal of such prisoners as may be brôt before them.—to consist of 1. cap^t & 4. Subs.

Israel Angel Co^l.

General Orders

General Washington's H'd Quarters, Washington Sept^r 5th

From every information of y^e Enemies design, & from their Movements it is manifest that their Aim is, if possible to possess themselves of Philadelphia. This is with them a Capital object, tis what y^e last year strove to effect, but were happily disappointed. They made a 2nd attempt at y^e opening of this Campaign: but after vast preparation & expence for that purpose, they abandon'd their design, and totally evacuated y^e Jersies—they are now making their last Effort—it seems they first intended to come up y^e Delaware, but from y^e Measures taken against them in y^e River judg'd y^e Enterprize that way too Hazardous—At length they have landed on y^e Eastern Shore in Maryland, & advanc'd some little way into y^e Country; but y^e General thinks they will again be disappointed in their Views, Should they push their design against Philadelphia on this Route—Their all is at Stake—they will put y^e contest on y^e Event of a Single Battle; if they are overthrown, they are utterly Undone—y^e War is at an End—Now, then is y^e Time for our strenuous exertions; one bold stroke will Free, y^e Land from Rapine, Devastation & Burnings, and Female Innocence from brutal Lust and Violence—In every other Quarter y^e American Arms have been of late rapidly successfull; great Numbers of y^e Enemy have fallen in Battle, & still greater Numbers have been taken prisoners—The Melitia to y^e Northward have fought with a resolution that would have done Honour to y^e oldest Soldiers—they

Orderly Book

Bravely fought and Conquer'd & Glory attends them—Who can forbear to emulate their Noble Spirit—Who is there without ambition to share with them in ye applause of their Country Men, & of all posterity, as ye defenders of Liberty, and preservers of peace and happiness to Millions in ye present and future Generations? Two years we have maintain'd the War & struggled with difficulties innumerable; but ye prospect has since brighten'd, & our affairs put on a better Face—Now is ye Time to reap ye fruits of all our Toils and Dangers; If we behave like Men; this third Campaign will be our last—Ours is ye main Army, to us our Country Men look for protection; ye Eyes of all America & Europe are turn'd upon us, as on those by whom ye Event of ye War is to be determin'd; and ye General assures his Countrymen & fellow Soldiers, that he believes ye critical ye important time is at hand, which demands their most spirited exertions in ye Field. Here Glory waits to Crown ye Brave—Peace, Freedom, and Happiness will be ye reward of Victory—Animated by Motives like these Soldiers fighting in ye Cause of Innocence, humanity and Justice, will never give Way; but with undaunted Resolution press on to Conquest—And this ye General assures himself is ye part ye American Forces, now in Arms, will Act; and thus acting he will ensure them Success.

Camp N° 2. Sept^r 17th 1777
Regimental Orders

At a Regimental Court Martial whereof Cap^t W^m Allen was president—was try'd Benjⁿ Fowler of Cap^t Shaw's Company for absenting himself from Gen^l Hospital without leave & disobedience of Orders in other Instances, found Guilty, and order'd to receive 20. Stripes on his naked, Back—The Co^l approves ye Sentence of ye Court Martial and orders it put in Execution, at Retreat Beating before prayers this Evening

Israel Angel, Co^l.

Head Quarters 17th Sept^r 1777.
Parole C. Sign

L ^t Co ^l Comstock	}	Officers of ye Day.
Maj ^r Box		
Adj ^t Shelden		

Details

	C.	S.	S.	C.	D.F.	P.
G. Varnum—	I..	3..	3..	4..	4..	91.
G. Huntington —o..	I..	2..	2..	0..	49	Fatigue by G. Huntington

Appendix II

259

Head Quarters Sept: 18th 1777

C. Sign.

Parole.

Maj: Ward
B. Maj: Alden }
Adj: Holden } Officers of ye Day.

Jn^o Wise Drum Maj: in Gen^l Varnum's Brigade is appointed provost Martial, & is to be obey'd as such.

Camp N^o 2.—18th Sept?

Regimental Orders

As ye Regmt was first arrang'd to consist of 8. Companies, but being sent forward by Detachm^{ts} ye Companies have not yet been formed, the Co^l orders ye Capt^s or commanding Officers of ye several Companies to make a return of ye Commissioned, & Non-Commission'd Officers in their respective Companies to be return'd to ye Col^l by 8. oClock tomorrow Morning—and as it is thot to be much more convenient on many accounts to have each Company in ye Regmt of an equal number, or as near as possible, ye officers are requested to bring in a return of ye Mens Names that properly belonged to their Companies—Every Officer off duty is desir'd to attend at ye time and place above mention'd

Israel Angell Co^l

Head Quarters. Sept: 19th 1777

C. Sign.

Parole—

Co^l. Angel
B. Maj: Box }
Adj: Johnston } Officers of ye Day.

Lost on ye Road to Danbury within 13. Miles of Peeks Kill landing a small Parchm^t enclosing a number of Continental Bills to ye Amount of about 100. Dollars; also a Note of Hand for 12.^f in favour of Daniel Pendleton, sign'd by Daniel and David Pendleton—whoever will return S^d parchment, Money & Note to Capt^t Daniel Pendleton, or Head Quarters shall receive 20 Dollars Reward, & necessary charges paid.

Piquet

Guard—	C. S. S. C. D.F. P.	C. S. S. C. DF. P.
G. Varnum—	I.. 3.. 3.. 4.. 2.. 91	I.. I.. 3.. 3.. 2.. 32
G. Huntington—	O.. I.. 2.. 2.. 2.. 49	I.. I.. I.. O.. 18

Brigade Orders

None of ye non-Commission'd Officers or Soldiers are permitted to pass ye Creek, south of ye Incampm^t, when off duty

but with a written permission from an Officer those who transgress this order will be punish'd accordingly.

The prices for washing and Taylors work in the Brigade are stated as Follows—The commanding Officers of Regim.^s Are requir'd to cause ye Brigade Orders respecting ye prices of Articles to be read 3. Days successively—& ye General positively forbids Officers or Soldiers giving more than ye Rates for any Articles—disobedience will be treat'd with no kind of Lenity.

Prices for Washing and Ironing, ye following Articles of Cloathing, are as follows:

A Shirt & Stock.....	16	Lawful Money
Woollen Westcoats or Breeches.....	15 ^d	
Linnen D ^o	14	
Stockings pr ^r pair.....	13 ⁱ	
Handkerchiefs.....	11	
Overhauls.....	15	
Blanketts.....	16	
pair Sheets.....	19	

Table Cloths, Towels, &c; in proportion to ye above prices
For making, ye following Articles of Cloathing—

I. Uniform Coat with Lining.....	7/-
I. D ^o D ^o without Lining.....	5/-
I. Waistcoat.....	2/-
I. Pair Breeches.....	2/6.

And other Cloathing in proportion to ye above station'd Articles.
ye above work for Officers—But for non-Commission'd officers
Privates, only $\frac{1}{2}$ of ye Same respectively.

Head Quarters Sept^r 20th 1777
C. Sign.

Parole—

L^t Co^l Olney }
B. M. Alden } Officers of ye Day.
Adj^t Waterman }

A Court Martial is appointed to set on Monday next at ye Widow Warren's 9 oClock in ye Morning, Co^l Greene President,
3. Capt^s—6. Subs. from Gen^l Varnums Brigade—1. Capt & 2.
Subs from Gen^l Huntingtons Brigade to be Members.

The General Observes that ye Troops frequently in their Marching, march in Single, or double Files, which besides making an unsoldierlike appearance, is ill adapted on many accounts to actual Service—Orders that in this departm^t they march by Divisions whenever ye Ground will admit of it.

¹ Possibly the last five items should be /3, /1, etc., i. e., 3^d, 1^d, etc.

Appendix II

261

Brigade Orders

The Serjt^s & Corporals to parade every morning at 10. oClock at y^e Generals Quarters for exercise—The Drum Maj^r of Col^r Sherburn's Regim^t to do duty as Drum Maj^r to Gen^l Varnum's Brigade until further orders—& to be obey'd as such.

Col. Angel's Regim^t Details.

	C.	S.	S.	C.	DF.	P.
Guard—	0..	I..	3..	2..	2..	44
Fatigue—						I
Court Martial	I.	I				

Camp N^o 2. Sept^r 20th

Regimental Orders

A Regimental Court Martial to set at 10. oClock this Morning for y^e trial of such prisoners as may be brót before them to consist of 1. Cap^t & 4. Subs.

Israel Angell Co^l

At a regimental Court Martial held according to y^e Above Order, Capt^t W^m Potter President—Caleb Eddy of Cap^t S. Olney's Compy was try'd on a charge of Stealing, a Pocket Book containing 4. Dollars and. 11^s Lawfull Money from Jn^o Elliot of S^d Compy.—found Guilty, and Sentenc'd to receive 50 Lashes on his Naked Back—and to refund y^e Money again, with y^e Addition of six Shillings Lawful for y^e Pocket Book—y^e whole Amount being £1 11^s. to be stop'd out of his next pay.

The Co^l approves y^e Sentence of y^e Court Martial, & orders y^e Corporal punishment therein appointed to be inflicted this afternoon at 4. oClock in presence of y^e Regim^t

Israel Angell Co^l

Camp N^o 2. Sept^r 21st 1777

Regimental Orders

The Orderly Serjt^t of each Compy. in y^e Regim^t who by y^e Orders of y^e 9th Instant were order'd to make their returns of y^e Sick to y^e Co^l, are for y^e future to carry them to y^e Doctors tent.—y^e Returns to be made by 8. oClock—if any of y^e S^d Serjts shall neglect their duty and not furnish y^e Doct^r with S^d Returns by y^e time afores^d, y^e Doctor is required to return their Names to y^e Co^l, who positively Declares that he will immediately confine them & have them Tried by a Court Martial for disobedience of Orders.

Israel Angell, Co^l

Orderly Book

Head Quarters 21st Sept^r

Parole

C. Sign

L^t Col Meggs
 B. Maj^r Box
 Adj^t Sheldon } Officers of y Day.

Brigade Orders

Co^l Angel's Regiments Details

	S.	S.	C.	DF.	P.
Guard—	2..	2..	2..	2..	44.
Fatigue—	0..	0..	1..	0..	5.

The commanding Officers of Battalions will see that their Waggons are kept in good order, that they are furnish'd with Drivers, such as have been encourag'd with hopes of their employm^t if there are such in y^e Brigade—y^e Horses mus be tackled in y^e Waggons every Morning at sun rise or sooner, and Drove a Mile or more.

Head Quarters Sept^r 22nd 1777

Parole

C. Sign

Maj^r Thayer
 B. Maj^r Box } Officers of y^e Day.
 Adj^t Holden }

Fatigue at y^e Commissaries—C. P.

G. Varnum—o..	4
G. Huntington—I..	2

Head Quarters Sept^r 23rd 1777

L^t Col Comstock
 B. Maj^r Box
 Adj^t Johnston } Officers of y^e Day.

The Muster Master Gen^l directs y^e pay-Masters of y^e several Regiments to send immedately for their Muster-Rolls at his Quarters.

Head Quarters Sept^r 24th 1777

L^t Col Prentice
 B. M. Alden
 Adj^t Waterman } Officers of y Day.

The Militia of New-York State who are ordered to join y^e Army at Peeks-Kill are arranged to General Huntingtons

Brigade—proper returns are immediately to be made of them—and they are to do duty accordingly, with ye Troops in that Brigade —The Waggoners belonging to ye several Brigades & Regiments are order'd to parade with their Waggons tomorrow Morning at 8. oClock, at ye D. W. M. Generals in ye Village, & there to receive directions—12. Masons being wanted in ye Works, are ordered to turn out from ye Continental Troops & Melitia to parade tomorrow Morning @ 8 oClock, at ye Deputy Waggon Master Generals office in ye Village, & there to receive Directions from Capt Stagg.

Head Quarters Sept^r 25th 1777

Co ^l Angel	}	
B. M. Box		Officers of ye Day.
Adjutant Sheldon		

At a General Court Martial held at Peeks-Kill Sep^t 22nd by order of Gen^l Putnam—Co^l Green President—Edward Murphey of Cap^t Allen's Company, Co^l Angell's Regim^t was try'd for deserting ye service 2. or 3. times—The prisoner found Guilty of deserting and sentenc'd to receive 100. Lashes on his naked Back, & for inlisting twice this Campaign to be sent on board one of ye Continental ships of War, and there to be kept to service during ye War—Ephraim Seamonds of Cap^t Johnston's Company in Co^l Granworth's Regim^t—try'd for Desertion—found guilty, & order'd to receive 100 Stripes on his naked Back, & to be sent on board one of ye Continental Ships of War, to serve during ye present War—Jos. Cordose of Co^l Angell's Regim^t, try'd for leaving his Post and getting Drunk when on Sentry at ye main Guard—The Court in consideration of his being a Portugeeze, & having never been in ye Land service before, Order ye prisoner to receive only, 50. Lashes on his naked Back—W^m Mathews of Cap^t Thompson's Company in Co^l Willis Regim^t try'd for deserting, & enticing one of his fellow Soldiers to desert—Also threatening to desert to ye Enemy in case he should be punish'd—The Court find him Guilty & order him to receive 100. Lashes on his Naked Back, & to be return'd to his Station on board ye Galley from which he deserted.

The General approves ye Sentence of ye Court Martial, respecting ye several Prisoners therein mention'd, & orders ye same to be put in Execution tomorrow Morning at 8. oClock—Jos. Owens of Cap^t Talbut's Company—Co^l Green's Regim^t—try'd for being a Robber, & Spy from ye Enemy, & coming out with noted Robbers from N. York—The Court being fully convinc'd of ye Criminal Conduct of ye Prisoner unanimously Judge him Guilty of ye Charges, and give Sentence Capital—To Suffer ye Pains of Death.

The General having maturely consider'd of ye Judgment which is Capital—also of ye atrocious Nature of ye Prisoners Offence, which demands Speedy, Exemplary Punishmt—the General approves ye Sentence—And Orders that ye Said Jos. Owens be caus'd to sufer ye pains of Death by being Shot untill he shall be dead, dead, dead & ye Lord have mercy on his Soul—To be put in Execution on Friday 3rd of Oct^r Next, on Gallows Hill between ye Hours of 9. & 11 oClock in ye Morning—Jos: Mitchel try'd for deserting found not Guilty & to be discharg'd & have Liberty to pass to his family—The General Approves of ye proceedings of ye Court, & orders it to be immediately done—The men who are order'd on Board ye Ships, are immediately to be sent on Board after receiving their punishmt

The Waggons and Teams that were order'd yesterday to parade at ye D. W. M. General are order'd to do so every Day untill further orders.

Brigade Orders

The General observes two omissions of Duty very inconsist-ant with ye Nature of ye Service—The first is—The Officers do not pay that attention in marching their Men regularly from ye Brigade Parade, to their respective Guards which ye General Orders require—The other is—The old Guards are suffer'd to march home, after being reliev'd in a straying manner as they please—No Officers in ye Brigade can plead Ignorance of his duty in these Respects—it is therefore expected in future greater regard be paid to these particulars, & that no Guard be dis-charg'd upon ye Parade where it was made up.—, & that ye Same Regard be paid to order in marching home ye Old Guard as in marching of ye new Guard.

Head Quarters March 26th 1778

Att a Division Court Martial Where of Major Johnson was president March 15: 1778 Lieut^t Davis of Co^l Angells Reg^t (he Consenting Thereto) tried for Swearing the Eavening of the Second Is^t After Being Warned for duty, that if he Could Not Git Rid of that Tower of Duty he Would Feign himself Sick for he Was Determened Not To Do it, and Would Suffer himself to be Casheard With Infamy before he Would go and [for?] Refusing the Tower Accordingly the Court after the most Mature Deliberation Unanimously Judged Lieut^t Davis Guilty of a Breach of the 21 Artical of the [24?] Section of the Article of War and Sentence him To be Discharged the Service as Or-dered In Said Artical—His Excelency The Commander In Chief Approves the Sentence and Orders it to Take place Immediately.

End.

II¹

[Extracts from three Orderly-books kept in Col. Angell's Regiment, 11th July, 1779-6th June, 1780.]²

Extracts from General Washington's Orders:

May 12th 1779

The Hon'ble: the Congress having been pleased by a Resolve of the 29th of March last, to establish a system of regulations for the order and discipline of the Troops of the United States—The Commander in Chief flatters himself that all Officers impressed with the importance of a regular system of Maneuvres & discipline will zealously employ themselves to become thoroughly acquainted with these regulations, & with all possible punctuality & dispatch to put them in practice within the limits of their respective Commands—To forward this desirable purpose, the Inspector Genl will immediately enter upon the Exercise of his Office as established by Congress, & the Genl relying upon his Zeal & intelligence, of which he has already given proofs, & the laudable spirit of emulation which prevails throughout the Army doubts not that we shall meet with success, equal to our warmest wishes The Inspector Genl will take care that Copies of the Regulations are distributed to all the Regts, one for each Officer, who is to be answerable for the Copy he receives, & in case of his quitting the Regt he is to deliver it up to the Commanding Officer; He will also give the necessary instructions to the Sub-Inspectors or Majors of Brigade relative to the duties they are to perform He will see that an uniform formation takes place forthwith in the several Regts & whenever he perceives a Regiment so reduc'd as not to be able to turn out under arms, the number prescribed for forming a Battalion, he is to report the same to the Commander in Chief, that the necessary arrangements may be made accordingly.

For the present the Battalions are to be divided into eight Companies from which the Compr^r of Light Infantry will hereafter be draun—He will visit by turns the different Regts at the hours of Exercise & see that everything is conducted in strict conformity to the regulations—He will at all times pay particular attention that the Service of the Guards be performed with the greatest exactness.

¹ The entries in this section cover the period 6th July to 27th September, 1779, inclusive. The first pages of the book are lost.

² Originals in possession of Mr. H. I. Angell.

Orderly Book

Head Quarters Providence 11th July 1779

Extract from Genl Washingtons Orders of the 20th June 1779:

Duty of Brigade Majors—The great importance of the duties of Majors of Brigades rendering it necessary that those posts should be at all times, fill'd with old & experienced Officers, the Hnble the Congress did on the 18th of Feby last Resolve that the Majors of Brigade should be chosen by the Commander in Chief from among the Majors in the Line, & that the duties of Brigade Inspector should be also annexed to that office—They are at all times to consider themselves subject to the orders of the Officers Commanding the Brigades to which they are respectively attached, & are to receive their instructions relative to the Department from the inspector Genl—They are to remain on all occasions with their Brigades whether on a march, in Camp or Quarters, & not with their Brigadiers as was formerly practised. They are to keep the Details of their respective Brigades & see that everything prescribed in the new regulations is carried into execution with the greatest exactness,

They are to be present at the formation of all Guards & Detachments sent from their Brigades, to see they are found agreeable to the rules establish'd

They are to receive the Genl Orders from the Adj't Genl. & those of their Division from the Sub: Inspector, both which they are to communicate to their Brig^r Genls., and having added those he may issue to the Brigade, communicate the whole through the Adj^{ts} to the several Regts in their respective Brigades. They must pay particular attention that all orders are distributed with the greatest exactness & dispatch, & if from sickness or any other cause a Major of Brigade is prevented from attending for orders, he must cause the Brig^r Genl to be inform'd thereof that another Major or the eldest Capt may be order'd to perform the duty—

In Camp the Majors of Brigades will have an Orderly Serjt from their Brigades to communicate their Orders—

If any extraordinary Orders should Issue—the Adj't Genl will send a Copy to the nearest Brigade Major, noting on the order the hour he sent it & the course it is to take. The Maj^r of Brigade who receives it havin taken a Copy will immediately dispatch it to the next Brigade, first noting the hour he rec'd it & sent it forward, & signing his name—and so throughout the different Brigades as noted on the orders, the last Brigades Major returning it immediately to the Adj't Genl—These Orders are to be immediately communicated to the Commanding officers of Brigades & Regts in the same manner as the daily Orders, & by one of the Brigade Majors in turn to the Sub:

Inspector who will immediately communicate it to the Genl commanding the Division

Whenever a Major of Brigade leaves his Brigade either to go for Orders or any other purpose, he must leave an Adjt of the Brigade to perform his duty in case any Orders should come to his Brigade during his absence.

The Majors of Brigade must every o[ne] regulate their watches by that of the Adj^t Gen^l, that the different beats may begin & the guards be turn'd out at the same minute. The Brigade Major of the day will attend the formation of all guards and detachments in Camp.

In Action the Major of Brigade will assist the Commanding officer of the Brigade in the formation, Manoeuvres etc, of the Brigade

Head Quarters Providence 13th July 1779

When the Commanding officirs at the several out Posts, send officirs to Providence they are desired to direct those officirs, to call at the Adj^t general's office, & take copies of the Gen^l Orders which are daily issued.

Headquarters Providence 14th July 1779

At a Brigade Court Martial held at Updikes Newtown on the 12th Int^t of which Lt Colo. Olney was President, John Deruce of Colo. Angells Reg^t was try'd for deserting to the Enemy, & conveying with him a Guard Boat, the prisoner being brought before the Court plead giulty, the Court therefore sentence him to suffer death, the Gen^l approves the sentence of the Court—. Joseph Thrasher of Colo: Angells Reg^t try'd by the above Court, for desertion, found giulty & sentenced to receive one hundred lashes on his bare back—the Genl approves the sentence & orders the punishment inflicted immediately

Head Quarters Providence 21 July 1779

The Genl congratulates the Army upon the glorious success of Brigadier Genl Wayne & the gallant troops under his Command in taking by assault the Enemy's fortified post at Stony Point, with the point of the bayonet alone forcing the Garrison to surrender at discretion, not one man escaped—This signal & brilliant Victory was gaind with the loss of but four Men kill'd, & the Genl & fifteen men slightly wounded; while on the part of the Enemy, fine hundred Soldiers & twenty Officers were killd wounded & taken prisoners, with all their Cannon, Arms Military Stores & Provisions.

Orderly Book

Head Quarters Providence 22nd July 1779

Colo: Bartons troops to march immediately to Pawtugett with their Camp Equipage.

Head Quarters Providence 24th July 1779

In consequence of an order of Congress that each Soldier who enlisted to serve during the war before the 23^d of Jan:^r last shall receive a gratuity of one hundred dollars—the Commanding Officers of Regiments & Corps in the eastern department, are directed to make out an exact Return of the names of all such men including the Non Commiss^d Officers. These Returns to be wrote in a fair correct manner distinguishing the respective Companies and to be immediately deliverd to Major Andrew Brown Commissary of Musters who is to take the Musters in future at Providence. Artificers are not to be included in the above mentioned Returns For the future the Commanding officer on board the Galley is to examine all boats and Vessels passing from Providence down the Bay. He will when refractory, oblige them to bring too, & send the Skippers under a guard to the Genl.

Head Quarters Providence 3^d August 1779

The Issuing Commissary is to order three days fresh meat three days salt meat & one days salt fish to be issued to the troops weekly untill further orders.

Head Quarters 6th August 1779

The Genl is astonished to be credibly inform'd that a boat from Bristol, after the moon was up, rowed to this town from Warren, without being hail'd by any of the Sentries, Guard boats, or from any one of the Posts between that place & Providence, & even when there was not noticed by any Centinel or Guard—Every officer & Soldier last night upon duty, both afloat & on shore must take shame to themselves for this remission of duty—To prevent the like in future & to wipe off a stain of so unmilitary a dye—the Genl expects the utmost vigilance & alertness, will constantly and immediately be observed by every Officer & Soldier in this Army—if the Rounds Patrols Guards Boats & Centinels do their duty, complaints of this kind will never be made; Officers should consider there are few worse Crimes than that of suffering themselves to be surprised upon their Posts, & the Genl has that confidence in them to beleive this short reproof will be sufficient to cause every benefit wish'd for from their watchfulness on duty.

When the General came to this Command he endeavoured to

provide for the Troops all the comfort which circumstances would admit, & to prevent the least plausibility of excuse for such depredations and trespasses as are but too often committed on gardens & inclosures adjacent to Garrisons or encampments, the respective Corps of the Army were enabled to cultivate Gardens for supplying themselves with a sufficiency of vegetables and the inhabitants chearfully accommodated them with convenient lots for that purpose, besides this indulgence the most effectual measures have been adopted for issuing to the Soldiers a reasonable quantity of Roots Greens etc—Notwithstanding the Genls attention to provide for the troops, the inhabitants frequently complain to him of trespasses wantonly committed on their lands by the Soldiers.

To prevent therefore such abuses the criminality of which is aggravated by ingratitude, the Genl solemnly declares that he will not pardon any person under his command who shall be convicted of theft or trespass on Fields Gardens or Inclosures adjacent to any of the Posts, where the Troops are or shall be stationed, but that every such offender shall be punished with the greatest severity—

Head Quarters Providence 9th August 1779

Colo: Jacksons Reg^t to march tomorrow morning at day Break, the Colo: will see the whole Reg^t & the baggage off the ground, & will then call upon the Genl at Head Quarters for his particular orders and instructions.

Head Quarters Providence 11th Aug 1779

George Milliman Soldier in the 2nd Rhode Island Reg^t try'd at a late Genl Court Martial whereof Colo: Jackson was President for Mutiny is found guilty of the same & sentenced to suffer death—the Genl approves the sentence of the Court Martial & will order the same to be executed on monday sen night the Adj^t Genl will acquaint the prisoner with the sentence of the Court that he may prepare for Death.

Providence H. Q., August 25th 1779.

Extract from Gen^l Sullivan's Orders.

August the 3^d 1779

The Honour^{ble} the Board of War having been pleased to appoint Rulp Pomery Esq. Commissioner to Settle and Pay all Arrearages of Cloathing due to the Troops of these States for the Year 1777—The General Directs that the Accompts and Rolls required by the Resolve of Congress of the 2^d of March

Orderly Book

Last and published in orders the 12th following immediately made out and Presented to the Said Commissioner for Settlement

August 7th 1779

It having been found Prejudicial to the Service to Discharge Soldiers from the army who are capable of doing Duty in the Corps of Invalaids that no Non-commission'd officer or Soldiers shall be Discharged without a certificate from the doctor General or a Senior Surgeon of the Flying Hospital, or from Some of the Principal Surgeons of the General Hospital that he is unfit to Serve in the Corps of Invalaids as will as in the field and that all Discharges otherwas Granted Shall be Void.

Those who are certified unfit for Field duty only, the Brigadiers or Commandent of Brigade are to give them Transferrance to the (Corps) of Invalids in the following manner.

A B of Regiment being Certified by —— unfit for field duty is hereby Transferred to the Corps of Invalids.

The men Thus Transferred are to be Sent to the orderly office the first monday of every month that they may be Sent under Proper officers to those places where the Invalids are Station'd

Certificates are to be Sent with them of what Pay and Cloathing they have Recd and what may remain due to them.

Head Quarters 29th Aug 1779

George Milliman Soldier in Colo: Angell's Regiment Tried at a late General Court martial & Sentenced to Suffer Death, is further Respited from Execution untill monday the 13th September

The Commissaries having that there is an Extraordinary quantity of Rum Issued at Some of the Out Posts to regulate the allowance in future; The General orders one half gill of Rum in the morning to be Issued to the Troops who are under arms at Day Break: in very [wheat] weather in the Evening, @ the orders & Directions of the Commanding Officer

Colo Bartons Detach^d Corps of Light Infantry when on Command down the Bay are accisionly to draw Provisions at any of the Out Posts: when the Colo is in want of Provisions he will apply to the officer Commanding the Port: if that officer is Superior to Colo Barton The Commanding officers are ordered to supply Colo Barton: when inferior, Colo Bartons Return Signed to the Commissary is sufficient

Extract from Genl Gates orders

W^m Peck J^r D Adj genl

[hiatus]

. . . Martial by which he was tryed the 3^d Instant for Sleeping on his post in an insolent manner found guilty and Sentenced to receive fifty Stripes on his Naked back—Nicholas Wilson of Capt Allens C^t. tried by the Same Court for Disobedience of orders found Guilty and Sentenced to receive thirty Stripes on his Naked back.

The Col^o Approves of this proceeding of the Court Martial and orders the Sentence put in Execution this Evening at Roll Call.

III¹

Camp Barbers Hill Sept 6th 1779

Officers for tomorrow { Capt Humphrey
Ens Pratt

Details as usual

Camp Barbers Height Sept 7 1779

Regimental Orders

Officers for the day tomorrow² { Lt Jerould
Lt Peckham

Details as usual

Head Quarters Providence 7 Sept. 1779.

Major William Bradford of Colo: Sherburnes Regt is appointed Brigade Maj^r & Inspector to Brigadier Genl. Starkes Brigade. he is to be Respected accordingly. The Commanding officers of the Several Regiments in Genl. Starkes Brigade Will Make their Returns immediately to the Genl and not to Head Quarters as Usual

Camp Barbers Height 9th Sept 1779

Regimental Orders

Thos Sweetser of Capt. Stephen Olneys Comp^y Assistant forage Master is appointed to act as waggon Master for the Regt Until further orders, and is to be Answerable for the waggons horses & tackling Belonging to the Regiment in Every Respect Excepting Unavoidable accidents

the Orderly Srgt. in futur are to be Excused from Mounting Guard—but are Direct'd to pay the Strictest Attention to the

¹ The entries in this section are from a book of which the covers are lost and many of the first pages. The earliest entry is of date of 6th September, 1779, and the latest 19th November, 1779.

² For Sept. 9th, Capt. Olney, Ensign Wheaton.

Orderly Book

discipline of the men in their respective Companies as they are to be answerable to their Capt. or Commanding Officer that their mens Cloaths arms ammunition & accoutrements are in the best order they Must parade all guard and Detachments furnished by their Compr^s examine their arms accoutrements & dress before they bring them on the parade

Should anyone neglect Complying with this order they may expect to abide the Consequence.

At a Regt Court Martial held in Camp this Day Whereof Capt. W^m Humphry was President, was try'd Stephen Jones Hazard of Capt. Tews Company Charged with Sleeping on his post When a Centinel found guilty and Sentenced to Receive Sixty Stripes on his Naked Back. The Col Confirms the Sentence and orders it put into Execution this Evening at Roll Call

Camp Barbers Height 10th Sept 1779

Alexander Stuart Who was a Late sergeant in Capt. C Olney's Co. is again at the Request of his Capt. Restored to his former Rank and is to be obeyed and Respected accordingly William Thomas a Late Corporl in 3^d Compr. is also Restored to his former Rank and to be obeyed accordingly.

I Angell Col. Cd.

Camp Barbers Height Septr 10th 79

Officers for the Day { Capt. Stephen Olney
Ensⁿ Greenman

Resolves of Congress,¹ in G. O. Sept. 7, 1779

August 18th 1779

Resolved:

That Untill further Orders of Congress the Officers of the Army be intitled to receive Monthly for their Subsistence the following Sum vizth

	Dollars
Each Colonel & Brigade Chaplin.....	500
Every Lieut Colonel.....	400
Every Major & Regimental Surgeon.....	300
Every Captain.....	200
Every Lieut, Ensign & Surgeons mate.....	100

¹ Washington in promulgating these Resolves expressed the hope that the various States would second the recommendations of Congress and take every proper measure to gratify the reasonable expectations of officers and soldiers. Congress recommended the several States to make provisions for the men enlisted for the war, including half pay for life for officers, and suitable provisions for the widows of those that died in the service. These were in addition to the Resolve here printed.

Appendix II

273

Resolved:

That Untill further Order of Congress the sum of Ten Dollars be paid to every non Commiss'd officer & soldier Monthly for their Subsistence in Lieu of those Articles of food Originally intended for them and not furnished

Camp Barbers Height Septr 10th 1779

A Court of Inquire to sit this Day by order of Colo: Angell to examine into the Reason of William Barneys shooting a horse of Mr William Condouts When on Sentry and Make Report thereon

officers tomorrow { Capt Allen
En Pratt
Details as usal

Camp Barbers Height Sept 11th 1779

officers toMorrow { Capt. Humphrey
Lt. Peckham

Camp Barbers Height Sept 12 1779

officers tomorrow { Lt. Jerauld
Ens Masury

At a Regimental Court Martial held in Camp this Day whereof Capt Allen was President was Tried Corporal Moses Purkins of Capt Hughes Company for Stealing Thirty four Dollars in money & Some noats of hand to the amount of Sixty Pounds from Serjt Curtis found Guilty & sentenced to make Good the money and be reduced to a private Centinel & Receive Sixty Stripes on his naked back: at the same court was Tried John Randal of Lt Col^o Olneys Company for Selling Cider Contrary to orders found Guilty & Sentenced to Receive Twenty Stripes on his naked back

The Col^o approves of the Proceedings of the Court & orders the sentences put in Execution this Evening at Roll Call.

Camp Barbers Height Sept 13 1779

officers tomorrow { Capt S. Olney
Ens Pratt
Details as usal

At a Court Martial whereof Capt Humphrey was President was Tried Corporal Champlain of Capt S Olneys Company for absenting himself from his Command at Narrow River Twice without Leave & Staying the Largest Part of one day Each Time also for Leaving Camp Yesterday about 12. oClock & not

Orderly Book

Returning untill 9 at night without Leave found Guilty & sentenced to be Reduced to a Private Centinel and do duty as Such & Receive Sixty Stripes on his naked back the Colo approves of the Proceedings of the Court but as the Court Recommended his Punishment to be Suspended during his good Conduct in future the Colo: is pleased to grant it, but assures Chaplain should he attempt Taking Such Liberties in future The Stripes will be immediately Inflicted

George Clarke fife Major is for Repeated Disobedience of orders & In Attention to duty is Reduced and ordered to Join Capt S Olneys Co. as a fifer—and Joseph Dexter of the above mentioned Co. is Promoted to a fife Major & to be respected as Such

Camp Barbers Hill Sept 14 1779

Officers tomorrow { Capt Allen
Lt. Macomber

Camp Barbers Hill Sept 15, 79

Officers tomorrow { Capt Humphrey
Lt. Peckham

Camp Barbers Hill Sept 17th 1779

Officers tomorrow { Capt. C. Olney
En Rogers

The Troops are to Parade at the first dawn of the day till further Orders The Taptoo to be beat at Eight oClock, after which the Officers of the day & officers of the Guard in Camp will see that the Troops are all Still in their Tents, and all Lights to be put out in Camp at nine oClock. The Countersign to be given out in Camp immediately after Taptoo Beating and the out Guards as soon as Daylight is gone, and after ten oClock no Person is to be admitted to pass with or without the Counter-sign; without the Encampment Except the officers of the day and Guards

at a Regimental Court martial whereof Capt Humphrey was President was Tried Nicholas Willson of Capt Allens Co. chargd with absenting himself from Camp without Leave and not Returning to go on Picquet agreeable to order found Guilty & Sentenced to Receive Forty Stripes on his naked back The Col^o approves of the Proceedings of the Court and orders it put in Execution this Evening at Roll Call At the same Court was Tried Abraham Rose of Capt Tews Company: for Quitting his Post while on Centry and Suffering the officer of the day to Surprise the Guard: found Guilty and Sentenced to Receive Forty Stripes on his naked Back, but On Consideration of the

No. 14

Camp Barber's Heights 1st August 1779. 9th Clock @ Night

Dear Col^r.
Have this moment received your Express, desiring me to send a number of non-commissioned Officers & Soldiers of my Regt. to Providence as Evidences for Milliman, which will be forwarded with all possible speed, & deliver you this; but cannot conceive that they ought to be admitted as evidences, being parties equally concerned in their dam^ble conduct - for my own part, I have no reason to think, but that some of them would be bad eno^t to swear that they were q^e instigators of q^e Mating, in order to screen Milliman from suffering, as they have received their pardon & have no punishment to fear -

Col Beck }

I am with sentiments of esteem

Your humble Servt

J. Angell Col

No. 15.

Dear General

Camp Barber's Heights 11th Sept. 1779.

One of y^e Inhabitants of this Neighbourhood, had a Mare shot by one of my Gentlemen on y^e Night of q^e 5th Instant - the Gentleman apply'd to me y^e day following, to know how he should get pay for his Mare, as he supposed her to be shot by accident, & not by design - It was a matter I was somewhat at a loss to know how to proceed w^r, but by y^e inclos'd q^e Genl. will see in what manner I have proceeded, and now submit y^e matter to y^e Generals better Judgment, begging y^e Genl. to send me a line, how and who shall pay this Gentleman for his Beast.

An^r Dear Genl. y^e most Obed^t humble Servt

Genl. Genl. Gates }

J. Angell

No. 16.

Dear Genl.

Camp Barber's Heights 11th Sep. 1779.

There being two Vacancies for two Lieut^r in my Regt, occasion'd by y^e resignation of Lieut^r Benedict Tew, and Lieut^r Thomas Waterman, beg y^e General would be pleased to appoint Ensign Jr^r Hubbard to fill y^e Vacancy of Lieut^r Tew, which took place y^e 18th of May 1779 - and Ensign Joseph Whiaton to fill y^e Vacancy of Lt^r Waterman which happened y^e 38th of Aug^{ust} 1779.

I am S^r with Esteem
your most obedient, &

very humble Servt.

Genl. Genl. Gates }

J. Angell Col

Reasons for his Leaving his Post, but a few Steps and his former Good and soldierly behavior: The Court was pleased to Recommend him to the Col^o to Suspend his Punishment During his Good behaviour. The Col^o Confirms the Proceedings of this Court and Suspends his Punishment at Present

Camp Barbers Height Sept 18th 1779

Officers for duty tomorrow { Capt S Olney
{ Lt Macomber

Camp Barbers Hill Sept 23 79'

officers tomorrow—Capt Olney

The Honorable the General Assembly Having Promoted En^s Hubbard and Ensign Wheaton to the Rank of Lieut^s in Col^o Angells Regiment to fill the Vacancies of Lt Benedict Tew and Lt Waterman they are to be respected accordingly Lt Hubbard to take Rank as such from the 18th May 1779 Lt Wheaton from the 30th of August 1779 Capt Coggeshall Olneys Company of Light Troops to be immediately filled up to full Complement by a Draught from the Regiment Taking an Equal proportion from Each Company according to the Bigness of the Company and none to Exceed five feet Six Inches in Height

David Collor Fifer of foresd Company is for his Inability to service in that capacity Reduced to a private and ordered to take a firelock Instead of a fife

Camp Barbers Height Sept 23^d 1779

At a Regt^l Court Martial Whearof Capt. Stephen Olney was President was tryed John Huza of Capt Allens Co. for gitting drunk and abusing the Sergt of the guard with the Utmost insulting Language found Guilty and sentenced to Receive Sixty two Lashes on his naked Back At the same Court was tryed Danil Sweet of Maj^r Theyars Co. Chargd with gitting, drunk, and Leaving his post When on Centry found guilty and Sentenced to Receive one hundred Lashes on his Naked Back James Webster and Nathl talor of Capt. Allens Compy both tryd by the same Court for absenting themselves from camp one night Without Leave found guilty and Sentenced to be piquited the Space of ten minutes each Hosia Crandal of Capt. Allens Com. tryed by the same Court Charged with being absent from Camp the twentieth Instant from 12 oClock till Eight next Morning without Leave found Guilty and Sentenced to Receive forty Stripes on his Naked Back the Col^o approves the proceedings of the Court and orders the Sentences too be put in Execution this Evening at Roll Call Except Taylor, and Crandal Which is Suspended during their good

Orderly Book

Behavior & their officers are Directed to keep a Watch over their Conduct in futer and Should they attempt to take such Liberties or other ways act in disobedience of orders after this to immediately put this Sentence in Execution

I Angell Col.

Camp Barbers Hill Sept 27th 1779

officer of the Day tomorrow { Capt C. Olney
Ens W^m Pratt

[Head Quarters Providence 27 Sept 1779

A Gen^{el}l Court Martial to Set at the Court House in Providence a Wensday morning next at nine oclock to try all such prisoners as shall be brought Before them all evidences & persons Concerned to attend the Court

Col^o. Elliott President

Lt. Col^o. Putnam & Major Perkins

With three Captains & three]

[hiatus]

Regimental Orders

As the Promotion of Late in the Regimt. makes it necessary for the good of the Service that there should be a new arrangement of the officers, Lieut Jn^o Hubbard is Transferd from Col^o Angells C^o to Capt. Thomas Hughes Lt. Joseph Wheaton from Lt Col^o Olneys

(Torn away)

George Clark a Fifer in Capt Stephen Olneys Comp. is Transferd to the Infantry to Join Said C^o as fifer the 1st of Octr. next.

Camp Barbers Height Sept 28th 79

Officers for the Day tomorrow { Capt S Olney
Ensⁿ Roggers

Extract from General Gateses Orders the 27 of Sept 1779.

A General Court martial to sit at the Court House in Providence on Wednesday next at 9 oClock to Try all Such Prisoners as Shall be Brought before them all Evidences & persons Concerned to attend the Court.

Col Elliot president Lt Col^o Putnam & Major Perkins from Col^o Crains Detachment, & Three Captains & Three Subs from Col^o Tylers Regiment Members. Adjutant Carver (?) to attend the Court Any prisoners at any of the out Posts Confined for Capatal Crimes are to be sent tomorrow with their prosecuters to Providence George Milliman Soldier in Colo Angells Regiment Tried at a General Court martial for Mutiny & Sentenced to

Appendix II

277

suffer Death, is further respite from Execution untill monday the 11th Day of Octr next

Camp Barbers Height Sept 29th 1779

Officers tomorrow { Capt Allen
Lt Macomber

Camp Barbers Height Sept 29th 1779

officers of this Day { Capt Allen
Lt. Peckham

at Obdyke Newtown Sept 29 1779 was holden a Brigade Court Martial by order of Col Comdt Green of which Major Flagg was President Dr. Sam^l Tenny Judge Advocate the Court and Judge Advocate Being Sworn.

According to the articles of war Corp Edward pain of Col^o Angells Regt was brought before them Chargd with Deserting from his Regiment & carrying off with him three privates Soldiers Belonging to the Same, also for taking with him a guard boat from Bristol & joining the Enemy at Newport Being put on his Defense the Prisoner pleaded guilty of the Charge Except his Carrying of the three private soldiers and in Extercation of his Crime said he should not have Deserted if he had not been in Liquor

the Court Considering the prisoner as a non Commissd Officer Who had a Rite in all Cases to command Privates in the absence of his Superiors Judge him guilty of the Whole Charge & sentence him to be Reduced to the Ranks & Receive one hundred Lashes on his Naked Back

[Part of Regimental Orders, Sept. 30th torn away. The name Adams occurs.]

Door Taking him out of his Bead and Carring him away & also assuming the Character of Officers The Court find them all Guilty & sentence Each of them to Receive One Hundred Lashes on their naked Back & Smith to be Picketed for Ten minutes. The Col^o approves of the sentences & orders them in Execution this Evening at Roll Call Except Crosbys who in consideration of the Recommendation from the Court and some other Circumstances the Col^o pardons him & hopes this may be a Warning to him to avoid such Villinous Conduct in future, as such will be Treated with every mark of Severity. The Col^o is astonished to think it should be possible for men to be so Lost to every Sense of honor, & their own good as to Endeavor to Bring Disgrace & punishment upon themselves pain & Trouble upon their officers, in the manner that many has of Late, but they must Remember that it is their own Seaking and of course have no One to Blame but themselves

Orderly Book

Camp Barbers Hill Octr 1st 1779Officers tomorrow { Lt Jerauld
 { Lt. Hubbard

Joseph Angell of Capt S Olneys Co. is promoted to a Corporal & to be respected Accordingly

At a Regimental Court Martial whereof Capt Humphrey was Prest held this Day by Adjournment Was Tried Thomas Clark Beriah Clarke Benoni Bishup & John Fisher all soldiers in Colo Angells Regt. Charged with going Out of Camp a Little after Evening Roll Call without Leave & not Returning untill 12 oClock or past the Court find them Guilty & sentence Each of them to Receive Twenty (Stripes) on their naked Backs

The Col^o Approves of the Sentences yet Ever willing to Extend mercy where there is any hopes of Reformation, is pleased to Suspend the Punishment of Thomas Clarke Benoni Bishup & John Fisher but order Beriah Clarkes punishment Inflicted this Evening at Roll Call

Camp Barbers Hill Octr 4th 1779Officers tomorrow { Capt Allen
 { En^s Greenman

In all probability the Enemy may attempt to Suprise the Troops at this Post which makes it necessary for the men to be in readiness for action at the Shortest notice, and at all Times, no Soldier in future till further Orders is to Pull of more of his Clothes when he Turns in at night, then his Coat hatt & Shoes, on pain of being Confined & Tried for a willfull Breach of Orders, as they may be Called upon at a time when they Little Expect it The Col^o Strictly Injoines it upon every noncommissioned officer & soldier to pay the Strictest attention to this Order as it Gives him pain to See his Soldiers Brought to Shame and punishment by their folly and Disobedience of orders, he has been induced from time to time through the kinder feelings of humanity to Extend many a pardon to many Offenders, and to his Sorrow He is Convinced that it has not had the Desired Effects but Rather to the Contrary, he therefore once for all assures Every Non Commissioned Officer & Soldier that no Lenity will be shown them in future. but every neglect and willful Disobedience of orders Treated with every mark of Severity— on the other hand every Soldier who is Obedient to Orders and attentive to his duty will not Only mett with the applause of his officers and Country but will have every Indulgence Granted him that he can have Reason to Expect, or that the good of the Service will admit off, and that every Soldier may be Acquainted with this Order the Adjutant will read it the four Following Evenings at Roll Call at the same time the articles of war to be read

Appendix II

279

Camp Barbers Hill 8th of Octr 1779

Officers tomorrow { Capt. S Olney
 { Lt. Wheaton

At a Regimental Court martial whereof Capt Allen was Prs was Tried Corporal Samul Grant of Col^o Angells Co. Charged with absenting himself from Roll Call & abusing his Serjeant with insulting Language found Guilty of abusing the Serjeant and sentenced to be Reduced to a private Centinel and ask the Serjeants pardon

at the same Court was Tried Edward Chaplain of Capt S Olneys Company Charged with being absent from his Guard at New Town a Considerable Time found Guilty and Sentenced to Receive Ten Stripes on his Naked back The Col^o approves of the proceedings of the Court and orders the Sentence in Execution this Evening at Roll Call.

Camp Barbers Height Octr 11 79

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Lt Jerauld
 { Ensⁿ Greenman

At a Court Martial held yesterday Whereof Capt. Wil^m Humphrey was President Tryed W^m Briggs of Capt. Allens Comy for being absent at Roll Call & Staying out of Camp the greater part of the Night—found Guilty and Sentenc^d to Receive Thirty Strips on his Naked Back.

the Lt. Colo. approves the above Sentence and Orders it to take place this morning at Guard mounting

yet for Sufficient Reasons he is Induc^d to Suspend the Execution of the Sentence during the Prisoners good Behavior he now assures him that Should he in Futur Commit a Breach of order in any Instance this Sentence Will Immediately be Inflicted

Camp Barbers Hill Octr 12 79

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Capt C Olney
 { Ensⁿ Pratt

At a Regtmental Court Martial held the 11th Instant Whereof Capt C. Olney was President Was Tryed Sergt Dodge of Capt. Humphreys Co. Charged with Absenting himself from his guard on the 6 Instant When on Com'd at Newton and Neglecting to Releave his Sentinentals in Proper time and Letting them Stand in the Rain The Charge Not Being supported Sufficiently and attended With great Mallice & Design the Court therefore order that the Prisoner be Releasd from his Confinement

the Lt. Col^o Confirms the Sentence & orders it to take Place this Evening at Roll Call

Orderly Book

A Court martial held this 12th day by adjournment whereof Capt C Olney was President Tried Mark Barns, Charged with being absent Several Days & nights without Leave and not Returning till sent after and Brought to Camp. The prisoner pleads Guilty to the Charge Exhibited against him & the Court upon Mature Deliberation Sentence him to Receive sixty Strips on his naked Back

At the same Court was Tried William McCall Charged with absenting himself from Camp on the morning of the 11th Instant without Leave after being Regularly Warned for duty and not attending Roll Call at Troop Beating Likewise for Getting drunk and not Returning to Camp untill Sent After 3 oClock in the afternoon The prisoner pleads Guilty to the Charges Exhibited against him The Court upon Mature Deliberation Sentence the prisoner to Receive Fifty Strips on his naked back.

At the same Court was Tried Anthony Foster Charged with Threatening to [strike] Serjeant Whittlesey with a Clubb and to Take his life and for Disobedience of Orders The prisoner being arraigned pleades Guilty to the Charges Exhibited against him, whereupon The Court Sentence the prisoner to Receive fifty Strips upon his naked back The Lt Col^o approves of the proceedings of the Court & Orders the sentences put in Execution this Evening at Roll Call

Camp Barbers Hill Oct 13th 1779

Officers tomorrow { Capt S Olney
} Lt. Macomber

Extract from General Gates's Orders: 10 Octr 1779

The Commissary of Military Stores by Illness Resigned his office. It is proper that an Exact State of the Stores late under his Care, be immediately Taken and the Condition in which the Same is Left Carefully examined To that End The General Orders Major Perkins, Capt Callander & Capt Lt Paine to be a Court of Examination into the State of the Department of the Commissary of Military Stores, and finilly to Report their proceedings to the Genl. a proper Clerk shall be appointed to assist them in their Examination The General further Order Major Perkins Capt Callender and Capt Lt Pierce to take Charge of the Said Military Stores untill a proper person is appointed a Commissary which will be in a few days

A Fleet of men of war & Transports having yesterday arrived at Newport, and their Circumstances very Strongly Inducing an opinion that the Enemy will Speedily be in motion there, either to Act, Offensively against this State or Some of the Neighboring States on prhaps in Conjunction with an other

Appendix II

281

Imbarcation now Preparing at New York are, meditating Some Expedition of Importance. It therefore behoves all the officers Commanding Posts Guards or Detachments from this Army to be particularly Vigilant and attentive to their duty The General requests the officers Commanding at the Out Posts will Instantly report to him every Extraordinary movement of the Enemy, and exactly Remark the arrivals and Departures of Vessels

Camp Barbers Hill Oct 14th 1779

Officers tomorrow { Capt Allen
 { Lt Peckham

A Regimental Court martial whereof Capt Allen was President was Tried Samuel Thompson of Capt Allens Company Charged with abusing the Grand Rounds with Insulting Language when answered Grand Round Daming them and Ordered them to Stand after Standing a Considerable time at his first hailing

The prisoner pleads guilty The Court not Insenciable of the heinousness of the Crime, but upon evident Marks of Repentance upon his Trial do Sentence him only to be Reprimanded by the Officer of the Day and ask his Pardon

Edmond Pimges of Capt Allens Company Tried at the same for sufferings Rounds to Surprise him and Take his Arms from him when on Centry at Newtown

The prisoner pleades Guilty to the Charges Exhibited against him but in his Defense Says, he Left his Coat at Serjeant Hughes and being very Coald Stept into the Centry Box and put his arms in the Side of the Same and thinking about his Circumstances the Round, Came behind him & Surprised him

The Court upon Mature Deliberation do Sentence him to Receive Sixty Strips on his naked back, but from his good behavior; & willing to Recommend for Mercy: where there is the Least hopes of reformation do accordingly Recommend him for Pardon. Corporal Rogers of Captain S Olneys Company arrainged before this Court Charged with suffering Jonathan Dolber to Exchange Guards with John Gould & Letting Dolber go with — Munrow to Bissells Mill Guard when he was on Guard at Romes Point The Prisoner pleads Guilty to the Charge

The Court Sentence him to be Reduced to a private Centinel Mark Barnes of Col^o Angells Company Tried at the Same Court for going Out of Camp and Staying all night without Leave The Prisoner pleads Guilty the Court Sentence him to Receive Fifty Stripes on his naked back

The Col^o Confirms the proceedings of the Court and orders Thompsons and Rogers to take place this Evening at Roll Call and as the Court has been pleased to Recommend Pineger for

Orderly Book

pardon the Col^o has Granted it to him for this Once, and assures him that he is much Indebted to the Gentlemen of the Court for the Lenity Shown him. The Col^o is for Some Particular Reasons Induced to suspend Barnes punishment During his good behavior, but assures him that on the first Offense it will be Inflicted on him

Camp Barbers Hill Octr 15 1779

Officers tomorrow { Capt Humphrey
Lt Hubbard

Camp Barbers Hill Octr 16th 1779

officers tomorrow { Lt Jerauld
Lt Wheaton

at Court martial whereof Capt. William Humphrey was Presid^t Was Tried John Thomas & Corporal Daniel Barney Charged with Insulting one Mr Joseph Cole on the Road yesterday attempting to pull him off his Horse and afterwards finding him at Mr. John Coles laid Violent hands on him & abused him and afterward Returning to Mr John Coles between Eight or Nine oClock, in the Evening Laid Violent hands on him a man near four score years of age threw him down & shamefully abused him, Thomas was found Guilty of the Charges and Sentenced to Receive One Hundred Lashes on his naked back: Corp. Barney was found Guilty of the Last Part of the Charge, & suffering the Other part to be done in his presence & sentenced to be Reduced to a private Centinel and Receive fifty Stripes on his naked back

The Col^o Confirms the Sentences & orders them put in Execution this Evening at Roll Call in presence of the Regiment & hopes this may be a Warning to Each Soldier to avoid Such Detestable and abominable Conduct which Ever will be Treated with every mark of severity

[Leaf Cut out]

Colo Livingstons Regiment will Parade tomorrow morning at day Light

[Leaf Cut Out]

for the use of this Regiment The officers Commanding the Continental Regiments will Turn out the whole of their Officers & Soldiers of duty every morning at 8 oClock to Erect the Batteries Ordered to be Laid Out by the Engineers for the Defence of the Harbour. Intrenching Tools will be sent by the D Q Genl where the Troops are to be employed to Destroy the Enemies Lines are at Liberty to Burn the abbatis for fire wood every officer and Soldier to be allowed a gill of Rum Each

Appendix II

283

Day untill further Orders which is to be Deliverd to orders of the Commanding officer of Regiments

Head Quarters Newport Oct 29th 1779

Field officer tomorrow Maj Huntington

Details of Guards

	C	S	S	C	D	P
Main Guard.....	1	3	3	3	2	60
North Battery.....	..	1	1	1	2	15
Brentons Neck.....	..	1	1	1	2	15
	1	5	5	5	6	90

The above Guards to be furnished by General Starks Brigade a Sub's Guard to mount at noon at the north Battery and a nother at Brenton Neck, they will Receive their orders from the Field officer of the day. Capt Carlile with his Company from the state artillery is to take Post on Goat Island the Q M Genl will provide a Boat at the artillery Warf to Transport the Company and their Baggage. The officers Commanding Guards next the Harbour are not to Suffer any persons to break up or Destroy Wrack, they are to Confine all that are Guilty of any waste either public or private Property the under-mentioned Persons are appointed by the General as a Committee, to examine persons are in Newport and to take on Exact account of all the woolins Linnins Hattes & Salt etc therein Deposited The Chairman of the Committee will make his Report to the Cloathier General of the army and to the Commissary of purchases of the Salt.

Pres^d Judge Bowler

Jacob Richerson	John Bull
Robert Cook	George Gardner
Jonathan Easton	Sharman Clark
Job Gardner	Job Easton
J G Wanton	Thos. Howland
Joseph Twidy	Robert Taylor

The Committee is Disired to Extend their Search to Conanicut & R Island after they have Done their Business in Town all officers Commanding Guards & Ferries are to suffer no Merchandise to be Carried from the Island without a Permit from the General or Officer Commanding in Newport

Brigade Orders

Adjt for the day tomorrow Meigs
Col Angells Detail 2 S 2 S 2 C 2 Df 31 P

Orderly Book

H Quarters Newport 30 Octr 1779

Field for the day tomorrow Major Thayer

The Field officer of the day is Desired to Inspect into the situation of the Fire Ingineers, belonging to this Town, and make a Report thereof to Head Quarters

Mr Jacob Weed is appointed Issuing Commissary to General Starks Brigade

Brigade Orders

Adjt tomorrow Waterman

the Drum & fife to Beat of the Guard from Col^o Angells RegimentOrderly Serg from Col^o Angells Regt

	C	S	S	C	Df	P
Details Col Angells Regt	I	2	2	2	2	31
Webb	I	I	2	2	2	30
Sherburne	2	2	I	2	2	29

H Quarters Newport Oct 31

Field officer for the day tomorrow Colo Sherburne

Details for Guard

	C	S	S	C	Df	P
Main Guard	I	3	3	3	2	60
Brentons Point	I	I	I	2	I	5
	I	4	4	4	4	75

B Orders

Adjt for the day tomorrow Rusell Orderly Sergt from Col^o Sherburnes Regt Colo Sherburnes Regiment furnishes the Drums & fife for Parade tomorrow

Detail	C	S	S	C	Df	P
Sherburn	I	I	I	2	24	
Angell	2	2	I		26	
Webb	I	I	I	2	2	25
	I	4	4	4	4	75

Adjutant Waterman is to Strictly attend his duty in all points whatever, and keep his orderly book with him as not to suffer any villin to scribble on the same.¹¹ In hand writing of Colonel Angell. The preceding pages have the names Mehetabel W. Angell, Isaac Angell, etc.

Appendix II

285

Head Quarters Nov 1st 1779

Field officer for the day tomorrow Col^o Angell

Details	C	S	S	C	Df	P
Main Guard	1	2	3	3	2	60
Brenton Point			1	1		15
	1	2	4	4	2	75

Brigade Orders

Adj tomorrow Meigs

Details	C	S	S	C	Df	P
S	1	1	1	2		24
W		2	1		2	25
A		1	1	1		26

Head Quarters Newport Nov 2 1779

Field officer for the day tomorrow Lt Col^o Olney Details as yesterday Captain Carr of Col^o Tophams Regiment with Two Subs four Sergeants 4 Corporals 2 Drums & Fifes and 40 privates from General Cornells Brigade to Take the Charge of the Boat in and about Newport Harbour, a Sub Serj 2 Corporals. & 14 privates from General Cornells Brigade to be Stationed at Bristol Ferry The officer will Receive his Orders from D Q M General Col^o Bowen General Cornell will Detach Col^o Tophams Regiment to Collect all the public Boats from Bristol Tiverton & together at Howlands Ferry, and will order them Halled up and Secured at such place near said Ferry as He may think Proper When the Boats are Collected Genl Cornell will order suitable Guard, to take Care of them a Corporal & three men to be sent from Genl. Cornells Brg^d Daily to take Charge of the fuel at Brinton Neck.

The Field officer of the day will immediately after being Relieved make Report of his Tour to the orderly office

Colo Webbs Regiment will not Do any Duty tomorrow nor the Day after

B Orders

Adj for the Day tomorrow Waterman the Ajt of the day will bring on parade all the Drums & Fifes of his Regiment also an orderly Serjeant from the Same Regiment to attend at the Brigade Orderly Office

Details	C	S	S	C	Df	P
S		1	2	2		34
A		1	1	2	2	41
	1	2	4	4	2	75

Orderly Book

Head Quarters Newport Nov 3 1779

Field officer tomorrow, Major Huntington

Details for Guards

C	S	S	C	Df	P
I	2	3	3	2	60
Brenton Point	I	I	2	2	20

Colo Greens Regiment will immediately Embark for Goat Island The D Q M General to furnish them with Boats they will Take the Duty their instead of Col^o Sherburns Regiment Col^o Sherburns Regiment will do the fatigue duty on Brentens Neck till further Orders

Head Quarters Neport 4 Otr [Nov] 1779

P New London

C Sign—Hartford

Field Officer for the day tomorrow Major Thayer

Brigade Orders

Adjt for the day tomorrow Waterman

Details as yesterday

HeadQuarters Nport Nov 5 1779

The guard to be furnished by General Cornells Brigade, Those officers who have Boots & Shoes from public Service Store in this Department and have not yet settled therefor, are directed to Call on Col^o Gardiner Commissary of Hides and settle the same Col^o Jacobs is to do the duty of Officer of the day this day in Lieu of Major Thayer who is under marching Orders

The Continental Regiments and Col^o Crains artillery are to be Ready to embark as soon as the weather moderates and Cross the Bay to East Greenwich. Brigadier General Stark will be with the Troops and Conduct their march from thence

The D Q General Col^o Bowen will Order Vessels & Boats prepared for the Transportation of the Troops & Bagagge etc.

Green wich 9th 1779

General Orders

the troops to March in two Divisions for Hartford the first division Consisting of Webbs & Livingstons Regt. to march at Sun rise tomorrow morning to bowens tavern; the 2^d Consisting of Greens Sherburns & Angells Regt to March thirsday morning for the Same place; the first Division will be joined at plainfield by Col^o Jacksons Regt. Who are then to march with and belonged

in that Division the Genl will himself be with the first division & Genl Starks with the 2^d their is a Magazine of provision near bowen tavern and another at wendham so the officers Commanding Regt need only Draw as much as will serve them from one Magazine to the other in Case Col^o Livingston Regt. Cannot Joine this day they are to March by the Rout of next and join the Division at Hartford Capt Donald Capt Edwards & Capt Callender Comp^ys of Artillery to march with six pounders With the first Division & Capt Cooke & Capt Peirce Comp^ys with the Other two six pounders are to march with the 2^d Division the Ammunition to be proportioned accordingly

Rout by which the troops to move to Hartford

from greenwich to bowings tavern	15
to Eastons at plainfield	15
to Craryes at Windham	15
to the Meeting house at Bolton	15
to Hartford	15
	—
	75

East Greenwich 10 November 1779

General Orders

Parole Norwich

C Sign —Worcester

The Second Division of the Troops to march tomorrow morning at Sunrise—

Hartford Novemr 15th 1779

The troops that Arrived yesterday will be prepard to march at the Shortest Notice those which arrive this day will Halt tomorrow and after that will Likewise be prepard to march when Ordered. The artillery will also march as they arrive and Encam(p) on the Ground with Col^o Jacksons Regiment—They will also have everything in readiness for a march, as they will for the future march together, it will be necessary they Should Encam(p) together to morrow a proper Spot of Ground will be appointed for that purpose

The Commanding officers of Regiments will apply by their Q Masters to Col^o Hubbard D Q M. G for this allowance of Forage & fuel

A Guard of one Sub 1 Sergt. One Drum & Eighteen R & file will Mount immediately in the Town The officer will Receive his Orders from the D Adj General

Hartford November 16 1779

The whole of the Troops to march tomorrow morning at 8 oClock (Col^o Greens Regiment Excepted) for Southington

Orderly Book

Col^o Greens Regt will march as soon as Convenient this Day
 The Commanding officer will conduct them by the most Convenient Rout to Newport The Regiments of artillery are this Evening to draw Provisions to Last them untill the 19th Ins^s. Inclusive
 The Commissary to Issue hard Bread & Salt Provisions for three days in Pack

Hartford November 17th 1779

The Severity of the weather preventing the Troops marching this Day, they are to march tomorrow morning at Sunrise for Southington Such as are not Victualled to Saturday Inclusive, must draw immediately for that day

Danbury November 23^d 1779

B.O. a serjeant Corporal & 12 Privates from Colo Livingstons Angells & Jacksons Regiments to parade at the General Quarters at four oClock this afternoon

	S	C	P
Livingston		I	—3
Angells	I		4
Jackson			5
<hr/>			
I—I—I2			

Commissary Weed is directed to deliver the Back allowance of Rum, due to the Troops on their march to the 24th Instant Inclusive & that the Commanding Officers of Regiments Deliver Such quantities from time to time as they shall think necessary.

Head Quarters West Point nov 19th 1779

upon the arrival of the Troops, destined to quarter in Jersey, at the Ground upon which they are to hut The place allotted for each Brigade will be pointed out by the Q M Genl, who will furnish a plan of the Intended erections of the Soldiers huts, in the Construction of which it is Expected that a minute attention will be paid to the plan as Convencinety health and every Good Consequence will result from a perfect uniformity in the Camp,—The Commander in Chief Takes this previous opportunity of assuring, that any hut not Exactly Confirmable to the plan or the Least out of Line Shall be pulled down and built again agreeable to the mode and in its proper place

West Point 23^d November 1779

The three years & nine months men who have Engaged to Service in other Regiments during the War, are immediately to be Transferrd to the Regiments in which they have so Reenlisted—Those who have Reenlisted Before the 1st Instant, and have not yet been Transferred their Transferrances are to be dated as of that day In future they are to be Transferred immediately on Inlisting for the war

Danbury November 27th 1779

Adjutant Thomas Rusell of Colo Sherburn's Regiment is appointed Aid de Camp to Genl Stark & is to be respected accordingly

Details of the General's Guard

	C.	P
Colo Livingstone	I	3
Colo Angell		4
Jackson	I	5
	<hr/>	
	I-I	12

Danbury 28th November 1779

A Standing Guard to General Stark Consisting of one Corporal & nine Privates to parade this day at four oClock, from Colo Livingston Angells & Jacksons Regiments

	C.	P
Livingstone	O	2
Angells	O	-3
Jackson	I	4
	<hr/>	
	-I =	9 =

The Troops to march tomorrow morning by Sunrise Toward the place of Cantonment for the main army in the Neighborhood of Morris-Town by the Rout of Major Delavans—Compond—Kings Ferry—Sufferns—Pompton, etc. The Quartermaster of Brigade Captain Tew will go forward, about Seventeen or Eighteen Miles, and point out, a suitabl place for the Troops to Encamp, tomorrow night. The forag master will Likewise go

¹ This section covers the remaining part of the book from which the entries in section II are drawn. The entries are consecutive from the last in section III to that of the 10th February, 1780. Pages are lost at the end of the book.

Orderly Book

forward, and provide a supply of Forage, and have it Conveyed to the place Capt Tew shall direct, the Regiment, and artillery are this day to draw provisions to Last them untill the 1st day of December, Inclusive

The Quarter [Masters] of the Several Regiments will draw three days allowance of Rum for the men which will be deliverd to them as the Commanding Officers of Regiments shall direct.

(After Orders) The Brigade is not to march till further Orders.

Danbury November 30th 1779

For the future when the Troops are obliged to Receive Rice in Lieu of Flower—they will be Indulged, with a Jill of Rum pr man pr day.

a Brigade Court martial to set tomorrow morning at Ten oClock for the Trial of Such prisoners as shall be Brought before them. Prest Col^o Jackson.

Danbury 1st December 1779

Regimental Orders

Thomas Bond and Peleg Helms of Capt. Coggeshall Olneys Company, and Edmund Pinneger of Capt. William Allen Company are all promoted to Corporal and to be respected accordingly.

Danbury Decm 3^{d^r} 1779

The Commissary of Brigade Mr. Weed will issue to the Regiments, and artillery this day: provisions to Last them to the Seventh Instant Inclusive and for the future will Issue either half a peck of Potatoes or Onions to Each man pr week if they can be provided.

Mr Weed will deliver out West India Rum, to the officers as usal to the End of this month agreeable to their Rations.

The Brigade to march tomorrow morning by Sunrise to their place of Cantonment agreeable to the Rout laid down in the orders of the 28th of November Last.

H^d Q Morris Town 7 Decmr 1779

The Honourable the Board of war being Desirous as soon as possible to furnish a Register of the army—The Brigadiers and officers Commanding Brigades are desired to Cause Returns to be made immediately to the Adj^t General of all vacancies that

¹ Dec. 4, 1779. Danbury. A garrison court martial to sit immediately at Starr's Tavern. At a brigade court martial at which Lt. Col. Olney was president, James [Gace?] of Jackson's regiment, absent without leave, was sentenced to 100 stripes on his naked back, but because of long confinement, his punishment was mitigated. One or two leaves are missing at this point.

have happened in their Respective Commands since the late Arrangement of the army.

The Returns must specify the State to which the Regiments belong. The Names & Rank of the officers who formerly filled the Vacancies, the Time when they happen'd and the Cause which Produced them, and in future like Returns are to be made monthly. All Resignations, Except such as are made directly to Congress, or the Board of War, are to be made to Head Quarters, unless when there is a special Authority Granted for Excepting them Elsewhere as the irregular manner in which the Business has been Conducted in many Cases has produced Great Confusion—and the General Takes occasion here to Express his utter Disapprobation of the Conduct of many officers who from Time to Time obtain Long Furloughs and after Remaining from the army untill they Expire, Resign their Commissions, and in several Instances not Till an absence of several months—even beyond the Indulgence allowed them.

Head Quarters Morristown 8 Decm^r 1779

A very Correct return Signed by the Commanding officers of Regiment Compar'd with the muster Rolls, of their respective Regiments is to be made immidiately to the Adjutant General of the Number of Non Commissioned Officers & Private Soldiers, who Stand Engaged for the War, and those whose Times of Service, Expire at Different Periods, Specifying the months & years of each Class, then to be Digested into Brigade Returns. The Adj. General will furnish the forme of the Returns, and make a General one The Virginia Line having already made a similar One is not Included.

That the officers may in Turns have the Benefit of a Short Leave of absence, during winter Quarters The Maj^r Generals & Brigadiers or officers Commanding Brigades will Correct a Plan in their Respective Commands for answering the most Equal and Convenient manner having Reguard as much as the nature of the Case will admit to the Circumstances of Individuals, But the privilege is to Expire by the first of April, next at which Time the general Expects all officers, to be Present with their Corps—He also positively enjoins that no Regiments may be Left, without a Field officer nor any Company without a Commisid officer—This Restriction must not be Dispensed with on any account.

The orders of the 16th of May 1778 Respecting The Taking Soldiers from the army as servants is to be Strictly Observed Such Soldiers whos Times of Service Expire between this and the first of March next, on Condition of their Reinlisting for the War may be immidiately furloughed till the first of April next

Orderly Book

the Officers will be Cautious Not to Engage any but those whos Characters afford good Reasons to believe they will Comply with their engagements, and Return to their Corps at the expiration of their Furloughs that the Bounties given them may not be Fruitless expense to the Public.

The General Recalls the Particular attention of the officers of the order of the 23^d Sept 1778 founded upon the Resolution of Congress of the 11th therein Cited and Requires the most Particular & immediate Compliance with it for which at this Time there is a particular necessity—It is also Earnestly Recommended to those officers who are intitled to keep Horses when the duty of their office will posible Permitt to Send them or Part of them to a distance from the army by doing this they will Greatly Promote the Service and they may either deliver their Horses to the Commissary of Forage to be Subsisted from the Public Magazine or they may send them to Such places as they think proper and will be Repaid accasional Expence of their Subsistance.

Doctor Lothinmore being appointed a Senr Surgen in the flying Hospital he is to be Respected as Such.

H^d Quarters Morris Town 9th Dec^r 1779

The whole army to be inspected this month by the Sub & Brigade Inspectors, who are Carefully to Examine the arms accoutrements & Cloathing of Each non Commission'd officer & private and to ascertain with as much Precaution as possible what Quantity of Each on hand and what will be wanting for the Insuing Campaing, Calculating from the 1st Jan^y. 1780 to 1st Jan^y 1781—all Cloathing Received or Issued since the first of November to be considered as good

Pompton 11th Decm^r 1779

B. O. The Brigade will march tomorrow morning at Sunrise on their Rout toward Morristown. Colo Livingstone and Sherburns Regiments in Front Colo Angells and Webbs Regiments the Left wing Colo Angells in the Rear—Colo Jacksons Regiment in the Center—The artillery in front of the whole—Taking Care to Keep Sufficient Intervals between the Several Regiments as not to incommode each other on their march the Front Regiment & artillery will Halt within Two miles of Morristown, tomorrow night—The other Regiments at Such Distance from each other as shall be Convenient for Quarters The Brigade Quarter master will go forward and point out the particular Quarters for the Several Regiments—The Commanding officers of Regiments are desired to pay particular attention to their

Appendix II

293

men marching and not Suffer them to strole The Brigade will this Day draw provisions to the 13th Int^t Inclusive

Pampton 12 Decm^r t 1779

The Brigade To hold themselves in Readiness to march to-morrow morning at Sunrise if the weather be not Stormy—The Several Regts and artillery to draw provisins to the 15th Int Inclusive.

Head Quarters Morristown Decemr 16 1779

P. Copenhagen C Signs { Dresden
Dundee

The Brigade will march to the Ground they are to Encamp on tomorrow morning by Sunrise—The Brigade Quartermaster Capt. Tew direct them to the place The Quarter master of Brigade will this day Deliver the proportion of Tools for the purpose of Building their Huts to the Several Quarter masters of Regiments in the Brigade and take their receipts for the same—who will be accountable for the number they receive.

Adj. tomorrow Miegs

H^d Quarters Decemb^r 17th 1779

Colo James Livingstons Regiment now in General Starks Brigade is to be immediately annexed to General Hands.

Colo Angells Regiment to Take the ground for Hutting. now occupied by Colo Livingstns Regiment—Colo Sherburn & Webbs Regiment will Shift ground Colo Jacksons Regiment to Continue on the ground they now possess.

Head Quarters Morristown 18 Dece 1779

P Westmoreland Countersign { Woodstork
Wells

B. O.

The Field officers of the Brigade are to Send in tomorrow at Orderly Time The dates of their Several Commissions and those that have not Commissions or dates to their Commissions. The Times of their appointment—Adj for tomorrow Williams.

Head Quarters Morris Town 19th Dec^r 1779

Clinton's and Hands Brigades gives the main Guard tomorrow. A Corporal and six men from General St Clere's Division to be sent to the Forage Master Generals Quarters this afternoon, with their Blanketts and three days provisions, they are to drive Horses to Pennsylvinea; A sub, 2 serj's & Forty Rank & file from the Maryland line, to parade tomorrow morning at 9 oClock on the

Orderly Book

right of Clintons Brigade for fatigue, they are to take their Dinners with them.

The General Court Martial appointed the 29th of May last, for the Trial of Major General Arnold, whereof Major General How is President, is ordered to meet at Town at the 20th Inst to Resume the Trial, The Court will consist of Major General How President Brigadier General Maxwell vice Brigadier Woodford absent, B. General Smallwood B. Gen^l Knox, B. Gen^l Stark vice Evin challenged, Col^o Bradly vice Col^o Wood absent, Humpton vice Harrison absent, Hall Sunby, Courtland vice Moyland absent, Hagini vice Richard Butler challenged, Dayton vice Pokin absent, Sherburne vice Harm absent.

21 Dec 1779 Morristown H Quarters

Brigade Majr for the day tomorrow Davidson

a Detachment to parade tomorrow morning at 10 oClock (in the Field between the Pennsylvania & New York Encampments which is assigned for a Grand Parade) with Two days Cooked provisions & 40 Pounds pr man—Lt Colo Dehart to take Command he will apply to Head Quarters for orders this afternoon—Major Tory for the Detachment. The Connecticut Line gives the Main Guard tomorrow

Detail for Detachment

	C	S	S	C	DF	P
1 st maryland Brd		I	I	I		22
2 D ^o			I	I		21
1 Pennsylvania			I	I		19
2 D ^o			I	I		14
1 Connecticut Brge				I		22
2 D ^o			I	I		17
Maxwells Brdg		I	I2	3	2	I
Hands D ^o	I	I	2	2	I	18
Clinton D ^o	I	I	2	2	I	20
Stark D ^o	2	I	2	2	I	24
	5	7	15	14	4	200

Lt Colo or Major from the Connecticut Line to Join the Light Infantry immidiately.

H^d Quarters Morristown 22 1779

One Sub 2 sergeants and Forty Rank & file for fatigue tomorrow at the Orderly Room from the Connecticut Line.

B O

Adj^t for the day tomorrow Williams

Capt Humphrey of Colo Angells Reg^t is appointed to Inspect

Appendix II

295

the Building of the Huts in the Brigade—he is to be obeyed accordingly—One man from each Regiment to Relieve the Guard over the Ammunition Waggon, the Corporal from Colo Sherrburn's Regiment—The Adjt of the day will please to see it Relieved this Evening.

After Head Quarters Orders

The General Court Martial whereof Major General How is President to sit tomorrow morning at 10 oClock at Noices Tavern, Col^o Jackson is appointed a member of the Court martial vice Col^o Hagin—and Lt Col^o Commandant Wiessenfels vice Col. Humpton absent on command.

[Seven leaves are here torn from the book.]

Head Quarters Morristown Dec 31 1779

P. Spain

Countersigns—Madrid
—Cadix

The Maryland Line gives the main Guard tomorrow—General St Clears Division give the fatigue tomorrow for the Orderly Room

In Congress December 23^d 1779 Resolved that Instead of the Subsistance allowed by act of Congress of the 18th of Febery Last, to the officers in the Department of the Field Commissaries of military Stores.

The following Sums to be allowed to the Field Commissary 400 Dollars pr month The Deputy Field Commissary 300 Dollars pr month to a Conductor 100 Dollars and to a Cleark 100 Dollars pr month and this Increas'd Subsistance Commence the Eighteenth of August Last and Continue till the further Orders of Congress.

B O

It having been represented to the General that the Rails belonging to the Inhabitants in the Vicinity of Camp have been Taken in Great Number by the soldiers of the Brigade The General Earnestly request the officers to use their utmost Endeavours to put a stop to Such depredations for the future Serg Nathan Whittlesey of Colo Angells Regt is appointed Conductr to the Brigade he is to be respected accordingly.

Adjt for the day tomorrow Waterman

Regimental Orders

Head Quarters Morristown 1st Jany 1780

Parole—Dauphin
Details

C. S. } Puddey
} Providence

Lord Sterlings Division furnishes the fatigue Party for the Orderly Room tomorrow.

Orderly Book

Capt Brice of the 3^d Maryland Regiment is appointed Brigade Major & Inspector to the first maryland Brigade till further Orders he is to be Respected & obeyed accordingly

Head Quarters Morristown Jany 2^d 1780

Brigade Major for the day tomorrow Church Lord Sterlings Division furnishes the main Guard tomorrow the Connecticut Line furnishes the fatigue tomorrow for the orderly Room, A Detachment to be commanded by Lt. Col^o Willet to parade tomorrow morning at 9 oClock.

The Honourable the Congress on the 28th of Last December when pleased to pass the following act—Resolved that the Rate of Postage untill the further order of Congress be Twenty Prices upon the Sum paid in the year 1775—That Single Letters directed to any officers of the Line and all Letters directed to general officers Or to officers Commanding in a separate Department and all Letters to & from the Ministers, Commissioners, and Secretaries of these United States at Foring Courts be free.

Major Talbot for the Detachment.

Camp Jany 2 1780

Regimental Orders

Serjeant Curtis of Capt Hughes Company is appointed Q. M. Serg^t to the Regiment & is to be obeyed accordingly.

Cerdnid Crish¹ of Lt. Colo Olneys is appointed Corporal in the Company to be respected accordingly.

Head Quarters Jany 3rd 1780

All soldiers before they are Discharged from the Service are to Receive their full pay Should the Regimental paymasters not have Money in their Hands to answer the purpose they are to apply to the Deputy Pay Master Genl, who will advance them the necessary Terms on an Estimate for one Month.

At a Division Court Martial in Camp Morristown by order of Brigadier Genl. Stark Commandant Dec^r 28th 1779 Lt Colo Huntington President.

Tbos Herendeen Soldier in Colo Angells Regt. was try'd for Desertion & found Guilty of a Breach of the first Article of the sixth Section of the Articles of War and Sentenced to Receive one hundred Lashes on his naked Back—Christian Myers & Philip Wild Soldiers in Colo Henry Jacksons were also try'd for Desertion and Severally found Guilty of a Breach of the first Article of the Sixth section of the Articles of war and Sentenced

¹Qy. Irish.

to Receive one Hundred Lashes Each—The Commander in chief Approves the foregoing Sentences.

John Lewis Soldier in Colo H Jacksons Regt appealing from the Judgment of a Regimental Court Martial for Stealing and being Drunk on Duty found Guilty of a Breach of the fifth Article of the thirteenth Section of the Articles of War and Sentenced to Receive one hundred Lashes on his Bare Back.

John McLane & W^m Harper Soldiers in the fourth N York Regt. were try'd for Desertion and being absent above twelve Months and found Guilty of A Breach of the first Article of the Sixth Section of the Articles of War—and Sentenced that McLane Receive one Hundred Lashes on his naked Back to be Inflicted at four Several times & that Harper Run the Gauntlet through the Brigade to which he belongs W^m Potter Soldier in Colo Angells Regt. was also tryd for Desertion and Reinlisting found Guilty of a Breach of the third Article of the Sixth Section of the Articles of War and Sentenced to Receive one Hundred Lashes on his naked Back to be Inflicted at four Different times Joseph Waterhous Soldier in Colo H Jacksons Regt. also tryd by the same Court Martial for Desertion and found Guilty of a Breach of the first Article of the sixth Section of the Articles of War and Sentenced Unanimously to Suffer Death—Amos Rounds a Soldier of the same Regt. also tryed for Desertion was found Guilty of a breach of the first Article of the Sixth Section of the Articles of War and Sentenced to Suffer Death Jesse Pierce Soldier of the same Regt. also try'd for Desertion was found Guilty of a Breach of the same Article of the same Section of the Articles of War & Sentenced to Run the Gauntlet through the Brigade to which he Belongs and be Confin'd in the Dungeon for the Space of one Month on Bread and Water—Nathan Barney Soldier of the same Regt. also tryed for Desertion was found Guilty of a Breach of the Same Section & Article and Sentenced to Run the Gauntlet through the Brigade to which he belongs and be Confined in the Dungeon for the Space of one Month on Bread and Water.

John Matthews Soldier of the same Regt also tryd by the same Court for Desertion & found Guilty of a Breach of the same Section and Article & Sentenced to Run the Gauntlet through the Brigade to which he Belongs and be Confin'd in the Dungeon one Month on Bread & Water. W^m Straw Soldier of the same Regt also tried for Desertion was found Guilty of a Breach of the first Article of the Sixth Section of the Articles of War & Sentenced Unanimously to Suffer Death Corpl James Whitney of the same Regt also try'd for Desertion was found Guilty of a Breach of the same Article & Section & Sentenced to do the Duty of a private Centnel & to Recieve one hundred Lashes on his Bare Back—W^m Harman a Fifer of the same Regt. also —

tryed for Desertion & found Guilty of a Breach of the same Section & Article & Sentenced to Receive one hundred Lashes on his Bare Back.

Peltiah Harmon a Soldier in the same Regt. also tryed for Desertion and found Guilty of a Breach of the same Article & Section & Sentenced to Receive one hundred Lashes on his Bare Back.

Nathaniel Milikin a Soldier in the same Regt also try'd for Desertion was found Guilty of a Breach of the same Article and Section & Sentenced to Receive one hundred Lashes on his Bare Back—Joel Milikin a Soldier in the same Regt. also try'd for Desertion found Guilty of a Breach of the same Article & Section & Sentenced to Receive one hundred Lashes on his naked Back.

The Commander in chief approves Each & Every of the foregoing Sentences.

Regimental Orders [Jan. 5, 1780.]

Corpl Joseph Tanner of Capt. Hughes's Company is promoted to a Serjeant in the same Company his Appointment to take place from the first of January.

Adj't. Waterman having obtain'd Leave of Absence til the first of April next, Ensign Rogers is appointed to do the Duty of Adjutant until his Return and is to be Respected accordingly.
B After Orders.

Sam Hines of Cap^t Humphrey's Company is promoted to a Corporal in the same Company & is to be obey'd as such his Appointment to take place from the first of January.

Head Quarters Jany 6th 1780

William Hutton Late a soldier in the 16th Massachusetts Regt. is appointed an assistant to the Provost Martial.

B. O. Adj^t for the Day tomorrow Seldin.

Regimental Orders [Jan. 9, 1780.]

Two Men to be turn'd out of Capt. Tews Company, for the purpose of Biulding his Hutt, Each Day when call'd for, untill it shall be finish'd.

Head Quarters Jany 11th 1780

Parole—Union

C Sig 1 Virtue
Wisdom

As Effectual measures are now in execution for Supplying the Army—All Detachments & Parties from the Line not sent by Genl Orders are to be call'd in Immidiately.

Appendix II

299

Brigade Orders

Adj^t for the Day tomorrow Williams.

Regimental Orders

Ensign Greenman is appointed to take the Command of Lt Colo Olneys Company in the Absence of Lt Jerauldy

The Reveille to be beat Just before Sunrise & the Retreat at Sunset. no troop no taptoo to be beat til further Orders

The Orderly Serjeants are Directed to call their Rolls at Sunrise & Sunset in front of their Huts and Each one of them to make Report to the commanding Officer of his Company whether there be any Absenteis or not & what order the Mens Arms and Accoutriments are in etc.

A Fatigue party consisting of 1 Serjt., 1 Corpl & 15 Privates to be paraded tomorrow Morning 8 oClock for the purpose of Building the Col^o's Hutt.

Head Quarters Jany 12th 1780

Parole Zantippe

C Signs { Youth
Guest

B. O. Adj^t for the Day tomorrow Rogers

A Brigade Genl Court Martial to sit tomorrow Morning 9 oClock for the Trial of Ensⁿ Rusell (now Aid de Camp to Genl Stark arrested by Col. Sherburne) and Such other Prisoners as Shall be brought before them.

President—Maj^r Thayer

Angell
Sherburne
Webb
Jackson

I — 4
I — I }
I — I } Members
I — 2 }

4 — 8

The Court to sit at the Presidents Quarters or where he shall think most Convenient.

Lost yesterday a Leathern Pocket Book with two Massachusetts Bay notes one of an Hundred & fifty & the other Thirty Pounds, Value. A Commission & a few other papers of Little Value to any Body but y^e Owner—Whoever will Deliver S^d Book with the Contents to Maj^r Prescott of Colo Jacksons Regt. Shall Receive fifty Dollars reward.

B. O. Jan. 13. Adj^t. for the Day tomorrow Meigs. Lt. Thos Edwards of Colo Jacksons Regt. is Appointed to do the Duty of Brigade Majr. & Inspector to the Brigade, in the absence of Maj^r Bradford is to be obeyed & Respected accordingly Lieut

Orderly Book

David Sayles of Colo Angells Regt. is appointed to do the Duty of Brigade Q Master to the Brigade During the Absence of Capt Tew.

The Brigade Court Martial ordered to Sit this Day whereof Maj^r Thayer was appointed President is not to Sitt.

Divison Orders

A Division Court Martial will sit next Monday Morning 10 oClock at the Presidents Quarters by order of the Hon^{ll} Brigadier Genl Stark for the trial of Ensⁿ Thomas Rusel of Colo Sherburnes Regt Aid de Camp to Genl. Stark-Major Thayer will preside

Genl Clintons	C Subs
Genl Starks	$2 - 4 \}$ Members

Lieut. James Fierlee of the 2nd N. York is to act as Judge Advocate, all Evidences are requested to Attend the Court & the above Brigades are to furnish an orderly Serjt to the Court by Turns. Genl. Clintons Brigade gives the Serjt on Monday—

Regimental Orders

Ensⁿ Joseph Masury is Appointed to do the Duty of Pay Master to the Regt. During Capt. Hughes's Absence who is going to Rhode Island after Cloathing for the Regiment.

Head Quarters Jany 15 1780

The Troops are to hold themselves in Readiness for action at a Moments Warning & to be Supplied with two Days Cooked Provisions in Advance

B O. Adj't for the Day tomorrow Williams

In Consequence of this Day, Genl Orders the Commanding Officer of Regiments will order that their Regiments be Supply'd with Provisions accordingly & that the Same be Cook'd Immidately & also that the Several Q Masters have Ammunition Ready to Deliver at a Moments Warning.

R. O. The Q Master is to Draw two Days Provisions in advance, Immidately, according to Genl Orders & the Commanding Officer of Each Company is to see that his Respective Company has their Provision Cook'd as Soon as Possible

Head Quarters Morristown Jany 18th 1780

Brigade Maj^r for the Day Tomorrow Van Leer

A Detachment from the Line to parade Tomorrow Morning 10 o Clock with two Days Provisions Cook'd.

Field Officer for the Detachment Lt. Colo North & Maj^r Thayer.

The Court Martial whereof Maj Genl How is President is to Meet at the Usual place tomorrow Morning 11 oClock

A Pound of hard or Soft Bread & a quarter of a pound of Indian Meal; or a Pound of Flour, A pound of Beef or Fourteen Ounces of Pork, to be the Daily Ration untill further Orders

[Jan. 24]

A Detachment from the Line Compleatly Equip'd with two Days Provisions, to parade tomorrow Morning 9 oClock

Field Officers for the Detachment tomorrow Col^o Ogden Lt Col^o Ford Lt Colo Haight Lt. Colo Mentges Maj^r Dean Maj^r Darrow & Maj^r Grush. A Surgeon from Genl Maxwells Brigade & a Mate from Starks Brigade

Division Orders

The Commander of this Division Expressly forbids the Commanding Officers of Brigades or Regiments to Furlough any more Officers untill further Orders

B O Adjt for the Day tomorrow Rogers

Detail for the Detachment

	C	S.	S.	C.	D	F	P
A		I	I	I			6
S		I	I	2			35
W				2	I		I 32
J	2	I	I	I	I		25
	2	3	5	5	1	1	98

Surgeons Mate for the Detachment from Colo Angells Regt.¹

Regimental Orders. [Jan 25.]

Ensign Pratt is Appointed to take the Command of Capt. Stephen Olney's Company, untill an officer of that Company shall Return to Camp.

As a Number of the Taylors has heretofore Met with the Indulgence to be Excus'd from Duty in the Regt. to make & repair the Cloathing of the Officers & Soldiers of the same, It is Observ'd they Frequently Take practice taking in work for the Inhabitants & others Neglecting the work promised to their Officers while they suffer for the same.

¹ General Orders of this date called for the "whole Army" to be supplied with two days provisions, and "to be held in perfect order." Lt. Col. Huntington was substituted for Haight, and Major Tory for Darrow, to accompany the detachment. See Jany 24th.

Orderly Book

Should any of them for the future be Detected in the like practice without first Obtaining leave from the Commanding Officer of the Regt. They may Depend on being punis'd for Disobedience of orders

Serjeant Chaffee will take the Charge & Command of the Taylors til, further Orders & be answerable for their Conduct.

Head Quarters Morristown Jany 26th 1780

Capt. William Vanlear of the 9th Pennsylvania Regt having done the Duty of Brigade Maj^r & Brigade Inspector of the 2nd Pennsylvania Brigade from the 12th Day of December Last is appointed Brigade Maj^r & Brigade Inspector. To the same he is to be Respected & obey'd accordingly.

B. O.

Adj't. for the Day tomorrow Selden the Brigade will be Mustered on the 28th Inst for the Month Nov. & December 1779 The Muster will begin with Col Angells Regt at 10 oClock in the Morning & the other Regt. will be Muster'd in Course from Right to Left, the Officers need Only to make Three Rolls

Head Quarters Morristown Jany 27th 1780

By a Division Court Martial of the Maryland Line, Major Dean President, Lieut. Hugo of the 5th Maryland Regt. was tried for Beating, Wounding & Abusing, in a Cruel Manner Sundry Sodiers Belonging to the 2nd Maryland Regt. & Acquitted By the same Court Capt. Price of the 2nd Maryland Regt. was tried for Gaming with [cards] for Money, for Neglect of Duty, Gambling, for behaving in a Manner unbecoming the Character of an Officer, for Secretly Striking Lt Devol with a Cane when he was executing his Duty, for Disorderly & Mutinous Conduct in presence of the Soldiers of the Regt. & for Abuse after being reported for other Crimes acquitted of the first, second, third, & fourth Charges found Guilty of the fifth Charge part of the Sixth Charge & the Seventh Charge & Sentenced to be Reprimanded in Division Orders

The Commander in Chief approves the Sentences.

Head Quarters Morristown Jan. 28th

The Genl is Astonished & Mortified to find that notwithstanding the orders Issued on the 29th of Last Month & his Exhortation to the Officers to prevent it that the Inhabitants in the Vicinity of Camp are absolutely a prey to the Plundering & Licentious Spirit of the Soldiers

From the Daily Complaints & the formal Representations of the Magistrates on the Subject a Night Scarcely Passes without

Gangs of Soldiers going out of Camp & Committing every Species of Robbery Depredation & the Grosset personal Insults this Conduct is Intolerable & a Disgrace to the Army & if anything can aggrevate it it is that these Violences are Committed on the property & persons of those who in a very late & alarming Accasion for the want of Provisons Manifested the warmest Attachment to the Army by affording it the most Generous & plentiful relief, it has also been reported that when Detachments are reliev'd & are returning to Camp the Soldiers Straggle [Moraud] & plunder in a most shameful & Injurious Manner. The Genl Trusts & insists that the Officers will exert themselves & take effectual Measures to prevent all such practices in future.

Proper Camp Guards Agreeable to the Regulations are to be Immediately appointed from which patroles are to be sent to the environs of the Camp

If any Soldiers are found Straggling out of the Chain of Sentinels after Retreat Beating they are to be brought by the Patroles to the Officer of the Guard who is Authorized & requir'd to give them one hundred Lashes upon the Spot & if any one found perpetrating Robberies or other Violences they are to receive from one to five hundred Lashes at the Direction of the Officer

B. O. Adjt. of the Day tomorrow Rogers

Head Quarters Morristown Jany 29th

A Warrant N° 1,910 for 24,958 & $\frac{68}{90}$ Dollars, Dated the 28th Instant payable tu Lt Charles Fanning pay Master to the 4th Connecticut Regt. for the pay of the same for Nov. & Dec^r. was Dropt by Accident yesterday with two Abstracts on which it was granted between Head Quarters & the D P M Genl Office, any Person finding those Papers or any of them, will Lay Lt. Fanning under Acknowledgements by Lodging them at the pay Office

The Court Martial whereof Maj^r Genl How, is President is Adjourned til the Proceedings receive the Determination of Congress but the Members in the Meantime will Return to their Duties in the Line

A General Court Martial of the Line to Sit tomorrow at Mr King's in Morristown for the trial of such persons as Shall be brought before them Col. Humpton is appointed President & Col. Angell Lt Colo^s. Haight, North & Woodford, Majors Tory Boils & Anderson & one Capt. from the first Maryland one from the 2nd Pennsylvania one from Clintons, one from 2nd Connecticut, & one from Starks, Brigades are appointed Members

D Orders. Altho there is a plenty of Fire Wood near the Huttts Complaints have been frequently made that some of the

Orderly Book

Soldiers practice Burning the Inhabitants Fences all Officers in the Division are call'd upon to Exert themselves in preventing such Unnecessary destruction of property & any Soldier that may be found Guilty of burning Rails in future will be severely punis'd for Disobedience of Orders

B. O. Adjt. for the Day tomorrow Meigs Capt. for the Court Martial from Colo Angells Regt.

A Subaltern Guard Consisting of 2 Serjts. 2 Corplos. 1 Drum & 27 Privates to Mount this Day at Retreat beating as a Camp Guard, the Officer will send out patroles according to the Genl Orders of yesterday The B. Q. M. will see that a Convenient place is provided for the Guard till a Guard House can be Built.

Regimental Orders [Jan. 28.]

Edward Arnold Drummer in Capt. S. Olney's Company, is Appointed to do the duty of Drum Major & to have the Command of the Musick til the Return of the Drum or Fife Major he is to be Obey'd accordingly.

For the Future the Taptoo will beat at 9 oClock after which no Soldier must be Absent from his Regt. or quarters without Leave from his Officer in Writing On pain of being Severely punish'd for Disobedience of Orders.

At a Regimental Court Martial held in Quarters this day, by order of Capt. Comdt C Olney (whereof Capt. Humphrey was President) was tried William Powell of Lt. Col. Olney's Company, Charg'd with Absenting himself from Quarters, twenty four hours without Leave, Found Guilty of the Charge & Sentenced to receive Forty Stripes on his naked Back The Capt. Comdt approves the Sentences & orders it put in Execution tomorrow Morning at Troop Beating.

Head Quarters Morristown Jan 31st 1780

Parole Denmark

C Signs { Danube
Dee

Brigadier for the Day tomorrow Maxwell Field Officer, Col. Cortland.

The Genl Observes with great Concern that to many Officers are Daily absent from Camp by which the Discipline of their Respective Cores must necessarily be much neglected & many Disorders Ensue. To this in a great Measure is to be Attributed the Shocking Spirit of Licentiousness now prevailing among the Soldiery.

The Late Capture of some Officers on the Lines who were not there on Duty Ought to be a Caution against the like practice in future Gentlemen taken in this manner may assure themselves that they will not be Exchang^d in turn, but will be postponed as

long as possible & the Commissary of Prisoners will be Instructed accordingly—The Genl. calls upon the Officers Commanding Divisions, Brigades, & Regiments to take Effectual Measures to prevent a Continuance of these Irregularities & in General to Effect a more Strict Observance of the Regulations Established by Congress, than has hitherto Obtain'd.

Though he is far from wishing to Impose unnecessary Restraint upon Officers or to refuse them any Reasonable Indulgence, yet he cannot think of tolerating Excesses Subversive of the Service & productive of every Evil Consequence

A Brigadier & a Field Officer of the Day to be appointed—these as Usual will Superintend the Police of the Camp & the Service of the Guards & will see the Regulations for both Carefully Executed

The Genl. Expects a pointed Attention

In the present Scarcity of Genl. Offices with the Army the Colo^s. Commanding Brigades will Roll in the Duties of the Day, Instead of Brigadiers. The Old & new Officers of the Day will attend Head Quarters Every Day at one oClock the former to make report of the transactions of the preceeding day & the latter to receive any new orders the Commander in Chief may have to give

B. O. Adj't of the Day tomorrow Williams

Head Quarters Feby 1st, 1780

Brigadier for the Day tomorrow Guest. Field Officer, Col. Spencer.

The Connecticut Division is to be held in perfect readiness to March at a very Short Notice.

Regimental Orders

Jonathan Briggs a Soldier in Capt. Hughes's Company, is promoted to a Corporal in the same & is to be Respected accordingly.

Head Quarters Feby 2nd 1780

Parol France

C Signs } Florence
} Florida

Brigadier for the Day tomorrow Ervine
Field Officer Col. Jackson

The General Court Martial will sit tomorrow L^t Col. Shierman is to go on Command with the Connecticut Division & L^t Col. North being sick: Majors Piatt & Trescott are appointed members.

B. O. Adj't. of the Day tomorrow Meigs

The Situation of the Regiments being such that there are not Officers Sufficient to appoint one as Officer of Police the

Orderly Book

Commanding Officers of Regts. are Requested to appoint two serjeants Daily to Inspect the police of the Camp.

Head Quarters Morristown Feby 3^d 1780

Officers of the Day for tomorrow { Col. Sherburne
Major Hardman

By a Division Court Martial of the Maryland Division Maj^r Hardman President, Ensign Ford of the 2^d Maryland Regt was Tried, first for Disobedience of orders Issued the 29th of Nov. Last in Marching the second Regt. from the parade at Pumpton when Directed to the Contrary—2^{dly} for Conduct unbecoming the Character of an Officer & Gentleman in Relating to Col. Woolford Orders Different to those he Receiv'd by which he Obtain'd his permission to March Thirdly for Contempt of orders & Subversion of Subordination in Executing the Orders of Col. Woolford in Direct Opposition to those sent by the Brigade Maj^r & Acquitted with Honour.

B. O. Adjt. of the Day tomorrow Selden

M^r Jacob Weed the Brigade Commissary being absent on Furlough M^r Israel Weed is appointed to do the Duty of Brigade Commissary in his Absence

Head Quarters Morristown Feby 4 1780

Parole Holland

C Signs { Hannan
Hague

Officers of the Day tomorrow

{ Col. Gimbez
Lt. Col. Haight

Generals Hand & Maxwells Brigades will furnish the Fatigues for the new Orderly Room for tomorrow & next Day.

Two hundred Men from Gen^{ls} Clintons & Sparks Brigades Properly Officered with two Days Provisions To march to Morristown this afternoon. The Commanding Officer will Receive orders in writing at the Adj^r Gen^{ls} Office. By a Gen^l Court Martial Held in Garrison at Philadelphia by order of Brigadier Gen^l Woodford. On the 5th of Jan^y 1780 Col. Nevil President, Thos^s Warren of the Invalid Core was tried for Leaving his Post when Centinel & for Theft Found Guilty of a breach of Section 13th Article the 6th of the Articles of War of the United States of America & Sentenced to Suffer Death.

The Commander in Chief approves the Sentence & orders it to be Executed The Prisoner is to suffer according to the Sentence awarded against him by being Shot to Death on the 10th of Feby Inst^t

Appendix II

307

Head Quarters Morristown Feby 6th 1780

Parole Karmineck C Signs { Kallo
Kalish

Officers of the Day for tomorrow

B. Gen^l Clinton

Col. Spencer

B. Maj. Davidson

A Detachment from the Line with three Days Provision to parade tomorrow morning, under the Command of Maj^r Winder. Attended by a Surgeon from the first Pennsylvania Brigade A Detachment from the Maryland Devision with two Days Provision to March to Morristown this afternoon

Brigade Orders

Adj^t for the Day tomorrow Meigs

Regimental Orders

M^r John Fisher of Major Thayers Comp^y (Agreeable to a Recommendation by Lt Jenkes) is promoted to a Serjeant & to Draw pay as such from the first of Feby Inst Serjeant E. Dexter of the above sd Comp^y is appointed Serjt Major till further Orders. They are to be Respected & Obeyed Accordingly

Head Quarters Feby 7th 1780

Parole Loretto C Signs { L—
Levi

Officers of the Day for tomorrow { B. Gen^l Guest
Lt. Col. Willet
B. Maj^r Carlisle

Hands & Maxwells Brigades will Relieve the Morristown Picquet tomorrow at 1 o Clock.

Head Quarters Morristown Feby 8th 1780

Officers of the Day for tomorrow { Col. Hazen
Lt Col. Ford
B Maj^r Ross

The Officer of the Day having reported that the End of Appointing Reserve Piquets is not answered for want of spare Huts & that the practice is attended with much Fatigue to the Officers & Men. The Gen^l Discontinues them for the present & in Lieu of them Directs that instead of the usual Camp Guards Each Brigade shall til further Orders furnish 1 Sub 2 Serjts 2 Corp^{ls} 1 Drum & 36 Privates Those of Each Division to be Commanded by a Captain from the Division.

Orderly Book

To keep up the duties of the Grand Parade these Guards are to Assemble there at the appointed hour & to pass through the Customary Forms under the Inspection of the Officers of the Day after which they are to March Back to their Respective Brigades for the immediate purposes of Camp Duty. The Captains will have their Duties assigned them by the Officers of the Day & when Relieved are to Repair to the New Orderly Room with Written Reports to be Delivered to the Officers of the Day that these may comprise whatever requires notice, into a Gen^l Report for the Commander in Chief. They will make Duplicate Reports to the Officers Commanding the Divisions to which they belong & each Subaltern will do the same to the Commandant of his Brigade

The Gen^l Expects much Exact[ness] in the Parade Duties & other Duties of the Day.

Every Brigade is to Exert itself to get Guard Huts Erected at proper places & though the State of the Grounds prevents the Digging of Vaults yet some sort of conveniences may Easily be Built which common decency & a regard to the Health of the Men render Indispensible

Headquarters Morristown Feb^y 9th 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow

{ Col. Cortland
 Lt. Col. Mentges
 B. Maj^r from the
 first Pennsylvania
 Brigade

By a Gen^l Court Martial held at the Park of Artillery Jan^y 22 1780 Lt. Col. Stevens president, Dan^l Thorn, Joseph Farborough, & David Slater were tried for striking abusing & threatening the Lives of Lt Wisinfells of the second N. York Reg^t & Ens. Denniston & Acquitted. The Gen^l Disapproves the acquittal The Evidence against the Prisoner in his Opinion Over balances that for them; from a Consideration of the Character of the respective Witnesses & in a case of such a Nature the presumption Ought to have been in favour of the Officers who were Injured—the Prisoners are to be released from Confinement.

Head Quarters Feb^y 10th 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow

{ Col Sherburn
 Lt Col. Huntington

Brigade Maj^r from the 2^d Pensylvania Brigade.

Cap^t Hollingshead of the Jersey Brigade is to attend the

Gen^l Court Martial tomorrow at 10 o'Clock, as a member, in place of Major Piatt, sick.

The Commander in Chief at the Intercession of the Officers of the 3^d Pennsylvania Regiment & for other Weighty Considerations, thinks fit to remit the sentence against W^m Barrot of said Regt. He also thinks fit at the Intercession of Col. Jackson & for similar Reasons to remit the Sentences against Joseph Waterhouse, Amos Rounds, William Straw, John Matthews, James Whitney, W^m Harmon, Pelitiah Harmon, Nathan Milikin, Joseph Milikin, Christian Mires, & Philip Wild of his Regt & these Soldiers are to be Severally released from Confinement.

Joseph Pearce & Nathan Barney of the Same Reg^t are to receive Corporal punishment, agreeable to the Sentences Decreed against them & are to be Released from Confinement

Brigade Orders

Adj^t for the Day tomorrow Meigs

Mr. Eben. Branham is appointed Conductor of Military Stores, to Gen. Starks Brigade & is to be considered as Such—the late Conductor is Discharged.

The Sentences against Jesse Pearce & Nathan Barney of Col. Jacksons Reg^t are to be put in Execution, this Day at Evening Roll call—For this purpose the Brigade will parade at s^d Roll call without A(rms) The Camp Guard will parade on the P[arade]. —— Brigade, at the sa[me]

[Feb.] Charles McLean of the 3^d Pensylvania Regiment. Thomas Herendeen & W^m Potter of Col. Angells Reg^t, John Lewis of Col. Jacksons Reg^t & John M^c Lean & W^m Harper of the 4th New York Reg^t are to suffer agreeable to the sentences decreed against them.¹

Loose leaf—now at end—ruled for Guards, Fatigue Commands and Court Martial, and headed

“Roaster of Duties”

The names appear of the following Captains: Tew., C. Olney, J. Olney, Allen, Hughes, —Humphry, Capt. Lt. Littlefield, & the following lieutenants: Jerould, Waterman, Sayles, Macomber, Jenckes, Waterman, jr., Peckham; and Ensigns, Wheaton, Grene, Masury, Greenman, Pratt Rogers.

¹This page ends the Orderly Books covering the period July, 1779 to February 1780. The next existing book commences with May, 1780.

Orderly Book

V¹Head Quarter, May 2nd 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow Col. Spencer Maj. Torey.

Brig^d Maj 2^d Pensylvanea BrigadeThe Pensylvanea Line Gives the Main g^d and Piquet to-morrow.

the non Commisioned officers and Privats of Col. Sherborns Regiment Who Belong to the State of Massachusetts are for the Present to Join Col. Jackson those Belonging to the State of Rhode Island Col Angell and those Belonging to the State of Conneticut Col. Webbs and they are to be Included in the Muster Rolls and the Pay Rolls of the above Regiments from the first Instant.

Brigade Orders

Adj. of the Day tomorrow from Col Webbs Regiment

The Mustering and Inspecting of the Brigade is Postponed till thursday next

Regimental orders

for Camp Guard to morrow Lt. Macomber

for Police Lt. Wheaton

After Brigade orders

The Non Commisioned officers and Privats of Col. Sherborns Regiment Will Turn In their Camp Equepage to Q. Master Lion of Said Regiment at Troop Beating tomorrow morning and at Nine oClock to join their Respective Regts. agreeable to this Days order—it is Expected that their Barracks Will be Intireley Clean

Head Quarters May 3: 1780

Officers of the Day to morrow } Col. Stuart
} Maj Read

Brig Maj. firsh

The Main & Pequet guards are to be Relieved from Lord Sterlings & the Pensylvanea Divisions

Division Orders

at A Division Court Martial held April 28th Whereof Lt. Col Comdt Wisefield President Ens Joseph Minen² of the Second

¹ This section contains the extracts from a book, from which leaves are lost, in which the earliest date is 2nd May, 1780, and the latest 6th June, 1780.

² Minnel below: possibly McNeil?

New York Regiment was tryed for neglect of Duty When Commanding officer of Camp gd of the New York Brig^d on the first of April and Wilfull Desobedance of orders In not keeping in confiment Isaac Macentire When Col. Corterlin had ordered under guard 3^d for not Confining Seravl Soldiers of his guard Whome he had Lett Stragle from his guard When had Particular ordered their by Col. Cortelin.

the Court having Considered the Charge Produced aganist Ens. Minnil the Evidence and his Defense are of oppinion that the Second & third Charges are not Supported But find him guilty of the first Charge Being a Breech of Articel the fifth Sexion 18th of the Articels of war & Sentance him to be Repremanded In the Division orders:

The Gen^l confirms the Sentance of the court though he would Been much happayer had not Ens. Minnel given gest Room. Censureing the Importance of g^d is so Conspicuously Evident to the Safety of the Camp at the Lest neglect In the officer Which on that Duty as it may be attended with fateal Consequencies Will suerly Admit of No Excuse: it is hoped that this will Prove necesary to Ens. Minel In futer—he is Releced^d from his Arrest

at the Same Court was Tryed Charles William. a Soldier in the forth New York Regt. first for Dersertion 2^d for forgin A Pass to affect the Same.

The Court find him guilty of Boath Charges & Sentance him to Pass the gantlope through the Brig^d twice with a file of Men with Bayonets at his Breast to Regulate his Steps

Also Oliver Russell Soldier in the 3^d New York Regt. was Tryed for Dersertion found guilty & Sentance to Receive one hundred Lashes on his naked Back.

Soldier Joseph Cotis In the fourth New York Regt Was Tryed at the Same Court for Desertion & conseling himself In the Countrey till the time of his Inlistment was expired found guilty & Sentance to Receive one hundred Lashes on his Bair Back and that he Serve as Long in the Regiment as he was Absent from it from the Expiriation of his Foulough Till the Day he was Brought to the Regiment.

the Genl. Approves the Sentance and orders them to be Put In exceution this Eveng at Retreat Beating.

Brig^d orders.

Adj. of the Day tomorrow Hunt
Captain from Col Jacksons Regt
R. Orders
for Camp gd tomorrow Lt Jenks
for Police Ensign Pratt

Orderly Book

Head Quarters May 4th 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Crain
Majr Moore

B Maj Starks Brig^d

Lords Sterlings & the Pennsylvania Division Gives the Main g^d
& Pequet tomorrow A Sergt Corp^l & twelve Privates from Clin-
tons Division for Fatigue to be Sent to the Adj Genl Quarters
tomorrow morning. As Part of the Army was Absent When the
Genl order Relating to the Pay of officers Sent on Command Was
Published the Genl Repeats it

the Little attention paid to the Resolves of Congress 4th of
September 1778 Published in the Genl orders of the 25th of the
Same month and the Number of accounts Exhibited on Certifi-
cate Repugnant to that Resolve and the order Accompanying
it Do Oblige the Commander in Chief to Declair Hensforth no
Warrant Shall be given for Payments of any accompts Perduced
in Consequence of that Resolve unless the officer Applying have
been Detacht by a Spaciell order By himself or Commanding
officer of a Department the Mode of obtaining Such orders Will
be by certificate from the Majr Genl or Brig^{dr} from Whos Brig^d
or Division the officer is to be Sent Spacificying the Nature and
Necessity of the Service to be Perfomd

Brigade orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Rogers

Regimental orders

for Police tomorrow Ens Greenman

Head Quarters After orders

Details for Detachments

Starks Brigd	C	S	S	C	D	F	P
	I	2	4	4	I	2	62

the above Detachment to be Paraded Immeadeatly on the grand
Parade With two Days Provisions if possible their Arms & Packs
Col Crage & Majr Thayer for this Detachment

Regimental orders After orders

for Command Lt Hubbart & Wheaton

Head Quarters May 5th 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Lt Col Comdt Butler
Maj T. Moore

Brigd Majr Hands Brigade

A Serjeant Corp^l & twelve Privates from the pensylvanea Divi-
sion for Fatigue tomorrow at Commissary Keeris—

Division Orders

at the Division Court Martial held by Adjournment from the 28th of April Was Tryed Issac Utter A Soldier of the fifth & Joel Turtel Soldier In the Second New York Regiment found guilty of Desertion and Sentance to Recive one hundred Lashes Each John Green a Soldier in Col Angells Regt Was Tryed and found Guilty of Deserting from the Clothiers Guard and Selling his uniform Coat the Property of the pulick, and Sentance to Receive one Hundred Lashes—Saml Cuttler Phillip Targee Abraham Shippea and Russell handey A Soldier in Col Jacksons Regiment Were Tryed at the Same Court and found guilty of Desertion the Court Sentance Cuttler & Targee to Recive one hundred Lashes Each Shippea on(e) hundred Lashes and to be Picketed ten Minnets and Serve their time in their Regiment from Which they Deserted the Court Also Sentance Russell handey to Recive one hundred Lashes But Recommend him for Pardon

Thomas pendergrass A Soldier in Col Jacksons Regiment was Also Tryed for Desertion and acquitted

the Genl Confirms the Sentances of the Court and orders them Put in Execution this Eveng at Retreat Beating the Corpl Punishment of Russell handey at the Request of the Court is Dispensed with an(d) Thomas Pendergrass is Relived from his Confinement

Brigade Orders

Adjt of the Day tomorrow Hunt
Captain of the Day from Col Jacksons Regt

Regimental orders

for Camp Guard tomorrow Lt Wheaton
for Police Ens Masury

the Regt to Parade this Eving Perscisley at Six oClock When Every man of Duty is to be on the Parade and those that have Drawd over alls if they Do Not Where them to Bring them on the Parade

Head Quarters May the 6: 1780

officers of the Day tomorrow { B Genl hand
{ Lt Col Comdt Hubley

Brigd Majr from Maxwells Brigd.

the Morristown guard and (Small?) Detach^t and Fatigue Parties till Further orders to be Furnished Weekly In Roteation Whilst the third Do hold themselves in Readiness to march on the Shortest Notice With two Day Provisions—
Lord Sterlings and Clintons Division furnishes the guard the Ensuing week

the officer Casultes to be inserted In the Returns in the follow-

Orderly Book

ing order firstly Sick Present 2nd Sick Absent thirdly on Command fourthly on Extra Service fifth on Furlough Sixthly Recruiting Seventhly on the Staff Eightly Prisoner of War ninthly Fourloghs Expired Tenthly In Arrest Eleventhly Vacant the Collam of Rank & file on Extra Service to be inserted Between Column on Comd and Fourlogh—

as the Warm Season is approaching the Commanding (officers) of Regts See that the Sick of their Respective Regiments are Put into huts by themselves and that Proper Windows or openings are made on all their Soldiers huts to Admit Surcilation of fresh air

the Regimental Surgeons to Deliver on the usuel Returns of the Sick on Monday Next to the Director Genl of the flying Hospital and Punctually on Every Monday in futur

Regtl orders

for Main gd tomorrow Capt C Olney & Ens Green

for Camp Guard Ens Masury

for Police Lt Jenks

Head Quarters May 7th 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { B Genl hand
Lt Col Willet

Brigd Majr from 2nd Pensylvanea Brigade

B: O: for Main guard tomorrow Ens Greenman for Police Lt Macomber

Head Quarters May 8th 1780

officers of the Day tomorrow { B Genl Ervine
Lt Col Deheart

Brigd Majr 2nd Pensylvanea Brde

Regimental Orders

for Camp Guard tomorrow Ens Pratt for Police Ens Masury
After Brigd orders

The Sentence of Abraham Shippey of Col Jacksons Regiment Being to be Pecketted an(d) Mentiond in the Division Orders of the 15th Instant is Remitted

Head Quarters 9th May 1780

officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Livingston
Lt Col Smith

Brigd Majr (fish?)

the Jarsey Brigd to be held in Readiness to march with their Baggage on the Shortest Notice

Robert Powers & Samuel Pell Soldiers of the tenth also

Appendix II

315

Job Jestic and Thos Brown of the Seventh Pensylvanea Regiment now under the Sentence of Death for Plundering the house of Mr. Bogart Near Paramus on Representation from their officers that they had Previous to the Commission of the Crime Behaved Like good Soldiers and on the Earnerst Entersition of Mr Bogart in their Behalf His Excellency Commander in Chief is Pleas(ed) to Pardon them.

At a Division genl Court Martial Whereof Lt Col Murray Was President Joseph [Engtell?]¹ & John Ereheart Soldiers in the 11 Pensylvanea Regt was Tryed for attempting to Desert to the Enemy. Plead guilty of Desertion But Denied their Entention of going to the Enemy

the Court are Clearly of Oppinion that they are guilty of the Charge Exhibited against them . . . and Do Sentance them (upwards of two thirds of the Court agreeing their to) to suffer Death the Commander in Chief Confirms the Sentence

Brigd orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Lovall
Captain from Col Angells Regiment

Regimental orders

Captain of the Day tomorrow Allen
for Main guard Lt Jenks & Macomber
for Police Ens Greene

Head Quarters May 10th 1780

officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Johnson
{ Lt Col Robinson

Brigs Maj Starks Brigade
Serjt Corpl & twelve Privates for fatigue

they are to be sent Very early tomorrow morning to Q Masters Inses at Morristown With their arms & three Days Provisions

the Jersey Brigade to move tomorrow morning—Genl Maxwell Will Call at head Quarters for orders

the State of the Roads at Present admitting the march of the men at Ease the order of 8th of February Last Revivd But Instead of Assembling at Nine oClock the guards are to be on the grand Parade at Eight the Troop to Beat at Seven

at the genl Court Martial Where of Col Screve was president on the 22nd inst Maj Church of the fourth Pensylvania Regiment Was Tryed on the Following Charges first for Purchsing mens Pay at an under Value 2nd for Discharging A man fit for Duty and Returning him unfit for Service 3rd for Defrading the united

¹ Engtest?

Orderly Book

States & the Regts in Several Instances Viz 1st Keeping Laborn Bogart a Soldier in Said Regiment Working on his farm A Considerable time and Mustering him on Command 2nd for Keeping James McGee a Soldier in the Same Regt Driving his or his Brothers team and Discharging him from the Regt 3rd Drawing Soldiers Pay by Virtue of orders Which orders the men Declared to Be forged 4th Sending a horse Known to be the Public Property to his farm Which horse Sence has be(en) offered for Sale 5th forceble taking one hundred & ten Dollars from James Danack a Soldier 6^d taking Clothes Sent for the use of the Soldiers out of the Pay Masters Store without his Knowage and appropriating them to his own use

the Court After Ma(t)ure Deliberation are of oppinion that (all) and Each of these are intire un Suported: and that the Procution of Maj Church was Melicious and groundless and thierfore Do Acquit him with honour.

the Commander in Chief Confirms the oppinion of the Court Maj Church is Releas(ed) from his arrest

Brig^d Orders

Adjt of the Day tomorrow Rogers

Mr Christopher Stoaks is appointed to Do the Duty of Commissary for Genl Starks Brigd till further orders

Regimental orders

for Camp guard tomorrow Lt Wheaton

for Police Ens Pratt

Head Quarters May 11th 1780

officers of the Day tomorrow	{	Col Cotland
	{	Lt Col Hay

Brigd Maj from hands Brigade

the Genl Court Martial Whereof Col Shirve was President
is Desolved

Brigd Orders

Adjt of the Day tomorrow Lovall

Regimental Orders

for Camp tomorrow Ens Greene

for Police Ens Greenman

Head Quarters May 12th 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow	{	Col Jacksn
Brigd Maj Alexander	{	Lt Col Montegest

on Monday next the Troops will Begin to Exercise and Continue Every Day fryday and Sundays Accepted in the following

manner at Six oClock A M Each Regiment will Parade and their Rolls will be Cald the Commanding officers taking Particular Care that none of their officers or men are Absent Accept those on guard or other Meteral Duty and ammedeadeatly After the Rolls are Cald Each Regt will begin to Exercise By Companies in the manner Perscribed in the Sixth Chapter of Regulations

Each Company to be Exercise by the Capt or the officer Commanding it and the field officer to Superintend the Whole and See it is Carrid on agreeable to the Regulations

the Paymaster & Q Master having a Right to Command in their Companies in the time of attention must attend the Exercise as often as their Staff Duty will admit.

at five oClock P: M the Regiments will Exercise by Companies in the same manner But without arms

the Commanding Officers of Regiments are to be Answerable that no Waiter or other Persons Shall Absent themselves from the Exercise on any Pertence and the Genl and Inspectors of Brigds Will Visit the Regiments and See that this order is Strictly Obeyd

Every monday Wednesday & Saturday beginin on monday Next the Inspector Genl or in his Absense one of the Inspectors Will Exercise on the Green near morristown two Batalions Detacht from the Lines to Consist of one Colo or Lt Colo one Major Six Captains Seven Lieuts, Eight Ensigns one of which is for the Colours twenty Six Serjeants and Corporals Eight Drums Eight fifes two hundred & fifty six Rank & file

the Troops are to be at the Place of Exercise at Nine Clock A. M

Brigade Orders

Adjt of the Day tomorrow Rogers
Nine Commissioned officers Nine Serjeants Eight Drums & fifes and one hundred Sixty Rank & file to Parade at four this Afternoon to Practice the Exercise and manouvers

Regimental orders

for Camp guard tomorrow Ens Masury
for Police Lt Wheaton

Head Quarters May 13th 1780

officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Angell
 } Maj Thayer

B Maj Second Pensylvanea Brigade

A man acquainted with a management of hides from the Second Pensylvanea Brigid Also one from Starks Brigid to be Sent to the D: Commissary of hides at morristown tomorrow they are

Orderly Book

to Remain with him till the Brigd Which they Belong move from this Place

Brgd Orders

Adjt of the Day tomorrow Lovall Captain from Col Jacksons Regt

A man to be Sent from Col Jacksons Regt to the Deputy Commissary of hides at morristown tomorrow morning agreeable to this Day genl orders

Regimental orders

for main guard tomorrow Ens greenman for Camp guard Ens Pratt for Police Lieut Jenks

Head Quarters May 14, 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow } Col. Stuard
} Maj. Torry

Brigade Maj fish

to Command the manouvering Batalion tomorrow Col Livingston and Johnston Majs Read and T More

A Detachment for a fortnight to Parade tomorrow morning at guard mount with their arms Packs and three Day Provisions and forty Rounds Pr man

Maj Thos Moore Will Take Command of them

The Pensylvanea and Clintons Division to furnish the morristown guard and Detached guards and Fatigue Parties the Ensuing week

Lt W^m Fatman of the tenth Pensylvanea Regiment is appointed P: Master of the Same Vice Ens Bensted Resignd

The Genl Court Martial Whereof B genl hand is President to Assemble tomorrow morning Nine oClock at morristown

A Capt from the first Pensylvanea Brigd to attend the Court Vice a Capt from the Maryland Line

Division Orders

the Members of the Division Court Martial Whereof Lt Col Comdt Wiseinfields is President untill further orders are to Return to their Duty in the Line

Brig^{de} Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Rogers

Regimental Orders

for Police tomorrow Lt Jerauld for manovuering Detachment Captain Humphrey Lts Hubbart & Wheaton

Division orders of the 13 Instant By a Division Genl Court Martial Whereof Lt Col Comdt Wisenfill is President Benj Quackinbush Soldier in the 3^d New York Regiment was Tryed for

Attempting to Desert to the Enemy with his arms and accoutrements found guilty of Attempting to Desert without his arms and accoutrements Being a breach of Articel the first Section Sixth of the Articels of war and Sentance to Run the gantlope through the Brdg twice With fixt Baynets at his Breast to Regulate his Pace the Commanding officer Approves the Sentance and orders it to be (Executed) the 14 Instant at Eving Roll Call at the Same Court Fradrick Speegler Soldier in the Same Regt Was Tryed on the Same Charge and found not guilty

the Commanding officer Approves the Sentance of the Court

Head Quarters May 15 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Craige
 { Maj Talbut

Brigd Majr Starks Brigade

the Genl Court Martial Where of Brigadier Genl hand is Presidt to Assemble at the hut Leatley (Lately) Ocpied by Majr Winder In the Maryland Line Majr Eustice is appointed a member Vice Major Geer Indisposed

Lt James Fairlie of the Second New York Regiment is appointed Aide D' Camp to Maj Genl Barron Stuben and is to be Obayd and Respected accordingly

the Cols and Commanding officers of Regiments in Camp are to attend Wednesday morning next at nine oClock at the Place of Exercise near Morristown

Brigade orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Lovall

Mr Jacob Weed having Returned to Camp Will Resume the Duty of his office as Commissary to the Brdg—

the Drums & fifes of the Brigade In futer Will Practise from Six till Seven oClock in the morning and from five till Six in the Afternoon

Regimental orders

for Main guard tomorrow Lt Jerauld

for Camp guard Lt Jenks

for Police Ens Pratt

Head Quarters Morristown 16 May 80

Officers the day tom

After Brdg orders

A Return to be made tomorrow morning of coulors Espontoons Non Commis^d Officers Swords Drums and Fifes Wanting in the Several Regiments In the Brigade

Orderly Book

Head Quarters May 16th 1780

Officer of the Day tomorrow

Brigdr Genl Ervine

Lt Col Comdt Wisenfels

Brigd Maj Church

to Command the manouvering Batalion tomorrow Cols Cortland & Jackson Lt Cols Robinson & Hay

all officers Absent from the Army Accept on Fourloghs not Expiered Recruiting or on Command are forthwith to Join their Corps the officer Commanding Division Will Pay Particular attention to have this order Executed

The Manouvering Batalion to be formed in the field oppisit Starks Brigade Persisley at nine oClock tomorrow

two Adjts from the Pensylvanea Division to be Added to these Batalions they are to be furnished With A Standard from the Pensylvanea Division and one from Clintons Brigade

Brgd Major from the first Pensylvanea Brigd to attend their formation

Regimental orders

for Main tomorrow Capt Allen and Lt Hubbart

for Police Ens Greenman

for Manouvering Detachment Captain C Olney Ensigns Greene Masury & Pratt

Head Quarters May 17th 1780officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Livingstone
{ Lt Col Com^{dt} Butler

Brigd Major Second Pensylvanea Brigade

Colo Proctor is Appointed Member of the Genl Court martial Vice Col Ogdon Excused on account of his Regiment Being in the Lines

Captain John McGowen is Appointed Paymaster Lt. E Bettey Adj and Lt John Pratt Q Master to the fourth Pensylvanea Regt

Brigade Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Lovall

Captain of the Day from Colo Webbs Regt

Regimental Orders

for Mian Guard tomorrow Lt Wheaton

for Police Ens Masury

Head Quarters May 18th: 1780Officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Johnston
{ Lt Col Com^{dt} Hubley

B: Major Second Pensylvanea Brigade

Appendix II

321

at A Division Genl Court Martial May 10th: 1780

Lt Col Comdt Weseinfalls President Mathew Bell Soldier In the Second & James handley Soldier in the fourth New York Regt Were Tryed for Attempting to Desert to the Enemy With their Arms and accotermets Also Lancaster Lighthall Soldier in the third New York Regiment Was Tryed at the Same Court for Attempting to Desert to the Enemy With the Arms and accotermets of Another Soldier the Court are of oppinion that the Charge Against Bell and handley are fully Supported and that they are guilty of Articel first Sextion Sixth of the Articels of war

they are further Oppinon that the Charge Against Lighthall is Suported Except his taking the Arms and Accoterments of another Soldier

and that he guilty of a Breech of the Articels and Section aforesaid and Do Sentance them all three to Be Shott (upwards of two thirds of the Court Agreeing theiro)

His Excellency the Commander in Chief Approves the Sentance

Briga^d orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Rogers

Nine Commissioned officers Nine Serjeants Eight Drums & fifes one hundred and Sixty R & file to Parade at four oClock this Afternoon to Practice the Exercise and Manouvers

A Corporal and three men for Fatigue to Parade tomorrow Morning at guard mounting for the Perpose of Repairing the guard house—the officers of the guard is Disered to overse the Party

Regimental orders—for Manouvering Detachment at four oClock this Afternoon Captain Allen Lieuts Parish & Jenks and Hubbort and En^s Greenman

for Camp Guard tomorrow En^s Green

for Police Lt Hubbort

Head Quarters May 19th: 1780

John Smith of Capt Hughes Company is promoted to a Corporal to Be Respected Accordingly he will Join Lt Col Olneys Company and a man transferrd from his to Capt hughes Company in Lew of Smith

A No of Recrutes having Lataly Joined the Regiment makes it Necessery their shall be A Drill Eastablished all New Recrutes as acquainted with the Exercise and Such as may be on guard In Each Company to be formed In a Squad by themselvs and to be Exercised the hours Appointed in Gen^l orders by Corp^l John Smith under the Inspection of the officers of the Police

After Regimental Orders for Manouvering Detachment

Orderly Book

Captain Humphrey Vice Capt Allen onable to Attend and
En^s Green Vice Lt hubbort Absent

Head Quarters May 19th: 80

Officer of the Day tomorrow { Col. Courtland
Lt Col Willet

B. Maj Church

Colos Angell and Stuard Lt Col Huntington and Maj Torry
to Command the Manouvering Batalions they are to be formed
to morrow Morning at Six oClock Percisly

Briga^d Maj from the Second Pensylvania Brigade to Attend
the formation &c

Clinton and Hands Briga^d Each gives A Adj and Colours
as before

Brigade Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Lovall

Provision Not having timely arrived Which hindred the Troops
from Being Regularly Supplied The Gen^l orders A Jill of Rum
Deliverd to Each Non Commissioned officer and Soldier

Manouvering Detachment

C	S	S	C	D	F	P	
A	I	3		3	I	I	36
W	I			3	I	I	36
J	I	I		4	I	I	38
				2	5	3	88

Regimental Orders

for Camp Guard tomorrow Ens Masury

for Police Lt Jenks

for manouvering Detachment Captain Allen Lt hubbort &
Wheaton and Ens Pratt

Head Quarters May:20: 80

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Col^o Gansevoort
Lt Col Hay

B: Major Clintons Brigade

Details Starks Brigade

C	S	S	C	D	F	P
O	I	3	3	I	I	35

Brigade Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Rogers

Regimental orders

For Main Guard tomorrow Ens Greenman

for Camp Guard Ens Pratt for Police Lt Jeruld

Appendix II

323

Head Quarters May 21 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Jackson
{ Lt Col Cill

Brigade Major Starks Brigade

To Provent in futur an Inconvencies and Irregularity Which the Gen^l Informed has Been happened of Late Insending Reports of the (Morristown) Guards to their Brigades Who Did Not Come Properly Supplied with Provisions In order to Obtain Certificates from their Commissarys of their having Provisions Due them that they Might be furnished in Town

The Brigade Maj^s are (Previous to there men going on the Grand Parade) to Examine the State of their Provisions and if they are Not Supplied they are to Send the Necessary Certificates from the Brig^d Commissary by the Adj of the Day Who will Deliver them to the officer of the Guard In Which the men are and will be Voucher of the Commissary in Town for Charging Respective Brig^d With the Issues made In Consquence

Col Crage Lt Col Wissinfall Maj C Steward and Talbord to Command the Manouvering Batalions Adj from first Pennsylvania and Stark's Brig^d and Colours as before. The Batalion is to Parade at Six oClock tomorrow morning Maj Church to Attend their formation &c

The Pennsylvania Connecticut Divisions and Hands Brigade gives the Morristown Guards and fatigues the Insuen week.

A Gen^l Court Martial of the Line to Assemble tomorrow Morning at Nine oClock at the hut Lately occpied by Maj Windon for the Trayl of Such Prisoners as Shall Come before them Col Gansevort to Perside. Lt Col Willet Maj I more A Capt and one Subaltern from the Pennsylvania Division two Capt and one Subaltern from the Connecticut Division A Capt and Sub from hands Brig^d A Capt and Sub from Clintons and one Sub from Starks^s to Attend as Members

Two orderly Serg^s from Connecticut Division to wait on the Court

Brigade Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Lovall

Captain of the Day from Col Angells Regiment a Subaltern from Col Angell for Gen^l Court Martial Adj Rogers to Attend the Manouvering Batalion

Regimental Orders

Captain of the Day tomorrow Humphry
for Gen^l Court Martial Wheaton

for Police Ens Masury

for Manouvering Detachment Capt C Olney Lt Jeruald and Jenks

Orderly Book

Head Quarters May 22:1780

Parole	Csign
Officers of the Day tomorrow	{ Col. Angell Lt Col Huntington
B. Major first Connecticut Brigade	

Adj of the Day tomorrow	B Orders
	Rogers

Regimental Orders	
for Camp Guard tomorrow	Lt Jeruld
for Police	Ens Green

[NOTE.—One of the details supplied by the brigade was a sergeant and six privates for "Baron Steuben's Guard."]

Head Quarters May 23; 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow	{ Col Meigs Lt Col ^o Murrey
Brigade	Major 2d Pennsylvania Brigade

Lt Col Com^{dt} Butler and Hubbey Majors Trestcot and Parr to Command the Manouvering Battalions two Adjts from the Connecticut Division Colours as before Brigade Maj from Clintons Briga^d to Attend the formation of the Manouvering Battalion tomorrow Morning six oClock A Sub two Sergts and Twenty men for Fatigue they will be at the Half Moon Tavern to-Morrow morning at nine oClock and Receive Instructions from Mr Shoot Deputy Q M Gen^l

Brigade Orders	
Adj of the Day tomorrow	Lovell
[NOTE.—The details called for 60 privates for Brigade Guard, six for the Baron's Guard, and 6 for Fatigue at Morristown, with officers and non-commissioned officers, also 64 men with officers, etc., for the manœuvreing detachment.]	
Regimental Orders	
For Police	Lt Hubbart
for Manouvering Detachmant	Ens Masury and Greenman

Quarters Morristown May 24th:1780

Regimental Orders	
-------------------	--

A Regimental Court Martial to Assemble this Morning at Eleven oClock as by order of Col Angell for the Troyel of Such Prisoners as Shall Come before them

Appendix II

325

Capt Allen to Preside Lts Jerauld Macomber Jenks and Peckham
Members

Head Quarters May 24th; 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Brigider Gen^l Huntington
Maj Torey
Brigade Maj first Pennsylvania Brigade

Tomorrow Each Regt must make a Return of Arms and accoterm-
ments Wanting

No arms to be deliverd Waggoners Waiters of the Gen^l field
and Staff officers But only to those that are to Appear in Action
Eight Musquets without Bayonets to be Deliverd Each Regi-
ment for the Camp Coullorman those returns must be signed
by the Colo or officers Commanding Battalions and Csigned by
the Regimental Q Master and to be Delivered to the Brigad^d In-
spectors Who are to Digest them into the Brigade Returns and
Sign it they then are to be Deliverd the Brig^d Conductors Who
are to Persent them to the Genl of Artillery for an order for
their Delivery on the field Commissary After the Brigade Con-
ductor shall have Received the Stores from the field Commissary
he is to Deliver them to the Regimental QMaster According to
the Returns Who are to Recept to the Conductors for them

Previous to the Reseption of the new Arms and accoterm-
ents in Porsesion of Regt or Brig^d Conductors must be Delivered to
the field Commissary of Military Stores and the Colonels and
Commanding officers of Battalions are to be Responsible that
all Damaged and Spair Arms and Accouterments be Deliverd In
and Arms and accouterments to be Deliverd to the men only.

At a Brigade Genl Court Martial Whereof Maj Read was
President the 13th Instant Corporal Thomas Clerke of the fourth
and Thos Calvin of the Eleventh Pennsylvania Regiment Ware
Tryed for attempting to Desert to the Enemy With their Arms

The Court are of Oppinion that they are guilty of the Breech
of the first Article Sixth Section of the Articles of War more than
two thirds of the Court Agreeing and Sentance them to Suffer
Death.

The Commander In Chief Approves the Sentence

Division Orders

The Division Gen^l Court Martial Whereof Lt Col Com^{dt}
Wissenfall was President is Disolved

B: Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Rogers
a Brigad Gen^l Court Martial to set tomorrow Morning Nine

Orderly Book

oClock at the Presidents Quarters for the Tryel of Such Prisoners as may be Brought Before them Maj Trestcot will Preside

Details

[Three captains, nine subalterns for Court Martial; 70 men and officer for brigade guard.]

Regimental Orders

For Camp Guard tomorrow Lieut Jenck
 for Police Lieut Peckham
 for Briga^d Gen^l Court Martial Captains Cogshall Olney &
 Allen Ensigns Greene Masury Greenman and Pratt Lieuts
 Jerauld and Macomber

Head Quarters May 25th 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow B: Gen Starks
 Maj C Stuart

Brigade Maj 2d Pennsylvania Brig^d

Crimnals under the Sentance of Death are to be Executed to-morrow Morning at Eleven oClock Near the Grand Parade fifty men Properley Officered from Each Brigade to Attend The Camp Cullerman from the Connecticut Pennsylvania and York Line under the Direction of A Sergt from Each are to Dege their Graves this Afternoon

Brigade Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Meigs
 Captain of the Division Guard from Col Jacksons Regt

Details

B. Guard					Parade Nine oClock					
	S	S	C	D	P	C	S	S	C	P
A	I	2		22		I	I	I	I	17
W	I	I	2		II			I	I	3
J	I	2	I	27		I	I	I	I	21
	I	3	6	I	60		I	2	3	3
										47

Regimental Orders

The Men Who are to attend at the Execution of the Cremnals to Morrow to be Dresed in uniform and as Clean as Possible The Regimental Court Martial Whereof Captain Allen as President is Desolved

A Regimental Court Martial Whereof Capt Allen was resident the 24 Instant Daniel Ellis of Capt Humpherys Company

Was Tryed for Bouying A Pair of Shoes of A Soldier in Col Jacksons Regiment Contrary to orders and without Permision of his officers the prisoner Plead Guilty to the Charge but in his Defence Saith that the Soldier Deliverd them to Be his own property and that he should not Come under any Blame for Purching them the Court upon Meture Deliberration Do Sentance the Prisoner to be Repermanded.

Regimental Orders

The Colonel Confirms the Precedings of the Court and at the same time is astonished that Ellis should have the Daring Presumption to Purchas Clothing of the Soldiers of any C'md Without their having Certificate from the Commanding officer of the Corps which they Belong that it is thier own Property and the acquaning the Captain or Commanding officer of the Company Shall he be found guilty of such a Breech of orders Infuter he may Exspect to be Severly Punished as no Plea of Ignorance will Be admited of heere After Ellis is Relece from his Confinment

For Police tomorrow Lieut Hubbart
for the Detachment to attend at the Execution of the Criminals Lieut Peckham

Head Quarters May 26th; 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow Brig^{dr} Gen^l Ervine
Major Read

Briga^d Maj Church

for Manoeuvering Col^s Levingstone & Johnston Lts Cols Sumner and Hay

Adjts from the 2d Pennsylvania and hands Brigade. Colours as usual Brigade Maj Bradford to attend formation

four Battalions to Manoeuvrer Next Monday on the Common Near Col (Abites?) Manoeuvering officers Col^s Coartland Gansoveart Jackson and Angell Lieuts Willet Robinson and Montegust and Huntington they are to be formed on the ground at Seven oClock Presisly Eight Peaces of Artillery are to be annexed to these battalions the Manouevering Officers for the Battalion and the officers that are to Command the artillery are to attend the exercise tomorrow Morning. Clintons Starks and the Connecticut Brigades Each gives a Adjt for the Battalions Colurs from the first Pennsylvania Clintons and Starks and the Second Connecticut Brigade.

the Court Martials are to adjourn over till Next Tuesday and the Officers Composeing them to have the Previledges of Joining the Battalions if Next for Manoeuvering Duty.

Orderly Book

A Trusty Corporal from Starks Brigade and a Trusty Soldier from each other Brigades to Parade tomorrow on the Grand Parade with their arms Pcks and Blankets and thence to be Sent to Commissary Gambles they will Remain on this Duty Untill their Regiments move from this Ground.

the Guards the Same as this Day

Brigade Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Lovell

at A Brigade Gen^l Court Martial held in Camp 25th of May By order of Col Com^{dt} Jackson was Tryed John De Armor A Soldier in Col Angell Regt Charged with grossily abausing Katherine Slover an Inhabitant of Morristown and threatening to sett hur house on fire the Court after Due Deliberation and Considering the Evidence are fully of opinion that he is guilty of a Breach of Article 5 Section the 18 of the Articles of war and Do Sentence him to Receive one hundred stripes on his Naked Back

Col Commandant Jackson Approves the Sentance and orders it Put in Execution at the head of the Brigade this Eving at Retreat Beating

the Court Martial of Which Maj Trestcot is Desolved

Regimental Orders

for Camp guard tomorrow Lieut Peckham

for Police Lt Jencks

for Manoevrинг Capt Allen Ensigns Greene and Pratt

Head Quarters May 27th 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Stuart
{ Maj Levenworth

Brigade Maj from Clintons Brigade

A Corp^l and Six Privates from the first Pensylvania Brigade with two Days Provisions and their arms to be Sent tomorrow Morning at 7 oClock to Gen^l Greenes Quarters at Morristown they will Receive their orders from him

Details for Manoeuvering on Monday

Starks Brigade 2 C 7 S 10 Nco 8 DF 95 P.

Brigade Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Rogers

Regimental Orders

for Camp Guard tomorrow Lt Hubbart

for Police Lt Macomber

Appendix II

329

Head Quarters May 28th:1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Hubley
 { Maj I More

Brigade Maj from Starks Brigade

the Pennsylvania Division Hands and Starks Brigades gives the morristown guards and Fatigues this week.

a Detachment from the Line to Parade tomorrow at guard Mounting with three Days Provisions Blanket and forty Rounds Per man Major Talbert to take Command of them

A Surgeon or Mate from Starks Brigade to join the Detach-
ment.

the Manoeuvering Battalions Instead Parading on the ground at Seven oClock as Mentioned on the 26 Instant are to be formed in the Road the Rear of the QMaster Genl Persesley at five oClock tomorrow Morning When they will Receive Blank Cartridges.

Major Alexander to attend their formation.

Sixteen of (Marichansice?) Light Draggons with a Com-
missioned Officer to Attend at the same time and Place.

Col Stuart and Crage are to Command two of the Manoeuver-
ing Battalions tomorrow Vice Col^s Cortland and Gansevort
and Lieut Col Murrey Vice Lt Col Willet obliged to be absent.

Second Pensylvanea Brigade to furnish a Regimental Stan-
dard Vice Clintons.

at A Genl Court Martial Whereof Col Ellot was President held at Newport the first Instant Windsor fry Soldier of Col Greenes Regt Was Tryd for Entering the Commissary Store Steeling from thence a Quantay of Beef Candales and Rum also Braking Open two Windmills and Steeling a Quantay of Me'll. Plead guilty the Court having Meturely Considered the heanirs of his Present Crimes togeather with his former bad Conduct are Unamineausly of opinion that he Suffer Death. the Com-
mander In Chief confirms the Sentance and orders it to be Put in Execution at Such time and Place as Col Greene shall think Proper.

Barron Stuben will be at Gen^l hands Quarters at five oClock this Afternoon Where he Requests the attendance of the field officers who are for the Manoeuvering Detachment with the Adjuments of the Same.

Col harmer Majors Church fish & Alexander will Pleas also to attend at the same time and Place

all the Drums and fifes Major of the army Attend Likewise.

The men for Manoeuvering to Picked that there may not be as many boys as Last Exercise

NB the men are also to have Bayonets

By order of Maj Gen^l Stuben

Orderly Book

Brigade Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Meigs

Adj Lovall to Attend the Manoeuvering Battilions tomorrow
A Surgeon from Col Webbs Regt for Detachment

Regimental Orders

for Detachment tomorrow Capt C Olney and Lt Jeruald

for Camp guard Ens Greene

for Police Ens Pratt

for Manoeuvering Detachment Capt Humphrey Lts M-
comber Jenk and Peckham Ensigns Masury and Greenman.
NB Lt Jenks for Detachment Cald for After the Details was
given out Ens Pratt for Manoeuvering No officer for Police.

HeadQuarters May 29th:1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Lt Col Com^dt Sherman
{ Maj Chapman

Brigade Major first Connecticut Brigade

Col^o Meig is Appointed President of the Gen^l Court Martial
Vice Col Gansevoort and Lt Col Sumner Vice Lt Col Willet a
Captain from Hands Brigade and A Sub from the Second Pennsylvania
Vice a Captain & a Sub from the Second Pensylvania
Vice a Captain & a Sub from Clintons Brig^d.

the Court Martial of Which Col Meigs is President is to
Assemble at Lt Col Willits hut in the York Line tomorrow
Morning Nine oClock

The Gen^l Orders will be Issued at Col Cortlands Hut

Regimental Surgeons are Requested to Send after Such
Medicines as they may Want to Supply their Chests to the
Apothecary Shoop at Veal Town Wheir they will be furnished
as far as the state of the Store will admit

A Particular Return of all Publick Insterments and their
Condition to be made as Soon as Possible to the Surgeon Gen^l
of the Army

Details for Morristown

Starks Brigade I S 3 S 3 C 1 D 1 F 32 P

Brigade Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Lovell

Regimental Orders

for Morristown Guard tomorrow Ens Masury

for Police Ens Pratt

Head Quarters May 30th: 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Levingstone
 { Maj Trestcot

Brigade Maj 2d Connecticut Brigade

for Manoeuvering tomorrow Morning Six oClock Lt Col^o
Com^{dt} Butler and Hubbley Majs Tory & Stuart Maj of Brig^d
from the first Connecticut to attend the formation of the Battalion
Hands & Starks Brig^{ds} the Adjdt Colours from the Second Connecticut and Starks.

the Pennsylvania Division gives a Capt and Six men as A Horse Guard at Mr Churches to be Relevd Weekly

the Connecticut Division gives a Capt & four men as A Guard for the QM Gen^l they are to be Releved Every two Days.

the Commander In Chief is Pleas to order a Retrial of all Prisoners under Confinment accept Prisoners of War and those of the first Connecticut Brigade Confind for Mutineay.

OBryan Late Provost Martial to Return to his Duty in the Reg^t from Whence he was taken.

at a Genl Court Martial of the Line the 23 Instant^t Col Gansevoort Presid^{dt} Mr Alexander Church Supertendant of Continental horses Was Tryed first for Supporting at Publick Expense Six horses or more Which he Clamd as Privat Prperty

Secondly for a Proprapreateing to his own use a Waggon and four horses Which he Clamd as his own and for Receving Publick hire for the Same and Publick Forage for the horses

thardly for Permiting two men Employd under him to Purch^r Poor horses In the Continental yard and feeding them on Publick Forage

4: for taking a horse out of the Continental yard at his own Estermination or Price of thirty three Dollars which was Worth a thousand and for feading him on Publick Forage.

the Court are of opinion that the Charges are Not Supported and Do theirfore fully acquit Mr Church

the Commander In Chief Conforms the Opinion of the Court Mr Church is Relevd from his arrest

Brigade Orders

Adjt of the Day tomorrow Rogers
Adj to attend the Manoeuvering Meigs

Regimental Orders

for Morristown Guard tommorrow Capt Humphery
for Camp Guard Ens Greenman
for Police Ens Greene
for Manoeuvering Detachment Lieuts Macomber Peckham and Hubbart

Orderly Book

Headquarters May 31st:1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Johnston
 Major Parr
 Brigade Major 1st Pennsylvania Brigade

Brigade Orders

Adjt of the Day tomorrow Meigs
 Captain of the Day tomorrow from Colo Angell Regiment.

Regimental Orders

for Morristown Guard tomorrow Ens Pratt
 for Police Lieut Hubbort
 Captain of the Day Allen
 the Captain or Commanding officer will in futer Evry Sataday Morning Inspect their mens Dress Necessary arms accoterments and ammunition Agreeable to the Instructions of the 20 Chapter of the Regulations for Which Purpose the Regiment will Parade at five oClock in the Morning When it is Expected Every man that is able & Waiters and Camp Cullormen Not Excepted Will attend with Every Article of Clothing and Necessaries in their Presession.

if the officers of Police Examen the huts shold find any that is Dirty and Not in so good order as they ort to be he must Emmeadeatly Report them to the Commanding officer of the Company that may be Quartred in them Who will Call the Non^d officers under who Care these Squads may be to a Strict account for Neglect of Duty In Not Complying with the Regimental order of the first of march Last.

James Hopkins of Captain Wm Humpherys Company Who was Reduced from a Sergt to a Privat Sentinel By the judgement of a Regimental Court Marteal the Sixth of Last April is at the Request of his Captain & for his good Behaviour Sence Restored to his former Rank and it is to be hoped he will Still Endeavour to Retrive his Charcter or Such Indulgence as this will Never be Extended to him upon a futer Occation of the kind

Head Quarters June 1st:1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Col^o Jackson
 Major Clist

Brig^d Major Venleer

A Trustey Serjeant and Corporal and Nine Men from Starks Brigade with their arms Blanketts and three Days Provision to be sent to the Adj Gen^l Quarters at Eight oClock tomorrow Morning to guard Prisoners of War to Philadelphia

at the Genl Court Martial of the Line Whereof Col^o Ganse-

voort was President the 25 ult^o Lieut Hunt of the 4 New York Regiment Was Tryed for Marching the old Main Guard the 11th of May Last to Camp in A Disorderly manner and Permitting the Men to Straggle Contraray to the orders of the Army.

the Court are of opinion that Lt Hunt is guilty of the Charge that Exhibited against him being a Breech of that Part of the third Article of 22 Chapter of the Regulations for the order and Dispilne of the Troops which Respects marching the old Guard to Camp and Do Sentance him to be Repremanded In Gen^l orders.

The Commander In Chief Confirms the opinion of the Court
the Conduct of Lieut Hunt was highly unmilitary and Blameable two frequent Instances a Curr of Similiray Iregularety and they are at all times In excusible Lt Hunt is Relevd from his arrest

B Orders

Adjt of the Day tomorrow Lovall

Captain of the Day to Morrow from Col Jackson Regt

Regimental orders

for Camp Guard tomorrow Lt Peckham
Police Ens Pratt

Head Quarters June 2d; 1780

officers of the Day tomorrow { Col^o Angell
Brigade Maj Church { Maj Edwards

for Manoeuvering Col^o Levingston Lt Col^o Com^d Sherman
Major Read and Levingworth Adj and Colours from the first
Pennsylvania and Connecticut Brigades the Manoeuvering Battalions to Parade Near the half Moon Tarvorn at 6 oClock
tomorrow Morning Brigade Major 2d Connecticut Brig to Attend
the formation

Brigade orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Rogers

Captain of the Day from Col Angells Regiment

the Brig^d will be Mustered After noon at two oClock it is
Expected the Arms &c will Be in the Best order the men Neat
and Clean Col^o Angells Regiment will be on the Parade Prosesely
at two oClock

Regimental Orders

Captain of the Day tomorrow Humphery

for Manoeuvering Ensigns Greene Masury and Greenman
NB Ens Greene Cal^d for Detachments Lieut Macomber for
Manoeuvering

Orderly Book

Head Quarters June 3^d:1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Brigadier Genl Huntington
 { Lieut Col^o Haight

Brig^d Major Bradford

Brigade Return Regimentally Disgested of all their Espon-toons Wanting In the Several Regiments to be made ToMorrow Morning at orderly time

Brigade Orders

Adj^t of the Day tomorrow MeigsCaptain of the Day from Col^o Webbs Regiment

Regimental Orders

For Main Guard Tomorrow Lieut Hubbard

for Camp Guard Ens Masury

for Police Ens Greenman

HeadQuarters June 4th; 1780

officers of the Day tomorrow { Brigadier Gen^l Starks
 { Lieut Col^o Hay

Brigade Maj 1st Connecticut Brig^d

The Connecticut Line to be Inspected Tomorrow by the Inspector Gen^l

The Inspection to be—at Six oClock tomorrow Morning

Brigade orders

Adj^t of the Day tomorrow Lovell

Captain of the Day from Col Angells Regiments

Regimental orders

Captain of the Day tomorrow Stephen Olney

For Morristown Guard Ens Greenman

for Camp Guard Ens Pratt

for Police Lieut Peckham

Head Quarters June 5th; 1780

Officers of the Day tomorrow { Brig^{dr} Gen^l Ervine
 { Liuet Col^o Scill

Brig^d Maj 2d Connecticut Brig^d

For Manoeuvering Jackson and (Humton?) Majors Chaman and Trestcot

Colours from the first and 2d Pensylvania Brigades the Second Pensylvania and Hands gives the Adj^{ts} Brigade Maj^r Second Pensylvania Briga^d to attend the formation of the Battalions Which are to Parade at the usell Place tomorrow morning at Six oClock Second Pensylvania, hands and Starks Brigades gives the Morristown Guard the Insuing week.

Six Camp Cullermen from hands Brigade under the care of a Corplo to be Sent to morristown tomorrow Morning at 7 oClock Mr Shoot will give them Deretions

Regimental orders

for Camp Guard tomorrow Lt Macomber

for Police Ens Masury

for Manoeuvering Captain Allen Lieuts Sayles Peckham and Hubbart.

at A Regimental Court Martial Whierof Capt Tew was President Joseph Wheeler Was Tryed for Insulting Behaviour to Mr Jacob Weed the Prisoner Pleads guilty to the Charge The Court thierfore Do Sentance him to Receve thirty Lashes on his Naked Back But as Appear to be Very Penitent and Sorry for his Conduct towards Mr Weed the Court Do Recommend him to the Col^o for Pardon.

Thomas Charles of Col^o Angell Company Was Tryed at the Same Court for getting Drunk after being Regulery Warn^d for Duty the Prisoner Pleads guilty to the Charge But in Excuse for his Conduct Saith he Drank one gill of Rum Which Apperataed More Stronger on him than usell as he had Not Drunk any Liquer in a Long time.

the Court are of Appinion that he Receve thirty Lashes on his Naked Back But In Consideration of his former good Conduct Do Recommend a Suspenation of the Sentance During his good Behaviour. the Col^o Confirms the Sentance of the Court Pardons Wheeler and Suspends the Sentance against Charles During thier good behaviour and orders them boath Relesed from thier Confiment.

The Court Whierof Capt Tew was President is Desolved

Head Quarters June 6th:1780

officers of the Day tomorrow { Col Butler
Major Torey

Brig^d Major Alexander

A Sub from hands Brigade to Releve the Sub from Clintons Now Superintending the Hospitel at Pluckimin he is to Receve Instructions from the officer that he Releves.

Six Camp Cullermen from Starks Brigade und the Command of A Corp^l to be Sent to Commissaryes Caine Quarters Early tomorrow Morning.

Brigade Orders

Adj of the Day tomorrow Meigs

[Three sheets are apparently torn away between this, the last entry in the book, and the cover.]

APPENDIX III

OFFICER PERSONNEL OF THE RHODE ISLAND LINE

[Copy of an enclosure in a letter of Gov. Cooke, dated Providence, Nov. 6, 1776, printed in R. I. Col. Rec., Vol. 8, pp. 54-5.]

State of Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations

In General Assembly. October Sessions A. D. 1776.—

Both Houses being resolved into a Grand-Committee made
Choice of the following Gentlemen as Officers in the two Battal-
ions or Regiments to be raised by this State agreeable to requisition
of Congress

I. BATTALION

James Mitchel Varnum Esq Colonel. Adam Comstock Esq
Lieut Col^o Henry Sherburne Esq Major.

Captains

Ebenezer Flagg. Silas Talbut. Thomas Cole, John S. Dexter. Simeon Martin. Jonathan Wallen.

Ist: Lieutenants:

Joseph Arnold. William Belcher. Timothy Lock. Samuel Bissell. Wilson Rawson. William Potter. Handy. Thomas Noves

2^d Lieutenants.

Ichabod Prentice, John Chapman. John Remington.

Ensigns

Zephaniah Bowen

Staff Officers

Clarke Brown Quarter Master. Jonathan J. Hazard. paymaster.

2^d BATTALION.

Daniel Hitchcock Esq Colonel. Israel Angel Esq Lieut Col.
Christopher Smith Esq Major

Captains.

Jeremiah Olney, William Tew. Coggeshal Olney. Ephraim Bowen. William Bradford. John Carr. Abimelech Riggs—

1st Lieutenants

Stephen Olney. William Allen. William Littlefield. Gilbert Grano. Joseph Whitmarsh. Daniel Peirce. Amos Crandell. Micah Moulton.

2 Lieutenants

Thomas Hughes. Duty Jerrald.

Ensigns

Ebenezer West. Holliman Potter. Thomas Waterman.
Oliver Jencks. Richard Hunniwell.

Staff-Officers

Cyprian Sterry Quarter Master. Charles Holden Pay-Master.

A true copy

Witness HENRY WARD Secry.

A RETURN¹ OF THE VACANCIES IN GENERAL GREENE'S BRIGADE TOGETHER WITH THE NAMES OF THE FIELD, COMMISSIONED AND STAFF OFFICERS IN THE SEVERAL REGIMENTS AND COMPANIES, THEIR NUMBERS, AND NAMES OF THEM
RECOMMENDED TO SAID VACANCIES
Prospect Hill Sept 19th 1775

CAPTAINS	LIEUTENANTS	ENSIGNS	Recommended for Captains	Recommended for Lieutenants	Recommended for Ensigns	Ser-jeants porals	Ser-jeants porals	Private
Thos Holdon Samuel Ward Archib. Crary Edmund Johnson Ethan Clarke Christ Smith James Gardner Joseph Halloway	Jos Barton Elijah Lewis John S. Dexter Josiah Gibbs Thos Cole Thos Sweet Thos Bissell Oliver Clarke Nathl Hawkins	Ephraim Weedon John Holdon Jere Herredon Timothy Lock Sam'l Bissell Joseph Babcock Wm Potter	Jos Arnold	Micah Whitmarsh Daniel Pearce Joseph Whitmarsh Isaac Johnson	Micah Whitmarsh Daniel Pearce Joseph Whitmarsh Isaac Johnson	3	3	46
				Oliver Clarke Nathl Hawkins	Ephraim Weedon John Holdon Amos Crandle Asa Miner	3	3	41
						3	3	50
						2	2	50
						2	1	18
						3	2	16
						3	2	32
						3	2	44
						3	2	37
						3	2	36
8	9	7	3	4	6	28	26	19
								370

¹ The returns herewith printed are copied from the *Publications of the R. I. Hist. Soc.*, Vols. 2 and 3.

A RETURN OF THE VACANCIES IN GENERAL GREENE's BRIGADE, ETC.—CONTINUED.

14th REGIMENT FOOT

CAPTAINS	LIEUTENANTS	ENSIGNS	Recommended for Captains	Recommended for Lieutenants	Recommended for Ensigns	Sergt jeants	Cors porals	Pr vates
	Coggeshall Olney Amos Jenckes Ephraim Bowen David Richmond David Dexter Jona Smith Abram Tourtellott John Spurr Reuben Sprague Artemas Fenner	Stephen Olney Nehemiah Field Cyprian Sterry Sam Black Wm Humphrey Nehemiah Angell Benj: Hoppen William Potter William Allen Joseph Harris	Coggeshall Olney Stephen Olney Bela Whipple Christo Hopkins	Bela Whipple Stephen Olney Wm Humphrey	Bela Whipple Stephen Olney Christo Hopkins	3 3 3 3 3 3 3 3 3 3	3 3 4 3 3 3 3 3 3 3	2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2
8	10	9	2	2	2	29	29	19
					395			

A RETURN OF THE VACANCIES IN GENERAL GREENE'S BRIGADE, ETC.—CONTINUED.

Appendix III

341

The two pages which follow are endorsed on the back.

"Colonel Varnum would have been recommended for a Colonel of one of the Regiments but he refuses to serve."

"Recommended from the different Regiments the within Arrangement for constituting the two Rhode Island Regiments upon the new Establishment."

"Included in this Arrangement the following Officers now prisoners of War—Lt^t Colo Christopher Greene Capt Samuel Ward—Cap^t John Topham—Capt Simeon Thayer—Lt James Webb—Lt Will^m Humphreys and Ensign Edward Slocum."

"N.B. It is not meant that the within Arrangement shall determine the Rank of the Captains and Subaltern Officers."

[Endorsed] Recomd of Officers

Transmitted
Gov^r COOKE
11, 12 & 13 Octr

RETURN OF OFFICERS RECOMMENDED FOR THE NEW ESTABLISHMENT, *i. e.*, FOR THE YEAR 1777

FIELD OFFICERS, RECOMMEND ^D		
DANIEL HITCHCOCK, Colonel. ISRAEL ANGELL, Lt ^t Colonel. CHRISTOPHER SMITH, Major.		

OFFICERS IN SERVICE RECOMMENDED

<i>Captains</i>	<i>1st Lieut^{en}ts</i>	<i>2^d Lieut^{en}s</i>	<i>Ensigns</i>
Jerem ^h Olney William Tew Coggeshall Olney Ephraim Bowen Simeon Thayer Will ^m Bradford Carr Riggs	Stephen Olney William Allen Will ^m Littlefield Grant Joseph Whitmarsh Daniel Peirce Amos Crandall Micah Moulton	Thomas Hughs James Webb W ^m Humphrey Duty Jerrald	Eben ^r West Holiman Potter Thos Waterman Oliver Jencks Rich ^d Hunnewell

STAFF OFFICERS RECOMMENDED

CYPEAN STERRY Q ^r Master Chaplain Adjutant Surgeon Mate
--

Roster

FIELD OFFICERS RECOMMENDED			
CHRISTOPHER GREENE Colonel ADAM COMSTOCK Lt HENRY SHURBURNE Major			
Captains	1 st Lieuts	2 ^d Lieuts	Ensigns
Samuel Ward John Topham Eben ^r Flagg Silas Talbut Thos Cole John S. Dexter Martin Wallin.	Joseph Arnold Willm Belcher Timothy Lock Sam ^l Bissell Rawson Willm Potter Handy Noice	Ichabod Prentice John Chapman Edward Slocum John Remington	Zephaniah Browne
STAFF OFFICERS RECOMMENDED			
CLARKE BROWNE Qr Master Surgeon Mate			

CAMP, December 16th, 1777

SIR—

The within List contains a true account of the appointments of the Officers of the first Rhode Island Battalion according to the present Establishment, and their present Ranks; and we desire they may receive Commissions expressive thereof.

His Excellency Genl Washington.

J. VARNUM B. Genl.

C. GREENE Coln

I. ANGELL Colo.

	Time of appoint.
Col: Christopher Greene.....	1st Jany
Lt. Col. Adam Comstock.....	do
Major Saml Ward.....	do
Capt. Eben ^r Flagg.....	do
Capt. Silas Talbut.....	do
Capt. Elijah Lewis.....	do

Appendix III

343

	Time of appoint.
Capt. Oliver Clarke.....	11th Febr
Capt. Thoms Cole.....	1st Jany
Capt. John S. Dexter.....	do
Capt. Thoms Arnold.....	21st March
Capt. Jonathan Wallen.....	1st Jany
Lieut. Joseph Arnold.....	do
Lieut. Joseph Whitmarsh.....	do
Lieut Edward Slocum.....	do
Lieut Daniel Pierce.....	11th Febr
Lieut William Davis.....	do
Lieut Micah Whitmarsh.....	14th do
Lieut Sam'l Hicks.....	17th Apl
Lieut Elias Hull.....	1st Jany
2d Lt. Elias Thompson.....	19th Feb
2d Lt. Robert Rogers.....	20th do
2d Lt. Sam'l. Arnold.....	11th Feb
2d Lt. Zephaniah Brown.....	do
2d Enoch Stanton.....	20th do
2d Lt. Gideon Casey.....	do
2d Lt. John Pierce.....	17th do
2d Lt. David Johnson.....	11th do
Ens. Charles Pierce.....	do
Ens. Elias Blanchard.....	do
Ens. Joseph Cornell.....	20 June
Ens. Stephen Briggs.....	20 Feby
Ens. John Bowls.....	24 June
Ens. Daniel P. Tillinghast.....	11th Feby
Ens. Dan Greene.....	11th Apl
Ens. Simeon Smith.....	7th June

STAFF

Chapn Charles Thompson.....	17th March
Surgeon Peter Turner.....	10th May
Mate James Palascum.....	26th do
Adj't. John Holden.....	1st Jany
Qr' Mr. John Cooke.....	1st May
P. Mas'r Griffin Greene.....	18 July

[Endorsed] Arrangement of Colo. Greenes R. Isld Regt Commissioned except the Staff.

ARRANGEMENT OF THE RHODE ISLAND BATTALIONS, 1778-9¹

FIRST REGIMENT

Colo. Christopher Greene	3 Thomas Cole
Lt Col Adam Comstock	4 John S. Dexter
Major Samuel Ward	5 Thomas Arnold
Captains—	
1 Ebenezer Flagg	6 Daniel Peirce
2 Elijah Lewis	Ensigns—
	1. Daniel Tillinghast

¹ With exception of Ensign John Cook, the arrangement as here given was that known as the "Arrangement of Nov. 15, 1778," made at White Plains.

Roster

2. John Cook	5 John Holden
3. Charles Pearce	6 Zephaniah Brown
4. Elias Blanchard	7 Enoch Stanton
5 Joseph Cornall	8 Samuel Arnold
6 Griffin Greene	
7 [John Cook]	
Captain Lieut Edward Slocum	Ensigns—
Lieutenants—	8
1 Joseph Arnold	9
2 David Johnson	
3 Elias Thompson	Adjt John Holden
4 Robert Rodgers	Paymaster
	Surgeon Peter Turner
	Mate John Parish

N. B. Oliver Clarke Cap. to be restored to his rank if released on the first vacancy.

SECOND RHODE ISLAND REGIMENT

Colonel Israel Angell.
Lt Col. Jeremiah Olney
Major Simeon Thayer

	Captains—
1. William Tew	5 Thomas Hughes
2. Coggeshall Olney	Wm Humphrey
3 Stephen Olney	6. [William Potter]
4 William Allen	

Capt. Lieut. [William Humphrey] Wm Littlefield — 1 Jan — 1777.

Lieutenants—

1 [Ebenezer Macumber]	Duty Jarald	11 Feb 1777.
2 [Ebenezer West]	Tho. C. Waterman	do do
3 [Duty Jerald]	Ebenezer Macumber	June 12, 1777.
4 [William Littlefield]	David Sales	do do
5 [Thomas Waterman]	Oliver Jenks	25 June 1777.
6 [David Sales]	Benedict Tew—	Jan 1, 1778
7 [Oliver Jenks]	Abel Carpenter—	do do
8 [Benedict Tew]	Thomas Waterman Jr.	do. do.

Ensigns—

1 [Bethael Curtis]	rank as 2 Lt
2 [Abel Carpenter]	D°
3 [Oliver Dexter]	D°
4 [Thomas Waterman]	Jun'r
5 Benjamin Peckham	July 11, 1777.
6 [Elijah Hawkins]	
7 [David Lawrence]	
8 [John Vial] (?)	
9 [Josiah Thornton]	

Adjutant Thomas Waterman
Paymaster
Surgeon Samuel Tenny
Mate Elias Cornelius

Names within brackets crossed out in the original.

Appendix III

345

OFFICERS ON THE SUPERNUMERARY LIST [Nov. 1778.]

To be specially Recommended. Supernum^y not Recommended.

1ST REGT.

- | | |
|-------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. Cap. Jonathan Wallen | 1. Lt. Mical Whitmarsh |
| 2. Lt. Elias Hull | 2. Lt. W ^m Davis. |
| 3. Lt. Gideon Oakes | |
| 4. Lt. David Johnson | |

2^D REGT.

- | | |
|--|-------------------------|
| 1. Dan. Box Brigr Major—
Wounded, and unfit for
the Service— | 1. David Dexter Cap. |
| 2. Nathan Wix Lt. lost an
Eye in the Service— | 2. Lt. Simeon Jennings. |

[Endorsement] Arrangement of New Hampshire—Massachusetts and Rhode Island—and Connecticut—

By Committee at White Plains with some few alterations.
Copy.

ARRANGEMENT OF OFFICERS IN COLONEL ISRAEL ANGELL REGIMENT, VIZ.

FIELD OFFICERS

Israel Angell Colonel appointed	January 13th, 1777
Jeremiah Olney Lieut Colonel	do do do
Simon Thayer Major	January 1st do

STAFF OFFICERS

Samuel Tenny Surgeon appointed	Jany 1st, 1777
Elias Cornelius Surgeons Mate	do do do
Thomas C. Waterman Lieut & Adjutant	
Abel Carpenter Lieut & Quarter Master	

CAPTAINS.	TIME OF APPOINTMENT.	LIEUTENANTS.		TIME OF APPOINTMENT.	ENSIGNS.	TIME OF APPOINTMENT
		TIME OF APPOINTMENT.	ENSIGNS.			
1 William Tew	January 1st 1777	William Littlefield		January 1st 1777		
2 Coggeshall Olny	do do do	Dexter Jerould		February 11th do		
3 Stephen Ony	do do do	Thomas C. Waterman		do do		
4 William Allen	do do do	Ebenezer Macombar		June 12 do		
5 Thomas Hughes	June 23d do	David Sayles		do do		
6 William Humphrey	October 22d do	Oliver Jenks		June 25th do		
		Benedict Tew		January 1st 1778		
		Abel Carpenter		do do		
		Thomas Waterman		do do		

346

Warren 21st Decr 1778

Israel Angell Col^o

RETURN OF 2^D RHODE ISLAND REG^T OF FOOT ISRAEL ANGELL Esqr COL^O RECEIVED DEC^R 1779

[Inspector General's Return.]

OFFICERS PRESENT												RANK & FILE											
FIELD						COMMS'D						STAFF						NON COMMS'D					
Colonel	Major	Capt Lt.	Captains	Lieutenants	Huskgns	Adjutants	Surgeon	Mate	Drum Majr.	Fife Majr.	Sergeants	Drums & Fifes	Present fit	Sick present	Sick absent	On Command	On Furlough	Total
1	4	5	5	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	23	15	15	234	12	9	30	285	.	.	.

Note—Wanted to complete: 1 sergeant, 3 drums and fifes, 219 rank and file.

REMARKS

Arms & Accoutrements } See Genl Return
Cloathing }

This Regiment is in very good order, having its officers present & few or no men dispersed about the Country as in most of the other Regiments The Sergeants are well proportioned to the several Companies which are nearly equal.

STEUBEN

Inspector General.

INSPECTION RETURN OF THE 2ND RHODE ISLAND REGIMENT OF FOOT IN THE SERVICE OF THE UNITED STATES
OF AMERICA COMMANDED BY COLONEL ISRAEL ANGELL FOR THE MONTH OF FEBY 1780

COMPANIES.	OFFICERS PRESENT FIT FOR DUTY										RANK & FILE.										WANTING TO COMPLETE							
	FIELD.			COMMISSIONED.			STAFF.				NON-COMMISSIONED.			SERGEANTS.			DRUMS & PIPES.			DRUMMAJORS.			PFEIFFERS.			DRUMMERS & PFEIFFERS.		RANK & FILE.
Colonel.	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
1 st Company.	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
Colonels Do.	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
4 th Company.	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
Major Do.	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
3 ^d Company.	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
Lt. Colonels Do.	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
5 th Company.	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
2 nd Company.	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
Total.....	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
Sick Present.....																												
Sick Absent.....																												
On Command.....																												
On Furlough.....																												
Recruiting.....																												
Vacant.....																												
Prisoners of War.....																												
Under Arrest.....																												
Establishment.	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	

348

N. B. Abel Heldrick Lt. Infy Compy
Michl. Plafford——1st Compy
Wm. Butts——15th Do
Jno. Whipple——2nd Do
Private Soldiers Inlisted for 3 years recommended to be discharged from the Service on acc't. of their old Age & their being Afflicted with Rheumatism & gout their time of Service being expired next May

Arms.....237 Musquets 237 Bayonets 236 Scabbards 236 Gun Slings Good
Accoutrements.....238 Cartridge Boxes 237 Bayt Belts 57 Gun Worms to Screw Drivers 5 Brushes and Prickers
Ammunition.....208 Knapsacks 6 Drums & tifes good.
Cartridges 466 Flints good
Cloathing.....9412 Coats 225 Waistcoats 6 pr Breeches 225 pr woolen Overalls 213 Shirts 193 Stocks 270 pr
Shoes 235 Hats 48 Blankets 207 woolen Socks & 23 Epillets good.

ON HAND NOT ISSUED

Arms Account & Ammunition.....55 Arms 60 Bayts 59 Scabbards 59 Cartridge Boxes 56 Gun Slings 5 gun Worms
1 Screw Driver 200 Flints 365 Cartges good
Coats 105 Waistcoats 103 wooln Overalls 106 Hats 106 Shoes 99 Stock Socks 121 wooln Socks
108 Stocks 55 Epaullets

349

DEFICIENCIES SINCE LAST INSPECTION

Arms Accounts & Ammunition.....2 Bayonets 2 Scabbards 2 Bayt Belts 4 Gun Worms & 474 Cartridges lost Spoiled or expended
in Service 4 Guns 4 Bayts 2 Cartridge Boxes in the Hands of the Regimental Qr Master
not accounted for
Cloathing.....13 Coats 13 Vests 23 Breeches 61 Shirts 11 pr Stockings 86 pr Shoes 18 Blankets used & worn
out in Service & 14 Blankets not accounted for

REMARKS

This Regiment is Well Disciplined & well Clad their Arms are in very good Order.
[Endorsed] Inspection Re-
turn of the 2nd Rhode Island
Regt for February 1780
The above is a true State of the Regt as Inspected
by me March 2^d 1780 P. REGNIER Sub Inspector.

[A. R. Vol. 39. p. 81]

Roster

RETURN OF OFFICERS, RHODE ISLAND BATTALION,
APRIL, 1783.

NAMES.	RANK.	
Jeremiah Olney.....	Lt Col ^o Comdt	14 th May 1781
John S. Dexter.....	Major	14 May. 1781
William Allen.....	Capt.	1 st Jan 7. 1777
Thomas Hughes.....	Do	23 ^d June 1777
John Holden.....	Do	10 th Oct ^r 1777
William Humphrey.....	Do	22 Oct ^r 77
Zephaniah Brown.....	Do	11 th Nov ^r 79
Daniel S. Dexter.....	Do	14 th May 81
John Hubbart.....	Lieut	18 May 79
Chandler Burlingame..	D ^o & P. M.	9 th June 79
Joseph Wheaton.....	Do	30 th Augst 79
John M. Green.....	Do	1 st May 80
Joseph Massury.....	Do	24 th June 80
Benjamin Shearburne..	Do	—
Henry Shearman.....	Do	—
Jere Greenman.....	D ^o & Adj ^t	14 th May 81
William Pratt.....	Do	14 th May 81
John Rogers.....	Do	3 ^d Feby 82
William Ennis.....	Do	17 th March 82
John Welch.....	D ^o & Q. M.	1 st May 82
Robert Hunter.....	Ensn	2 nd July 81
Epraim Kirby.....	Do	23 ^d Aug ^r 82
Samuel Tenny.....	Surgeon	1 st Jan 7. 77

N. B. the officers are all present except those

[Endorsed]

accounted for in the Remarks—

Rhode Island
BattalionsSaratoga 25th April 1783

Jereh Olney Lieut. Col. Comd

{ Furlowed by Lord
Stirling till 15th of
April{ Furlowed by Lord
Stirling, till 15th of
Apl, now sick at
Woodbury.{ at Rhode Island,
Commd. by Majr. Ohney{ at Head Quarters, or-
der of Majr. Olney
at Albany order Colo.
Olney



Standard of the 2d Rhode Island Regiment

APPENDIX IV

RETURN OF THE SECOND BATTALION IN THE STATE OF RHODE ISLAND, COMMANDED BY COL. ISRAEL ANGELL.¹

<i>Names.</i>	<i>Last Residence.</i>	<i>Names</i>	<i>Last Residence</i>
Arthur Smith	Newport	Stephen Johnson	Providence
John Exeon	ditto	Noah Chasey	ditto
John Chadwick	ditto	William White	ditto
William Parker	ditto	Edward Everson	ditto
Francis Gold	ditto	Patrick Capon	ditto
John Gibbins	ditto	John Ragan	ditto
Abner Russel	ditto	John Amon	ditto
John Bently	ditto	Benjamin Cushing	ditto
Benjamin Fowler	ditto	Daniel Lawrence	ditto
Uriel Wilbour	ditto	Noah Siscoe	ditto
Nathan West	ditto	Durfey Springer	ditto
Edmond Pennigar	ditto	Church Winslow	ditto
Joseph Brown	ditto	Ebenezer Whitacar	ditto
Nicholas Wilson	ditto	James Hopkins	ditto
Richard Shield	ditto	Abijah Ford	ditto
Elisha Austin	ditto	Christopher Moore	ditto
John Horswell	ditto	Dennis Bagley	ditto
Daniel Phillips	ditto	William Forrester	ditto
Elias Bryer	ditto	James Hale	ditto
Jeremiah Greenman	ditto	William Middleton	ditto
Weston Clark	ditto	John Walton	ditto
Daniel Barney	ditto	Daniel Booth	ditto
James Mitchel	ditto	John Coats	ditto
Richard Pritchard	ditto	Hans Novande	ditto
Southcoat Langworthy	ditto	John S. Robertson	ditto
Benjamin Jackson	ditto	Michael Anthony	ditto
Dennis Hagan	ditto	Joseph Desdad	ditto
Michael Marigan	ditto	Thomas Graves	ditto
Asher Pollock	ditto	Thomas Swither	ditto
Prince Jackson	ditto	William Brown	ditto
Daniel Hudson	Providence	David Whitford	North-Kingstown
Philip Justin	ditto	Jeremiah Wilkey	ditto
Darius Thurber	ditto	Robert Alisburgh	ditto
Nathan Gale	ditto	John Davis	ditto
William Bennet	ditto	Robert Dixon	ditto
James Hayden	ditto	Christopher J. Shearman	ditto

¹ This is a broadside in possession of Colonel George L. Shepley of Providence. It is undated. The names are arranged in three columns, the residence following each name. The "transients" are divided as follows: from New England, 1; Massachusetts, 23; Connecticut, 5; New Hampshire, 1; Pennsylvania, 4; Maryland, 2; total, 36. From England, 58; Ireland, 28; Scotland, 4; Wales, 1; total, 91. From France, 18; Portugal, 1; Germany, 1.

A very large proportion of these men were undoubtedly seamen. Many of the names of men whose residence is given as some Rhode Island town suggest a foreign origin, as, for instance, Hans Novande of Providence. A few names are plainly those of Indians and negroes.

Roster

<i>Names.</i>	<i>Last Residence.</i>	<i>Names</i>	<i>Last Residence</i>
Franklin Tenant	North Kingstown	Thomas Bill Silas Harry	Charlestown ditto
George Niles John Derus	Richmond ditto	Anthony Salisbury John Tabor James Tompkins	Little-Compton ditto ditto
Abraham Hopkins Richard Thorp	North-Providence ditto	William Pratt	Bristol
John York Job Franklin Edward Payne John Derrel Edward Dodge Richard Pomp Jonathan Briggs	New-Shoreham ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto	Ephraim Dolley John Billington Joseph Billington Cuff Peckham Joshua Nocake Joseph Nocage Edward Anthony	South-Kingstown ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto
John Strange David Collar Daniel Bragg Esek Dexter	Cumberland ditto ditto ditto	Abel Bump Benoni Bishop Uriah Jones	Smithfield ditto ditto ditto
Stephen Phillips Jonathan Herrington Payne Hinds Richard Hinds William Edmonds	Scituate ditto ditto ditto ditto	Solomon Shippen Zephaniah Woodward Charles Crosby Enoch Young Elisha Pollard John Ragers Elias Bishop	ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto
Asa Johnson John Usher Samuel Potter Benjamin King Joseph Payne	Johnston ditto ditto ditto ditto	John Smith B. Shrieve Benjamin Smith Thomas Herrington Gideon Dexter	ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto
Job Palmer Abraham Springer	Tiverton ditto	Jonathan Briggs Daniel Fenner Eleazer Westcoat	Cranston ditto ditto
William Thomas	East-Greenwich	Peleg Johnson William Russel Charles Westcoat	ditto ditto ditto
Joseph Kinyon Henry Perry Samuel Whompy Amos Mevas William Capon James Tuddel John Charles Gideon Harry Edward Harry	Charlestown ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto	Reuben Williams Amos Wood Nathaniel Stoddard Elisha Inman Joseph Turner Stukely Inman Ephraim Andrews	Gloucester ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto ditto

*Transient Persons**Names.*

Aaron Martin
Patrick Foy
James Lavery
Magnus Neil
John Okey
Robert Hardy
Samuel Smith
Reuben Thompson
Thomas Bond
John Cook
William Boowell
William Griffith
James Edwards
Peter Mathews
Joseph Gibson
James Madden
Alexander Stewart
William Dow
John Martin
John Martin, 2d
Robert Piper
Daniel Miller
David Hertly
William Doe
Abraham Smith

Last Residence.

Ireland
ditto
England
ditto
ditto
Ireland
England
ditto
ditto
ditto
ditto
ditto
Connecticut
Ireland
England
Ireland
Scotland
England
Ireland
Pennsylvania
Ireland
Ireland
England
ditto

*Transient Persons**Names.*

William Goodson
Jonah Chace
Thomas White
Dominick Brasett
Abraham Voucker
Joseph Gorley
William Thomas
Robert Gudgin
Peter Martin
Joseph A. Richards
Benjamin Bird
Robert Parker
Samuel Preston
Henry Dove
Lewis Busier
Nathan Lyon
Edward Butrick
William Darby
Joseph Leveck
William Robertson
Joseph Cordiz
Charles Gorow
Shubael Chaffee
Joshua Packlet
Abijah Adams

Last Residence

Maryland
Massachusetts
England
France
ditto
ditto
Philadelphia
England
France
ditto
New-England
England
Massachusetts
Ireland
France
England
ditto
Boston
France
Ireland
Portugal
France
Rehoboth
England
ditto

Appendix IV

353

*Transient Persons
Names*

Moses Weeks
Gaus Peck
Peter Letharge
Robert Key
Jonathan Jacobs
Thomas Foree
Lewis Garrison
John Smith
John Sheffield
Hugh Dixon
Samuel Cutly
David Sears
Nathan Whilesbey
Moses Perkins
James Whilesbey
John M'Clanen
John Lawrence
John Fisher
John Macomber
Amos Thurber
William Perkins
Abraham Rose
Reuben Macomber
Ezra Macomber
George Balen
Reuben Fish
Joseph Bishop
William Bryant
Michael Cooney
Elick Andrew
Thomas May
Anthony Mocan
John Dugan
Peter Morrison
Oliver Washburn
Nicholas Everett
John Patterson
Richard Sipton
John Searn
John Brownley
John Cook
John Mahony
Samuel Oaknam
Nicholas Martin
Abel Davis
John Burk
John Dodge
Richard Talpey
William Hatch
Peirce Donvin
James Lobb
Michael Deplumaget
Peter Berrate
Benjamin Leroach
John Dupee
Edward Donnally
Alexander Malcom
William Taylor
John Legarrow
Jacob Rotter
Emanuel Furnace
John Jones

Last Residence

ditto
Rehoboth
France
England
Ireland
New-Hampshire
France
England
ditto
ditto
Ireland
France
England
ditto
ditto
Ireland
England
Attleborough
Massachusetts
ditto
ditto
ditto
ditto
Scotland
Ireland
England
Boston
Ireland
ditto
Lebanon
Salem
Ireland
Liverpool
England
Ireland
Maryland
Ireland
Salem
Wales
Connecticut
Ireland
Old-York
England
Pennsylvania
England
France
ditto
ditto
ditto
ditto
Scotland
England
France
England
ditto

*Transient Persons
Names*

Edward Murfey
Thomas Lane
Charles Watson
William Stafford
Matthew Berr
Jabez Pratt
William Allen
William Davis
James King
John Field
Matthew Briant
Thomas Brindley
Henry Adams
Joseph White
Peter Nagle
Richard Query
John Lindon
Robert Charleton
Joseph Massevey
Thomas Vanluden
Joseph Ford
Anthony Foster
Frederick Kirker
Richard Woodrow
Jaquez Marry
John Tewdeley
Hugh M'Dudle
Edward Beedle
William Everton
William Blaisdel
William Fee
Richard Smith
Thomas Charles
Patrick Dumphy
Levi Kenny

Last Residence

Ireland
England
ditto
ditto
ditto
ditto
ditto
ditto
ditto
Scotland
Ireland
England
ditto
ditto
Ireland
England
ditto
Salem
Pennsylvania
Connecticut
Ireland
Pool
France
Salem
Ireland
England
Massachusetts
England
ditto
ditto
ditto
Ireland
Connecticut
30
36
7
7
15
2
6
North-Providence
2
7
Cumberland
4
5
2
5
7
151
147
298

N. B. 16 inlisted since the last Return.

Examined from the several Lists of Returns:

SIMEON THAYER, Major.

A true Copy, duly examined:

Witness, HENRY WARD, Secr'y.

INDEX

(To selected names and topics only)

Albie, family, 196
Benjamin, 196
Prudence, 196
Allen, Capt. William, 161, 223
Angell family, 190, 191
Amphyllis, 5
Catherine, 209
H. I., 21, 223
Hope, 5, 6, 8, 36, 190
Israel,
 family record of, 185
 ancestry, 1, 188-211
 boyhood, 12
 later years, 22
 marriage, 16, 17
 death, 27
 family letters, 29
 diary of, 131
 social qualities, 48
 a horseman, 47
 character, 10, 28, 64
 religious belief, 17
 civil office held, 23
 western lands, 26, 31
 military experience, 19, 71
 member of the Cincinnati, 20
 rescues John Rogers, 37
 captain in militia, 1783-94, 25
 volunteers for permanent service,
 84, 92
battle of Long Island, 95, 96
at Harlem Heights, 98
recommended for promotion, 99
lieutenant-colonel, 100, 102
commands regiment, 103
at Trenton, 105
at Princeton, 107

Washington's orders to, 109, 113,
 123
at Red Bank, 113, 114
his description of defense of Fort
 Mifflin, 115
at Valley Forge, 119, 125, 222
recruits regiment, 109
president of Court Martial, 250
on Court Martial of Lee, 127
Newport campaign, 130-136
takes possession of Newport, 153
leaves for West Point, 153
marches to Morristown, 154
pay due, 140
letters of, 151, 173, 217
letter-book, 121
asks Court of Enquiry, 176
favorable report of, 177
at battle of Springfield, 166, 168,
 169, 177
Arnold's treason, 178
letters relative to regimental pay,
 179
leave of absence, 109, 180
visits Rhode Island, 180
letters to Washington, 155, 180
to General Poor, 157
to Col. Christopher Greene, 158
retires from army, 182
letters relative to regimental
 lands, 217
letters respecting pension, 220
orderly books of, 223 *et seq.*
James, General (Colonel), 72
James, 36
John, 7, 190, 191
Joseph, 278

Index

- Angell family—*Continued*
 Martha, 16, 45, 191
 ancestry of, 189, 191–213
 Naomi (Smith), 14
 Oliver, 8, 9, 12, 190
 Richard, 17
 Sarah (Wood), 17
 Stephen, 16, 191
 Susannah (Luther), 17
 Thomas, 2–7, 190, 191, 209
 migration of, 2
 associate of Williams, 3
 marriage, 5
 estate, 6
 Thomas, Colonel, 22
 William of London, 209
 Angell's Regiment, rolls and returns
 (Appendix II). (*See* Rhode
 Island regiments. Israel Angell
 Orderly books.)
 Tavern, 22
 Appleton, John, 209
 Army, American:
 conditions at Valley Forge, 125
 criminals, execution of, 326
 desertions from, 142, 145
 deserters from British, enlisted in,
 254
 Felton's company of deserters trans-
 ferred to Philadelphia, 254
 Eastern regiments, the strength of,
 132
 flags (*See* Rhode Island), 86
 order of march of "Grand Army,"
 237
 moves from Morristown, 238
 Invalid corps, 270
 Maréchaussée corps, 329
 officers, pay of, 272
 officers, necessities of, 120, 125
 officers, depreciation in pay, 157
 officers, uniform of, 162
 officers' rank settled, 232
 officers captured, 304
 officers need of, 305
 lack of supplies, 138
 pay of, 74, 91
 re-organization, 82, 84, 86
 prayers in, 240
 strength of, 1775, 80
 strength of, 1780, 172
 soldiers, gratuity to, 268
 soldiers, plundering by, 171, 302
 gaming forbidden, 228
 schedule of laundry prices, 260
 brigade-majors, 266
 tailors, 303
 tailors, charges by, 250, 260
 Washington, commander-in-chief,
 79
 Arnold, families of Rhode Island,
 194, 195
 Governor Benedict, 195
 General Benedict, treason of, 178
 Eleazer, 194
 Elizabeth, 194
 Joanna, 195
 Nicholas, 195
 Richard, 194
 William, 194, 195
 Ashton family, of St. Albans, 192,
 193
 Alice, 7, 192
 James, of St. Albans, 192, 193
 of Providence, 193
 of New Jersey, 193
 Mary (Marie), 5, 192
 Babbe, Nicholas, 204
 Barnard, James, 210
 Mary, 209, 210
 Thomas, 210
 William, 210
 Barnes family, 197
 Lydia, 197
 Thomas, 197
 of Hingham, 197
 Barrington, Sir Francis, 210
 Bellow, Bellew, family, 198
 Henry, 198
 Lydia, 198
 Robert, 198
 William, 198
 Bellou, Maturin, 198

- Boston, Mass., siege and evacuation of, 87
Box, Daniel, 142
Brigade-majors, duties of, 266
British army, deserters from, 254
Bunker Hill, battle of, 78
court martials resulting from, 83
- Caldwell, Mrs. Hannah, 163
Carpenter, Lieutenant Abel, 141
Child, Robert, 208
Church, Alexander, 331
Major, 315
Cincinnati, Society of, 20
eagle of, 21
R. I. Soc. of, 21
Clemence family, 199
Richard, 199
Sarah, 199
Thomas, 199
Cole, Joseph, 282
John, 282
Comstock, Ann, 208
Samuel, 208
Cornelius, Dr. Elias, 137
a prisoner, 256
Crampton, Richard, 204
Currency, Continental, 157, 175
- Darrach, Lydia, 43
David, Rev. Ebenezer, 124, 126
Deruce, John, 267
D'Estaing, Admiral, 129, 130
Dexter, Capt. David, 137, 141
Gregory, 199
- Field, John, 7, 200
family, 200
of Herts, 200
James, 200
Ruth, 200
Susan, 200
Zachariah, 200
Flags. (*See* Rhode Island, 86, 154.)
Ford, Worthington C., 224
Free, Alice, 210
Thomas, 210
- French Alliance, celebration of, 126
army in Rhode Island, 53, 129
reënforcements, 175
Fuller, Sarah, 199
- Gardiner family, 201
George, 201
Jeremiah, 201
Robert, 201
Lydia, 201
Samuel, 201
Glover, Rev. Jose, family of, 209
Greene, Col. Christopher, 110
at Fort Mercer, 114
his regiment retained in Rhode Island, 158, 168
in command R. I. Regiment, 181
death of, 181
Greene, Gen. Nathanael, 72
commands R. I. troops, 1775, 76
commands at Long Island, 90
Major-General, 93
statement of, concerning officers, 92, 119
at Valley Forge, 122
commands at Springfield, 164
account of the battle of, 165
commands at West Point, 179
commands Southern Dept., 180
- Gully, Alice, 195
John, 195
- Harlem Heights, engagement at, 97
Hawkins, William, 199, 201, 206
Elizabeth, 206
- Hitchcock, Col. Daniel, 93
injured, 96
commands brigade, 103
at Princeton, 106, 107
death of, 108, 109
Holden (Charles), paymaster, 257
How, Edmund, 200
Hubbart, Lieut. John, 155
Hughes, Capt. Thomas, 156
- Independence, Declaration of, 91
Indian chiefs, visit of, 1780, 60, 176
Invalids, corps of, 270

- Knyphausen, General, 161, 163
- Lafayette, General, in R. I., 128 *et seq.*
 returns from France, 162
- Lewis, James, 33
 Martha (Angell), 33
- Long Island, battle of, 93
- Lothinmore, Dr., 292
- Loyalists, in R. I., 72
 on Long Island, 90
 confiscated lands of, 173, 217
- Luther, Consider, 17
- Lyndon, Vt., 25
- Lee, Gen. Charles, 81, 101, 103, 118,
 127, 128
 charges against, 127
- Marchante, Julian, 195
- Masham, Lady Elizabeth, 210
 Sir William, 210
- Mifflin, Fort, evacuation of, 115
 (*See* Red Bank.)
- Mercer, Fort, defense of, 114
 Colonel Angell's description of, 115
- Militia, of Johnston, R. I., 18
- Millamen, George, 147, 269, 270,
 276
- Monmouth, battle of, 127
- Morristown, N. J., 154, 159
 suffering of army at, 160
- Murray, Mrs. Robert, 42, 97
- Negro troops. (*See* R. I. Black Regiment, 120, 121.)
- Tony, enlisted by Colonel Angell,
 120
- Newport, R. I., British occupy, 122
 defenses of, 131, 134
 campaign, 129, 135
 withdrawal of French forces, 134
 enemy transports at, 280
 occupation by Angell's regiment,
 282-286
 orders dated at, 283
 raids from, 145, 147
 evacuated by British, 153
- New York, occupied by British, 42
- Ohio Company, The, 25
- Olney family, 202, 203
 discovered, 203
- Epenetus, 202, 203
- Jeremiah, Colonel, 181, 223
- Lydia, 8, 202
- Marie, 202
- Martha, 203
- Thomas, 202, 203
- Orderly books of Angell's regiment,
 223
- Owens, Joseph, a spy, 263, 264
- Palmer, Edward, tory and spy, 242-
 244
- Parkhurst, family, 204
 George, 204
 John, Bishop of Norwich, 204
 Nicholas, 204
- Parrish, Dr. John, 256
- Peak, Christian, 195, 205
 Thomas, 195
- Pemberton family, 209
 Alice, 209
 Francis, Sir, 209
 John, 209
 Ralph, 209
 Robert, 209
- Philadelphia, occupied by British, 111
 abandoned by British, 127
 threatened by British, 257
- Pierce, Daniel, 200
 John, 200
- Pinner, Anne, 210
 Francis, 210
- Plough patent, the, 207
- Porter, Major John, 175
- Poor, General, death of, 175
- Power, Hope, 211
 Nicholas, 211
- Princeton, N. J., battle of, 106
 day saved by Angell's regiment, 123
- Providence, R. I., county regiment, 74
 description of, 1780, 54
 destruction of, 1675
 meeting house, 1775, 4
 population, 1774, 72

Providence regiment—*Continued*

records of, 11, 207
Washington visits, 46, 89

Putnam, Eben, 213

Israel, General, 94, 96, 223, 224
general orders of, 224
guard of, 246

Red Bank, N. J., 112-115

Reape, Samuel, 205

Redman, Thomas, family record, 192

Rhodes family, 205

Rebecca, 205

Zachariah, 205

Rhode Island. (*See Army.*)

founding of, 1

character of settlers, 1

in French War, 71

dawn of the Revolution, 72

state flag, 155

population of, 1782, 172

Rhode Island, Army of Observation,

73, 77, 83

troops, first to reach Roxbury, 75

camp at Jamaica Plain, 76

inspected by Washington, 81

number with Washington, 172

at Princeton restore the day, 123

at Springfield, 168

regiments, 12th and 14th Continental, 82

in Greene's brigade, 81

march to Providence, 89

arrive at New York, 90

at Long Island, 91

recruits for, 109, 163, 171, 172

pay of, depreciation, 173

confiscated lands set off to, 173

reduced to one regiment, 180

strength of, 84, 85, 98, 102, 110

reënlistments, 86

officers of, 86, 100

officers of line of, 336 *et seq.*

Declaration of Independence read to, 91

at Harlem Heights, 97-99, 103

changes in command, 98, 100

in Nixon's brigade, 98-101

on the Hudson, 101

join Washington, 103, 111

cross Delaware, 104

at Trenton, 105

at Princeton, 107

at Valley Forge, 118, 120, 121, 125

pay rolls, 1778, 121

reorganization of, 110, 111, 242

in the Highlands, 111

at Red Bank, 112-115

at Monmouth, 127

march to R. I., 1778, 128

at Newport, 135, 136

State Brigade, 100, 108, 136

Black Regiment, 120, 121, 136, 171

Rhode Island Assembly renounces allegiance to King George, May, 1776, 91

addresses Angell's regiment, 169

commissions officers, 1775, 74

Rhode Island Regiment, 2d (Angell's) returns of, 336 *et seq.*

roster of, 351

officers in, 124, 336, *et seq.*

remain in R. I., 1778-9, 136 *et seq.*

mutinies in, 138, 139, 145

arrears of pay of, 140

changes in officers, 141, 142, 158, 162

lack of supplies, 143

at Barber's Heights, 144

discipline in, 148-150

at Springfield, 164

gallant behavior of, 168, 169

address of General Assembly to, 169

organization of, 1780, 157

at Morristown, 154

flag of, 154

reorganization of, 259

leaves Newport, 285

marches to Morristown, 292

Rome, George, 58

his country house, 59

School, a Dame's, 14

Shepley, Col. George L., 224, 351

Index

Sherburne, Col. Henry, 156, 180
 regiment of, 310

Smith, Alice, 206
 family, 206-208

Ann, 207

Eleanor, 208

Francis, 207

Israel, 206

John, the "mason," 207

John the "miller," 11, 206, 207

John of Boston, 208

John of Warwick, 208
 notes on early John Smith, 206,
 207

Joseph, 206

Naomi, 9, 14, 206

Sarah, 207

Springfield, N. J., battle, 164
 destruction of, 170

Staten Island, Stirling's raid on, 160

Stoughton, Israel, 212

Stony Point, Wayne's victory, 267

Stokes, Roger, 209

Sullivan, Gen., commands at R. I., 129

Tenney, Dr. Samuel, 124

Tew, Lieut. Benedict, 141

Thayer, Major Simeon at Ft. Mifflin,
 115, 123

Trenton, N. J., 103
 Washington attacks, 104
 battle of, 105

Treswell family, 209

Valley Forge, American camp at, 119

Varnum, Col. Jas. M., desires to
 resign, 92

brigadier-general, 100

commands in New Jersey, 112

Washington, Gen. George, com-
 mander-in-chief, 79
 praises gallant behaviour Angell's
 regiment, 168
 letters to. (*See* Angell, Israel.)
 praises New England troops, 123,
 124
 extracts from G. O. of, 265

Waterman, Richard, 2, 3, 191

Westcott, Stukeley, 195
 Damaris, 195

Whipple family, 212
 John, 212, 213
 Mary, 212, 213
 Matthew, 213
 Sarah, 212

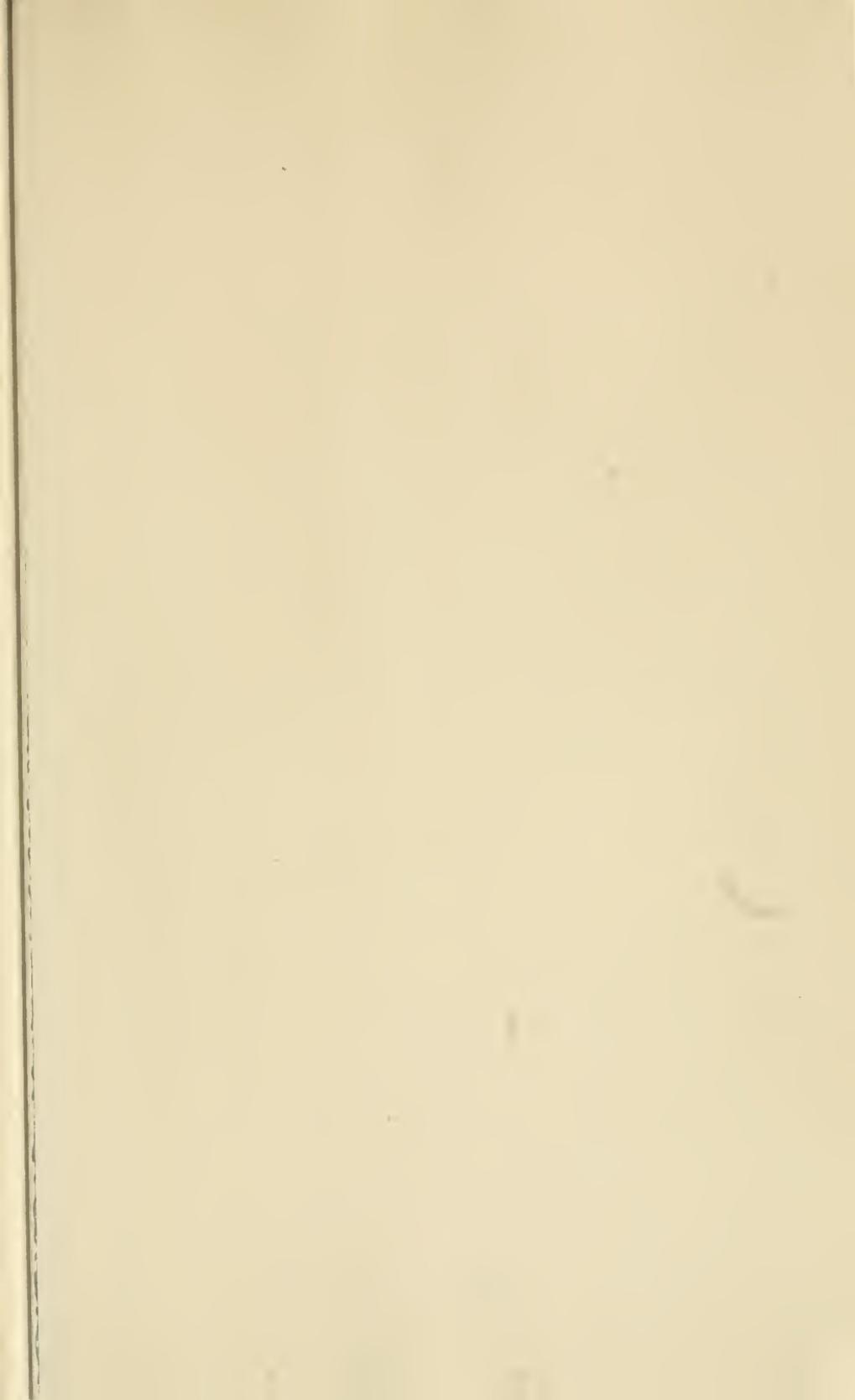
Williams family, 209
 Daniel, 211
 James, 209
 Mary, 211
 Rice, 210
 Robert, 209
 Roger, 1, 3, 191, 207, 209, 210
 Roger of Virginia, 210
 Sydrack, Shadrack, 210

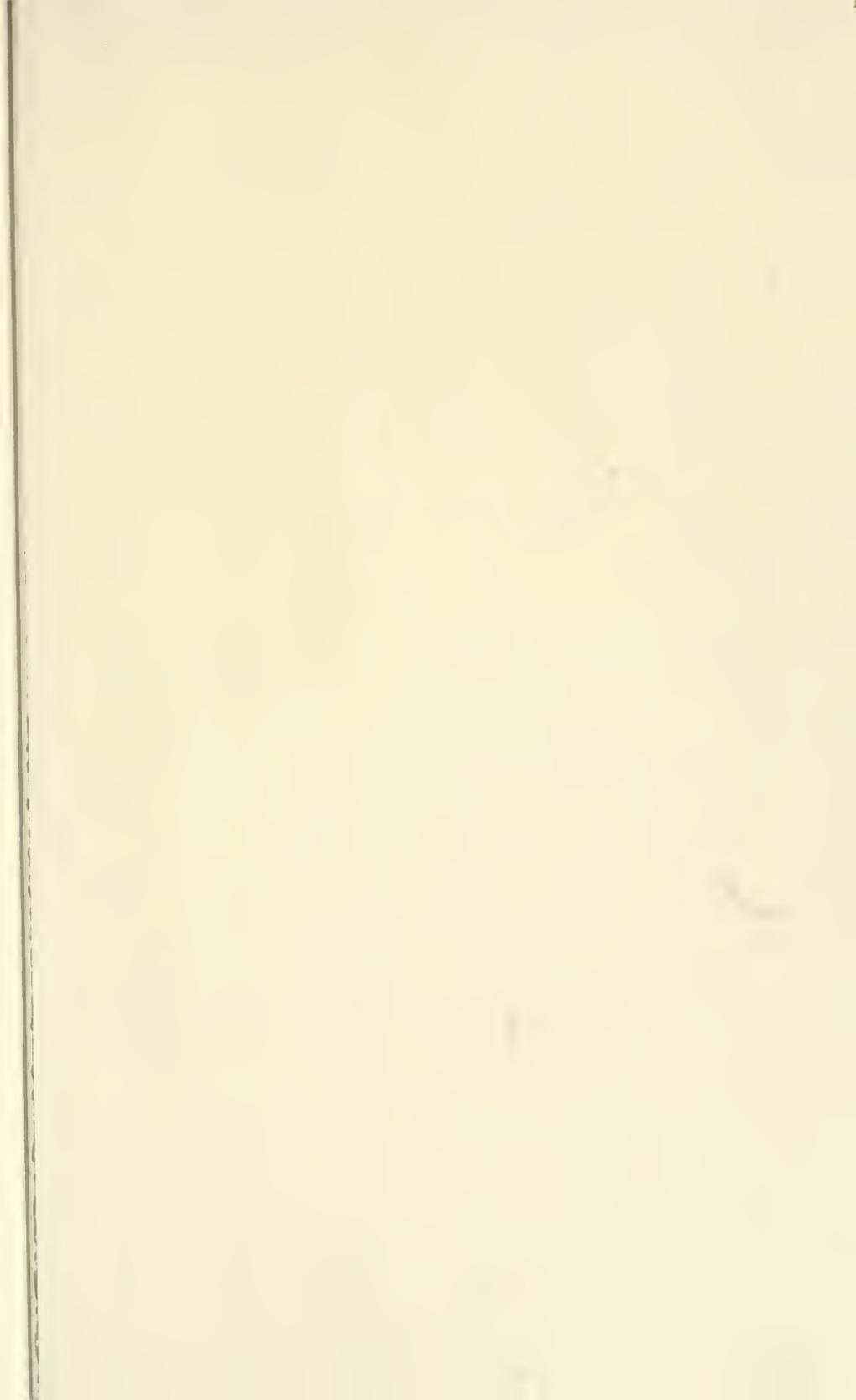
Wilshire, George, 200

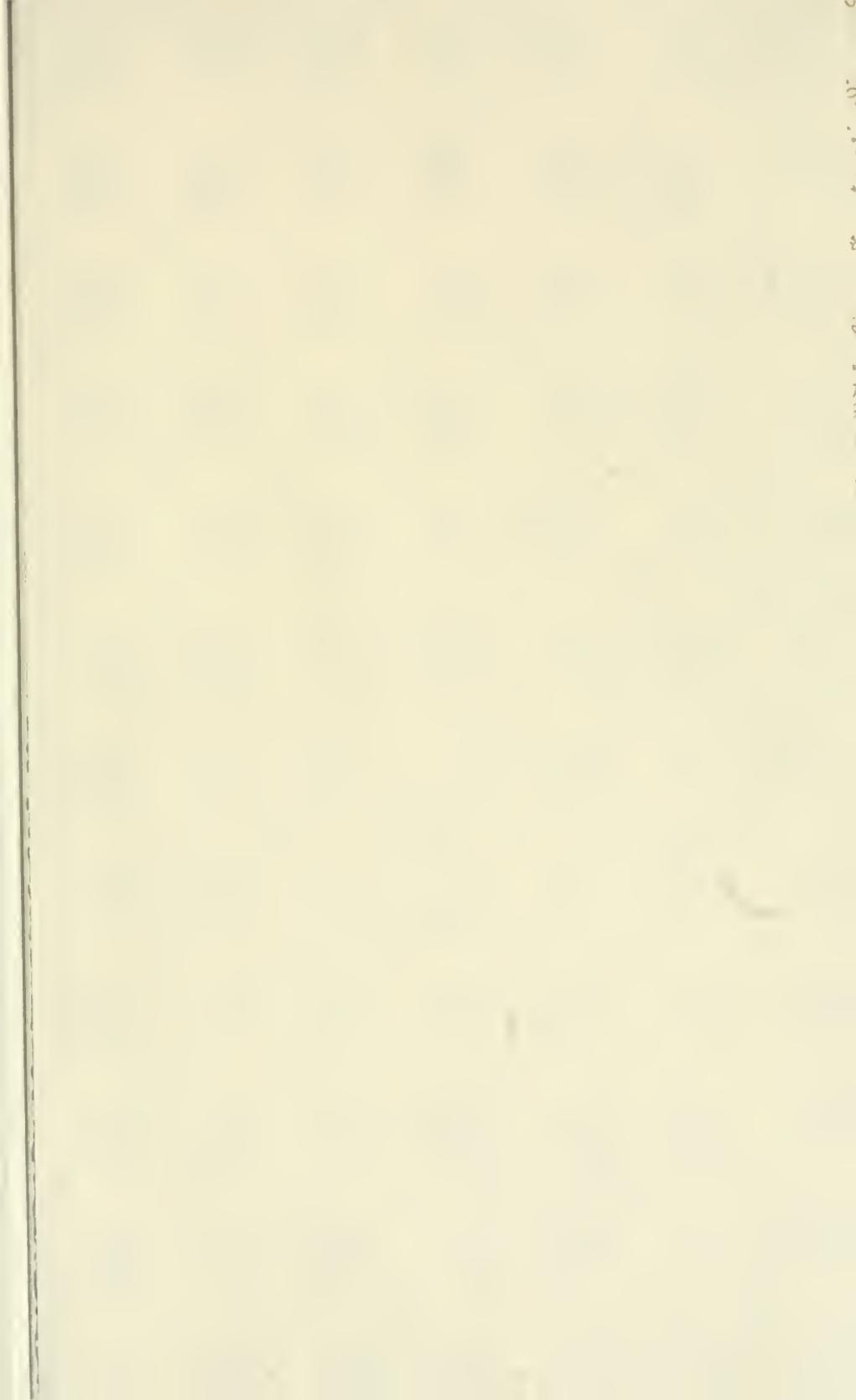
Winthrop, Gov. John, 209

Wood, David, 17

Yeovil, England, 195









DOBBS BROS.
LIBRARY BINDING

OCT 79

ST. AUGUSTINE

FLA.



3204

0 003 256 951 1



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS